



# MARTIAL GOD SPACE

BOOK 04

*Fu Xiao Chen*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Martial God Space

(Wu Shen Kong Jian)

(武神空间)

by

Fu Xiao Chen

(傅啸尘)

# Synopsis

---

Ye Xiwen was previously only an ordinary university student on Earth, but unexpectedly crossed through into the world known as the Zhen Wu Jie world!

In this world, formidable warriors are able of turning over mountains and collapsing the ocean, destroying the sky and extinguishing the earth!

He originally had ordinary aptitude, because of that he received the mysterious special space!

Any martial art can be deduced within the mysterious space, other people practice for decades, he only needs a year!

So long as he has enough spirit stones, any talents he faces are all floating clouds!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edit by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Hand To Hand Fight

---

A big hand instantly shrouded the sky and went toward the wolf cub to grab him.

"Ye Xiwen, just act already! What are you waiting for!" The wolf cub hastily called out. He had spotted Ye Xiwen in the crowd long time ago.

Ye Xiwen smiled and thought-this wolf cub is really very smart and astute!

Of course, he wouldn't keep the wolf cub waiting any longer and instantly moved into action. His killing intention immediately flashed and spread out in all directions, instantly blotting out the sky and overwhelming the fifth god's aura.

"Who is this man, daring to challenge the fifth god?"

This question cropped up in everyone's hearts as they just couldn't dare to believe that someone would dare to challenge the fifth god. After all, they would never dare to stand in the way of the fifth god.

The reason was simple-going against the fifth god meant instant death.

"Boom!" The golden divine nature of Ye Xiwen was just like a golden tide that blotted out the sky and swept across in all

directions. The fifth god's big hand happened to be in the way of this destructive golden tide and was directly annihilated, turning into Lingqi before dissipating into thin air.

Everyone saw a blue figure floating above the golden tide and overlooking the fifth god.

Ye Xiwen's cold eyes were staring at the fifth god. The wolf cub was sitting cross-legged beside him in midair.

Ye Xiwen had painted the world golden within moments. Now, the surrounding area was looking like a portrait made up of gold, like a true masterpiece painted by God himself.

"Who are you? How dare you stand in the way of the Army of God?" The fifth god stared back at Ye Xiwen and said in a loud voice.

"Army of God you say? Never heard of it, am I supposed to care?" Ye Xiwen replied with a smile. "God? Are you trying to tell this year's funniest joke or something?"

Ye Xiwen said and burst into laughter. At this time, the onlookers faintly recognized the hidden meaning of his words, claiming to be God was overly rampant. Those daring to use the name of God according to their convenience were definitely too arrogant to reason with, but the truth was undeniable that this organization was very strong, and on this route, no one dared to act against the Army of God. Even the wolf cub came almost close to getting captured by them. Confronting just one was so dangerous, not to



mention there were five of them in total.

"Are you suicidal?" The fifth god replied without losing his cool as intended by Ye Xiwen. Seeing the wolf cub arriving beside Ye Xiwen was certainly making him furious.

"Ye Xiwen, you have to be careful, he is very strong!" The wolf cub said. Even if he had this insanely insolent personality, he still was honest and said that the fifth god was very strong. Right now, he was recovering and knew well that he was not an opponent of the fifth god.

The wolf cub didn't need to state the obvious because Ye Xiwen could tell the same from the fifth god's imposing aura that was cutting through the sea of his golden energy like sharp blades and rushing toward him.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's clothes were fluttering under the terrifying coercion blowing from the other side. For an average expert of half-step legendary realm, staying in the way of such a dreadful pressure could literally run them over and crush them to death.

Ye Xiwen emitted golden divinities from his body and instantly neutralized the dreadful pressure.

The spectators who were watching this scene suddenly held their breaths and immediately retreated far away. They did not want to stay in the range while a collision between the two dreadful imposing auras was taking place.

After witnessing Ye Xiwen's strength firsthand, even the fifth god's face revealed a dignified expression. He could already tell that Ye Xiwen was going to be a very strong opponent.

"Aren't you known as god? What happened?! Use your godly powers and try again, loser!" After having the support of Ye Xiwen, the wolf cub started to clamor immediately.

The fifth god's cold eyes stared at Ye Xiwen and the wolf cub and he instantly rushed forward, cutting right through the golden tide. A long halberd appeared in his hands. This was the first time he was resorting to using a weapon against an opponent, in fact, even while contending with an old expert over a sword command few days ago; he did not need to use a weapon. However, while facing Ye Xiwen, he had to resort to using his halberd that had a mysterious glowing pattern carved in it.

"Although no one knows who the fifth god really is, it can be said that he is among the top players of the younger generation. That is why he managed to obtain the title of Fifth God. Many older experts of half-step legendary first stage have tried to snatch this title from him but couldn't even force him to use his weapon."

"Yes, the halberd you see in his hands is rumored to be a weapon of god and is said to have infinite might!"

"A weapon used by the god? This is definitely impossible because nobody knows whether there is god in this world or not. We just read about gods in our extraordinary history, that's all."



The halberd was shot instantly like a sharp blade with unparalleled speed and made a path by cutting the space in half, just like a picture scroll being torn into two pieces.

Such a stunning attack released boundless coercion in all directions, forcing the spectators to further retreat and move out of the range, otherwise, they would have to face the risk of getting chopped to pieces.

Ye Xiwen's body was instantly covered with golden divinities as he gave a loud shout and directly rushed forward, trampling the space on the way and blasted a punch toward the halberd.

"Boom!" There sounded a terrifying metal clanging noise along with a massive explosion that set off waves of rogue energy in all directions, ravishing anything in its way. Ye Xiwen stood uninjured with only a trace of white scratch on his golden fist that healed almost instantly.

Ye Xiwen was in high spirits as his battling intention was soaring constantly. After stepping into the half-step legendary realm, he finally met a worthy opponent to test the limits of his own strength.

"Extremely arrogant!" Fifth god exclaimed with a cold facial expression painted on his face. He waved his halberd once and suddenly unleashed an enormous burst of condensed energy toward Ye Xiwen with a 'Boom!'

Ye Xiwen was no longer polite, instantly rushed past the

incoming attack while simultaneously unleashing a sea of golden divinities toward his opponent.

"Boom!" The two sides collided in the sky and led to an enormous collision that set off tremendous blast waves everywhere which mutually submerged the two in the process.

The two golden figures instantly collided once again. Ye Xiwen's monstrous palm attack pressed down like a mountain and instantly crashed into the fifth god's equally massive mountainous palm attack. The two mountains severely collided and crumbled into an enormous ocean of energy.

"Boom!" The two figures detached from each other and a stream of blood splashed out from the wound that was torn open in Ye Xiwen's palm by the fifth god's halberd.

Ye Xiwen did not say anything, just looked at the fifth god with an ice-cold expression on his face. The Phoenix regeneration instantly repaired his wound while he thought in his heart that this halberd was really no ordinary weapon. He had already practiced gilded tyrant form to the forth layer and even an expert of half-step legendary first stage should find it very difficult to injure his gilded body.

Ye Xiwen never thought that his gilded body would actually be injured. In fact, if it was an ordinary expert in place of him, they would have been split in half already.

Ye Xiwen did not know that the fifth god was even more

surprised. He rarely resorted to using his halberd, but when he did, it brought instant death to his opponents. But this time, his halberd managed to pull out a minor wound on his opponent's palm. This was already beyond his imagination.

Fifth god's complexion was pale as he glanced at Ye Xiwen, seemed to consider something then said: "Next time, I will take your life."

After that, the fifth god left with his forces while the spectators continued to watch this scene in bewilderment. They just couldn't understand why would the fifth god just leave like that? Could it be that he was actually afraid of Ye Xiwen?

This was not right, after all, everyone watched the battle from beginning and it never seemed like the fifth god was falling under the wind. Moreover, both of them appeared equally matched and Ye Xiwen was even injured a bit. Such being the case, how could the fifth god miss this opportunity to teach Ye Xiwen a lesson?

Nobody knew what the fifth god was thinking, they had no precise answer.

Ye Xiwen did not stop the departure of the fifth god because the small world had not yet opened, so a death match with the fifth god wouldn't be worthwhile anyway.

Moreover during the confrontation, Ye Xiwen truly never had a clear upper hand. If the fifth god had not retreated, it would have been inevitably an enduring battle.

# Chapter 302: Sword Command Ownership

---

"How did you mess with this guy?" After the fifth god left, Ye Xiwen and the others no longer stayed behind and went back to the city. The wolf cub also followed Ye Xiwen and settled in the inn along with him.

"Don't talk about that bastard! He tried to tame me and turn me into his pet." The wolf cub said in his usual foul-mouthed language. A proud wolf like him was bound to be angry, after all, even if Ye Xiwen had caught him on the demon island but never treated him like a pet. The wolf cub was instead treated as a partner by Ye Xiwen, but the fifth god wanted him to surrender. This was simply impossible.

When the wolf cub had fought with the fifth god for the first time, he had been at a disadvantage that time and that struggling battle helped him in setting foot into the half-step legendary realm. However, still he came close to getting captured by the fifth god. He was seriously injured as well.

However, the wolf cub was not the type who wouldn't fight back after suffering a loss. He continued to mess with the Army of God on multiple occasions. He even had a fierce battle with an elite expert of half-step legendary realm because the expert wanted to grab him and force him into the ranks of the Army of God. As a result, the wolf cub had been chased down for several days by the clan of that young master.

That explained a lot about the current situation but Ye Xiwen was curious to know what happened to Jian Wuchen.

"Where is Jian Wuchen?" Ye Xiwen asked as he had been unable to hear any news about him.

"A few days ago, that guy was stranded in a valley where he actually found a giant ancient heritage, related to sword arts. So he decided to stay and assimilate it." The wolf cub replied.

Ye Xiwen nodded. Obtaining a sword art heritage was indeed a great fortune for a sword master like Jian Wuchen.

The Mo siblings heard this and appeared a little envious. Compared to Ye Xiwen, they were more aware of the importance of this kind of fortuitous adventure and heritage. Experts had been known to have grown profoundly powerful after finding such heritage.

This road was riddled with elites from various regions, and at their current levels, the siblings' existence was nothing more than an ant's in this competitive environment; like an ant that was on the road to TMU, ready to be crushed by any other genius of the younger generation.

In a place where geniuses had gathered up like ants, only a few people could climb the ladder and shine above all.

Everyone was aware of this brutal truth but was still resolutely embarked on this road in order to prove their worth. They needed to have an invincible state of mind while constantly hoping to come across a great adventure on this road, a miracle to make

them stronger than others. In reality, something like that was certainly not possible and only a few lucky ones obtained such an opportunity to witness a fortuitous encounter that could change their destiny. Everyone wanted to be a top player and such an opportunity was always craved by all. This was the fundamental reason why so many experts were unceasingly coming to traverse this road.

Like earlier, Hua Menghan obtained an extraordinary heritage on the demon island. Ye Xiwen never asked her what it was because it was presumably not an ordinary one.

Ye Xiwen remained low-key for several days, also restrained the wolf cub from going out to stir up trouble everywhere. He began closed-door training and indulged in the final preparations before the opening of the small world. Anyway, he already had a sword command in his possession so he was not anxious, just waiting for the right time to make an appearance.

But just because he was relaxing, it did not mean that entire Yongan city was peaceful as well. On the contrary, in order to compete for the 8 sword commands, the entire city was in chaos. On the second day of Ye Xiwen's closed-door practice, he heard the news that the fifth god had already gotten his hands on 3 sword commands.

The members of the Army of God were continually searching for sword commands under the leadership of the fifth god. Their overbearing reputation was like a declaration to all and everyone was aware of their intentions of opening the small world to monopolize the treasure inside.

Besides the three sword commands that were in the fifth god's possession, one was with Ye Xiwen while the fifth one finally made an appearance and it ended up in the possession of Yongan City Lord. The city lord personally moved into action and snatched the fifth sword command before the fifth god could get his hands on it. After losing the fight, the fifth god had to resentfully give up on it.

After all, the Army of God, although very strong, was only an organization consisting of young experts, with almost all of them below 50 years of age. There were certainly a lot of talented evildoers [monsters] in the older generation and the Army of God couldn't risk provoking them.

Then the news about the appearance of the sixth sword command soon spread and in no time, it fell into the hands of a super-terrifying influence of the Ming Empire, the largest intelligence agency called 'Jinyi Guards'. Their strength and influence was almost unimaginable, making it impossible for other experts to dare and snatch the sword command from them.

This time, the operation was led by a super genius from the younger generation of Jinyi Guards. He was one of the top young masters of Ming Empire.

With the emergence of Jinyi young master, the news about him spread all over the city, inciting several discussions about him and his past. It was found out that Jinyi young master had been specially trained by Jinyi Guards since childhood when they found out that he was exceptionally talented. He demonstrated extraordinary talent and had participated in bloody battles to



contribute significantly to Jinyi Guards' glory. He had already defeated countless internal contemporaries and gradually reached the status of the best genius in the younger generation of Jinyi Guards.

Jinyi young master's strength level really raised some eyebrows, not to mention being a native genius of the Ming Empire, even the government of Yongan City was proud of him.

Moreover, Jinyi young master had already gotten permission from the top brass of Jinyi Guards to participate in the conquest that was ongoing on the ancient route to TMU.

Jinyi young master was extremely strong and the day he joined the conquest, countless experts lost their lives. He became the reason behind the river of blood, spilled from the bodies of elite warriors who tried to stand in his way, including the members of the Army of God. However, no one dared to make irresponsible remarks because they knew about Jinyi Guard's invincible power as Ming Empire's largest intelligence agency. Messing with an organization of spies and assassins was never going to be good for anyone.

The appearance of the sixth golden sword command had already spilled a river of blood. Therefore, the whereabouts of the seventh sword command made them clamor, causing numerous casualties of strong experts at the hands of a black-robed mysterious expert. Jinyi young master and several other experts were engaged in a competition over the seventh sword command. However, Jinyi young master played his trump card and directly began a breakthrough from half-step legendary realm to half-step

legendary first stage on the site, thereby invoking the heavenly tribulation on-site. The other experts were scared of entering the field of heavenly tribulation to snatch the sword command, with several of them trying and dying in the process. The might of heavenly tribulation was infamous and the deaths of several geniuses scared off the others from trying. At this time, the black-robed mysterious expert strolled through the heavenly tribulation and snatched away the sword command while Jinyi young master was busy having a breakthrough.

The unexpected outcome caused an uproar among experts. Furthermore, the most important question was - who was this black-robed powerhouse and how was he so outrageously powerful?

A lot of experts were shocked, after all, how could such a strong powerhouse not have a pre-existing fame in the world of martial arts?

Stepping into the range of someone else's heavenly tribulation was a very serious and life-threatening stunt and even true geniuses wouldn't dare to pull off such a stunt.

While everyone was still discussing the incident about the seventh sword command and the black-robed expert, rumors about the whereabouts of the eighth sword command soon spread throughout the city, along with the news of it being in the grasp of a group called Qixing.

# Chapter 303: Competition For Sword Command

---

As the information about the location of the eighth sword command came to light, the Seven Star Lords [Qixing] Organization immediately surfaced and the sword command fell into the hands of the Destruction Army, working under this organization. These were tall, burly and intrepid young males with an ominous presence in this region. Rumors were that whenever they went all out, nobody could stop them.

Along with the appearance of Destruction Army, the news about the Seven Star Lords also began to be slowly known. The Seven Star Lords Organization was not an ordinary group on this road; rather was a tyrannical organization that was placed on a par with the Army of God and well-known to the experts who were traversing this road. It was said that this organization was composed of seven top young experts who were tyrannical enough to dominate the entire organization and command the Destruction Army.

Suddenly, several people had started talking about the Seven Star Lords; after all, the tyranny of the Destruction Army was the real deal. There were a lot of small and large groups operating on various roads to TMU and since each group or organization was supposed to have its own territory, this road had always been dominated by the Army of God whereas the Destruction Army of Seven Star Lords Organization was operating on some other road. However, now they had arrived at this road to compete for the sword command and this was bound to spark a fierce clash between the two forces.

Everyone was waiting to see how the Army of God would react. It didn't take long for the news to reach the fifth god and consequently he immediately went into action to retrieve the sword command from the Destruction Army.

Who would have known that the fifth god's declaration of war would have no effect on the Destruction Army? The fifth god was extremely furious and directly clashed with the Destruction Army. However, he gave up later on and retreated.

Although no one knew what happened to make him retreat, it was pretty obvious that he must have been unable to subdue the Destruction Army and had to give up in the end.

Now that seven of the eight sword commands had already appeared and were already in the possession of their respective owners, everyone was eagerly waiting for the appearance of the last one. Most experts didn't know that Ye Xiwen already had a sword command until the Army of God openly announced about it being in the possession of Ye Xiwen. Their original intention was to incite experts into attacking Ye Xiwen but no one knew that even though many people were envious of Ye Xiwen, no one was daring to attack him. Ye Xiwen had been staying low-key after his fight with the fifth god and the news about which had already spread throughout Yongan city, letting everyone know about it. Now, it was an established fact that Ye Xiwen was as powerful and fierce as the fifth god, so who would dare to mess with him?

By this time, the news about the eighth sword had already spread and everyone had also started waiting for the small world to open.

Sure enough, the fifth god took the position of a leader and summoned the other sword command owners. He also sent invitation tickets to those who wanted to go along with them into the small world. A large group of experts had gathered just outside Yongan city, near a mountain range that was originally home to the ancient faction before its decline.

And as the owner of a sword command, Ye Xiwen naturally received the invitation as well. Even if the Army of God didn't want him to be a part of this ceremony, as long as he was in possession of a sword command, they had no choice but to summon him as well.

Ye Xiwen, the Mo siblings and the wolf cub were flying toward the mountain range.

There just were too many experts who had gathered to venture into the small world. Besides a majority of experts of the younger generation, there were a lot of tyrannical experts from the older generation in the crowd.

Ye Xiwen and his team could certainly be ranked among the top of younger generation but their overall strength was nothing in comparison when considering some of the experts of the older generation that had gathered there.

It was hard to guess the sheer number of experts that were attracted to arrive here, each wanting to have a slice of the treasure.

Ye Xiwen was in no hurry and slowly flying toward the mountain. His team was also surrounded by many people who knew his identity; all of them were staying away and not daring to come near Ye Xiwen. They had already heard a lot of insane rumors about him killing a half-step legendary expert in one shot, not to mention about his fight with the fifth god. They had not seen him in action but they could sense his tyrannical presence. At least, the experts of younger generation did not have the courage to challenge him.

"Boom!" At this moment, a terrifying breath spread throughout the sky.

A handsome young man, in embroidered silk robe and waving a folding fan, flew by like a beam of light, followed by eight guys in similar embroidered robes. All of them had profound cultivation level and were at half-step legendary realm with two of them being at half-step legendary first stage.

Some people recognized this unusual group.

"It's the young master of Jinyi Guards! He is finally here!"

"It really is him! Since that day, the bloody-handed Jin young master's reputation has continued resounding throughout the Ming Empire as the cruel and merciless genius."

"If he was not cruel and merciless as they say, how else would have emerged victorious from the harsh training of the younger generation of Jinyi Guards. I would say, he is among the top

players in the younger generation of experts."

"Gee, it really is the team of Jinyi young master. Just look at them, each and every one of them is in half-step legendary realm and has unfathomable cultivation depth."

"If Jinyi young master is embarking on this ancient road, does it mean that Jinyi Guards are planning to turn this road upside down?"

"Now several young experts have stepped onto this road, even many unknown masters have also cropped up from all directions. Only the time will tell who will be victorious in the end."

They were not discussing loudly as they didn't want to get on the wrong of Jinyi Guards, the largest intelligence agency of Ming Empire.

"These Jinyi Guard people seem like rampant individuals." The wolf cub said with disdain. He didn't like rampant people because he couldn't get used to seeing other more rampant than him. Only he had the right to be the most rampant and arrogant and no one could surpass him in this department.

"Compared to the Army of God, they have been more low-key." Ye Xiwen said dismissively. As they flew out of the city, they saw hundreds of members of the Army of God rushing toward the mountain range. As opposed to the show-off attitude of the Army of God, only a handful of Jinyi Guards had arrived for the event.



The so-called luxury of being low-key in big events!

"Having fewer experts in a team improves its efficiency. Although the Army of God has a lot of members, most of them are useless baggage." Ye Xiwen said lightly, "What's the point of having hundreds of losers when I can easily kill all of them?"

One simply couldn't blame Ye Xiwen for thinking this way. This was the kind of world where only the strong had the right to command respect.

Ye Xiwen only needed to pay attention to formidable experts like the fifth god while his subordinates were nothing more than a bunch of losers who were wasting their time, serving others.

The Seven Star Lords Organization was also a similar group like the Army of God but with only seven members. Ye Xiwen had not seen them but could make a guess that all seven of them were elites, just like the five gods.

The Mo siblings were secretly speechless. Ye Xiwen's statement had left them flabbergasted, after all, only a top player like Ye Xiwen could talk like that. They themselves stood in the same league as the losers Ye Xiwen was looking down on. With respect to him, the ordinary members of the Army of God were simply not worth paying attention to. However in reality, it was a terrifying organization with each and every one of its members being extraordinary young elites.

After Jinyi young master's team, another group of experts

appeared in the sky. This group was being led by an old expert who had an unfathomable cultivation depth.

Some sharp-eyed people immediately recognized that it was a team of experts who represented the government office of Yongan city.

"Look, this is the team representing Yongan city's government office. They are called the protectors of Yongan city and defend the government office. It is said that the previous generation's city lord once rescued the life of this old man and he has been defending the government office ever since. He has unfathomable strength and has saved Yongan city several times. He has basically become the patron god of Yongan city."

"Yes, no one knows where he came from but some people say that he is from TMU while some say that he is from some unknown sect. In short, he is very mystical and nobody really knows his past."

Ye Xiwen and the others soon approached the mountain range and then, further went toward the large gathering of experts.

"Oi, are you Ye Xiwen? Surrender your sword command or it would be difficult for you to escape death!" An aggressive voice sounded as a terrifying force swept across.

# Chapter 304: Puts Down The Evil Freaks

---

An absolutely terrifying force swept towards Ye Xiwen and engulfed him.

His divinities immediately swept out of his body, wrapping the Mo siblings and the wolf cub and pushing them back several dozen feet before coming to a halt. At this time, a terrible explosion occurred and blasted a huge crater in the ground.

Ye Xiwen looked up and saw a general in magnificent golden armor. His icy-cold eyes were staring at Ye Xiwen while his golden scaly armor was glowing breathtakingly in the sunlight.

He held an iron spear in his hands. The spear was suffused with anger and fearful resentment whose extent was simply unimaginable. Who could say how many enemies had been slaughtered by this ominous spear.

He was riding an unusual black steed whose hooves were glowing with spooky black flames coming out of them. One could easily tell that this horse was an extraordinary breed of horse-type demon beasts.

The sky was obscured by the black flames that soon began to corrode the surrounding space, making it start burning and producing a sizzling sound.

The spectators held their breaths when they realized that the general in golden armor was riding a steed of legendary realm,

indicating that he himself must be at higher level.

"Ye Xiwen, surrender your sword command or it'd be difficult for you to escape death today!" The golden armored general said in a cold voice. The sense of command in his voice was leaving no scope for negotiation.

Undoubtedly, he was a powerhouse from the older generation whose cultivation had already reached the peak of legendary first stage. He aspired to fight for the dragon essence in order to enhance his cultivation further more.

He was one of the several powerhouses of the older generation who had obtained the news about the appearance of sword commands.

And, why not he would be? After all, when city's government office was also involved in this competition, then why shouldn't the other powerhouses of the older generation participate? In this chaotic situation when the top players of the younger generation were going contend with each other for the ultimate treasure, the top players of the older generation were also prepared to make good use of their experience which was at the very least four times more than their younger counterparts. Compared to them, the top players of the younger generation were too tender and inexperienced.

At this time, there sounded another loud laughter. It was a creepy laughter that came from far away: "Ye Xiwen, so long as you hand over the sword command, I, your Grandpa Ku Mo, will guarantee your safety. I will also allow you to enter my practice

cave and work as my personal disciple. Keep this in mind that if you accept my offer, you are going to be one in a million to enjoy such a privilege!"

As soon as the voice fell, accompanied by a ghostly wind, a black-robed figure appeared over the horizon. It was a tall, skinny and ugly-looking old man who had suddenly appeared out of nowhere, like a ghostly apparition.

"Ku Mo ancestor, you dare to snatch the sword command from me?!" The golden armored generation angrily stared at the black-robed man. A surge of imposing aura rushed out of his body and went toward the old ancestor.

"Hump, what's wrong with that, huh? Why cannot I have a sword command?" Ku Mo waved his hand and the imposing aura suddenly disappeared without a trace. It was as if he did not pay any attention to the golden armored general.

"Ku Mo, so you think my army cannot trample flat your cave?" The golden armored general thundered. There was a rage in his voice, overflowing with majestic imposing aura.

"You can try!" Ku Mo replied, "I will just turn you into a human puppet."

"They want the sword command so badly." Ye Xiwen smiled, "Listen freaks, stop fighting among yourselves. You all can come at me together."

"What are you two arguing about? Stop this nonsense. I know this little brother is smart and really understands people. He is definitely going to choose this elder sister as the owner of his sword command." At this time, a charming voice sounded from afar. A burst of fragrance invaded the surroundings as a graceful figure came strolling from the distant horizon. She appeared to be in her twenties and had a very beautiful and seductive body. Her face was covered with only a thin veil while her private parts were moving seductively with her movements. Indeed, she looked very sultry. Several experts saw her and could not help but secretly swallow a mouthful of saliva. This woman was just too tempting.

As this woman continued to stroll forward, she was leaving behind a trail of pink fragrance. The experts who were in the range immediately found their complexion turning red, along with their wild fantasies being stirred at the same time.

Ye Mo was floating behind Ye Xiwen and even his face turned bright red. His reaction was really spectacular and unprecedented.

"Gee, this woman looks so seductive. She seems to have comprehended a profound seduction technique. No wonder the ordinary experts have no way to resist her charm." Ye Mo said. "Among the devils, even the infamous clan of Succubus does not have such a high level of seductiveness."

Ye Xiwen was unaffected by this burst of fragrance as was being protected by the cloak of golden divinities which were keeping off any outside interference, whether it was physical or non-physical in nature.

"Hu Meiniang, I never expected you would get involved in the matters of Wang Heavenly faction." Ku Mo ancestor turned toward the seductive woman and said with a creepy smile.

"Well, what do you know, my ancestors and Wang heavenly faction seem to have some old connections. So I am planning to get myself a sword command. I am sure this little brother will help his elder sister in fulfilling her goal." Hu Meiniang gave a seductive look to Ye Xiwen and smiled.

Standing nearby, many experts secretly gulped their saliva. That woman's seductive aura was making them go wild and compelling them to contemplate romantic mischief.

However, no one dared to rush forward. Although this woman was simply irresistible, she had quite a reputation in Yongan city for being an ominous witch who enjoyed brutally torturing and killing young experts. She had her own sadistic methods of killing men and was well-known for her depraved evil arts. She had already killed countless in her lifetime. Her hands were completely covered in blood.

No one was foolish enough to face such an ominous woman.

Ye Xiwen was not at all budged, instead he spoke in a calm voice while carrying a cold smile on his face: "You guys have really let me down. I am truly disappointed. I was expecting to be challenged by a powerful figure, but what did I get? You all are just a bunch of freaks that are practically begging to be put down."



"So, you are not going to surrender the sword command to me?" Ku Mo asked in a dull voice.

"If you want me to hand it over so badly, why don't you try and make me do it?" Ye Xiwen smirked.

"Boy, you are courting death!" The general couldn't control the sudden burst of anger and immediately rode the steed toward Ye Xiwen. His dreadful imposing aura was constantly locking onto Ye Xiwen.

"Shua!" A loud piercing sound came out of the blue, followed by an iron spear which rapidly flew toward Ye Xiwen to assassinate him. In the endless ocean of roaring and resentful souls, lingering around the spear, the might of the spear continued to surge as it punctured the vault of heaven and arrived right in front of Ye Xiwen.

The spectators held their breaths, their complexions paled as they suddenly realized that a peerless genius like Ye Xiwen had committed the biggest mistake of his life. His strength was on a par with the fifth god but he was still too young to be competing with the older generation. He was barely 20 years old whereas the golden armored general was four times his age, or even more. There was no way Ye Xiwen could compete with him and live.

Ye Xiwen moved instantly and just like a golden lightning, jumped through the clouds and blasted his palm and that instantly transformed into a golden coiling dragon and rushed toward the enemy.

"Boom!" The coiling dragon collided with the iron spear and caused a massive explosion.

"Bang!" Along with a deafening explosive noise, a strange yet horrifying energy channeled through the spear and leaped toward the golden armored general.

"Crash-bang!" As if being punctured in the jaws of death, his golden armor cracked open and blood splattered out from the cracks.

Even the divine steed was pushed back several steps by this explosion. Ye Xiwen's power was just extremely terrifying.

The golden armored general quickly healed the injury in his hand and looked at Ye Xiwen with an incredible look in his eyes. His army had fought for hundreds of years and each time they faced a strong opponent, he had always fought at the front and wreak havoc on the enemy forces, sweeping everything on the battlefield. He had always relied on his outstanding power and destructive capability to weaken the enemy forces. However, today he was made to have a taste of his own medicine by Ye Xiwen.

He certainly didn't know that his so-called destructive power was nothing in front of Ye Xiwen's divine power.

Ye Xiwen was not in a mood to waste time on this general. He immediately summoned the Hanshan seal in the sky and rushed toward the general.

"Die!" The general roared and regardless of a huge mountain of energy falling down from the sky, he rushed straight toward Ye Xiwen. His plan was to kill Ye Xiwen before Hanshan seal's impact.

He was extremely fast and appeared in front of Ye Xiwen in a flash.

"Shua!" Ye Xiwen stretched out his hand that was wrapped in divinities. and directly grabbed the spear. This clash set off a storm of rogue energy in all direction.

"This is impossible!" The general looked incredibly at Ye Xiwen. He couldn't believe his eyes. His spear was unable to piece Ye Xiwen's hand, in fact, it couldn't even put a scratch on his skin. He thought, just what was the extent of this youngster's toughness?

"Nothing is impossible in this world, now go to hell!" Ye Xiwen sneered and the Hanshan seal finally smashed down.

"Boom!" With a horrendous noise, both the general and his steed were smashed. Even at the point of death, the general couldn't believe how Ye Xiwen's body could be so formidable.

Ku Mo and Hu Meiniang couldn't believe what they just saw. With their eyes wide open and an incredible look in them, they were staring at Ye Xiwen. They just couldn't understand how a youngster like Ye Xiwen managed to kill a veteran general in such a short period of time.

Not to mention, they soon realized that they had messed with the wrong guy.

"Now it's your turn."

## Chapter 305: Small World Opens

---

However, Ye Xiwen did not give them the opportunity to renege on their words. Some people refuse to admit their deeds until they are faced with grim reality, not to mention this road was full of trials. The moment these three experts underestimated Ye Xiwen and attempted to snatch the sword command from him, it was confirmed that Ye Xiwen would teach them a proper lesson and establish an example in front of everyone. In this world, one could set up one's prestige and reputation by deterring the opposite side.

"You are next!" Ye Xiwen pointed at old man Ku Mo and said in an indifferent tone.

Both Ku Mo and Hu Meiniang were immediately scared in their heart. The trio had long been rampant in and around Yongan City. They had quite an illustrious reputation for being ominous experts of the older generation. All three of them were equally powerful but since one was killed so easily by Ye Xiwen, the other two were bound to get frightened.

Ye Xiwen did not give them enough time to think. He instantly slammed his foot on the ground and rushed forward like a golden general from the myths. Instantly, he appeared in front of Ku Mo and shot his palm, releasing waves of divine golden qi. It seemed as if a sea of golden energy blotted out the sky and was approaching Ku Mo at an overwhelming speed. Ku Mo finally realized that he had messed with the wrong guy, and sometimes, even a century worth of cultivation and experience would turn out to be worthless in saving one's life.

"Hu Meiniang, hurry up and help me out dammit. If you don't help me quickly, he will certainly go after you after killing me!" Ku Mo did not give any thought to his demeanor or grace and shamelessly shouted for help.

Hu Meiniang also knew the fact about the interdependence of two neighboring states while facing a much powerful enemy state. Hence she immediately shot her palm, her beautiful hand instantly blossomed like peach flower, seemingly floating in the air but cracking the space in its path. This attack was exceptionally beautiful yet fearsome.

Ye Xiwen simply ignored this attack and directed a seemingly endless amount of dreadful divine waves toward his target, the old man.

Ku Mo panicked and resorted to using his skinny hands to protect himself from the surging golden waves coming at him.

"Bang!" With a loud noise, the surrounding space collapsed in a flash, followed by a heart-wrenching sound of fracturing bones. Ku Mo's hands couldn't block the impact of surging energy waves and were torn apart. The might of Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant form was extremely formidable.

At this time, Hu Meiniang's attack finally crashed into Ye Xiwen's golden body.

"Clang!" There sounded a loud metal clanging sound, as if her attack collided with a golden statue and dissipated. Ye Xiwen's

body was exuding a divine aura that simply didn't allow the attack to approach him. His stout yet slim body was entirely unaffected by this.

Ye Xiwen's non-stop offensives kept on rushing towards Ku Mo. But this time, suddenly he stretched out his hand to send a big hand condensed out of golden energy, towards the old man.

"Bang!" Ku Mo was perplexed by the barrage of attacks and simply didn't have the time or means to respond. There was no way for him to react in time as he had never expected that Ye Xiwen would simply ignore Hu Meiniang's attacks and focus entirely on him. He was instantly grabbed by the big hand and crushed, turning his body into a ball of blood fog.

Hu Meiniang exclaimed as she saw the second member of the infamous trio being killed mercilessly by Ye Xiwen. Immediately after it happened, Ye Xiwen shot again and in a single step, arrived in front of her like a flash of lightning.

Hu Meiniang's face, at this moment, no longer had that same seductive look, instead it was full of fear and disbelief. Ye Xiwen had taken a ruthless approach toward the trio from the beginning, and she was certainly not going to be an exception. Her fear was understandable; after all, Ye Xiwen had killed two veterans of older generation in a blink of an eye.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen shot his palm towards her. She quickly responded by attempting to block the attack but how could she be his opponent?



"Bang!" With a dull thumping sound, the space around them suddenly collapsed from the impact of his palm attack. Hu Meiniang was sent flying and suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood in midflight. Her white skin turned bright red, making people think that this was really cruel to be done to her.

However, Ye Xiwen's facial expression didn't change. With the usual cold look on his face, he summoned the Hanshan seal in the sky and smashed it down.

"Boom!" Hanshan seal dropped upon Hu Meiniang and smashed her to death, leaving nothing but an awful patch of blood and meat behind.

A lot of experts held their breaths as they saw this terrible scene. He was really a ruthless and heartless guy. How could he be so cruel to a beautiful woman like her? They didn't know that Ye Xiwen didn't differentiate between genders whenever it came to dealing with his enemies. So long as there was an enemy in front of him, he wouldn't consider their gender or status before killing them.

"It's over. Come on, let's go." Ye Xiwen said dismissively to his team. At this time, a figure appeared in the sky and flew by at an incredible speed. This figure was brimming with killing intention. Clad in magnificent clothing, it appeared as cold as ice.

It was recognized that this person was actually one of the Seven Star Lords of the 'Destruction Army'. At this time, the warriors of

Destruction Army had their bodies covered in blood, indicating that they just arrived from a bloody battle, apparently ambushed just like Ye Xiwen for the sword command.

Several experts looked at Ye Xiwen's flawless state then they turned around to look at the miserable state of Destruction Army and suddenly gasped. How could a youngster like him be so strong?

Even three of the well-known powerhouses of the older generation were not his matches, and were slaughtered mercilessly within moments. There had the advantage of having a century worth of experience, perhaps even more. But a rare genius like Ye Xiwen appeared out of nowhere and smashed them like ants.

Ye Xiwen crossed his hands behind his back and went all the way to the mountains. Soon, he arrived near a stretch of flat land on the mountainside which was apparently plagued by strong sandstorms. The strong winds were blowing occasionally to reveal a large square. It most likely was the residence of the lost Wang heavenly faction.

Once a prosperous and extremely large sect was now ruined to such an extent.

In the inner parts of the square, the crowd of Army of God was gathered around the fifth god who was proudly watching everyone. He was really like an authentic deity general.

In front of the Army of God, several corpses were lined up on the ground. It would race people's palpitation if they found out that

these were all experts of the legendary realm, but they fell into the hands of the Army of God and lost their lives. The fifth god also killed several experts for military glory.

Standing on the left of the Army of God was the group of Yongan City government, headed by the city's patron saint. There were several corpses lined up in front of them as well but not as many as the ones lied in front of the Army of God. This was because of the fact that Yongan city's patron saint was a reputed expert and no one dared to mess with him.

Even among the experts of the older generation fighter, it was a well-known fact to stay away from him.

The black-robed expert was standing next to the crowd of Yongan city government. His black robe was covered with stains of blood all over. He must have experienced a bloody battle before arriving here. Obviously, at this time, everyone's gaze fell upon the new visitor, Ye Xiwen and he could also feel their gazes probing him from all directions but he just didn't care and took a position.

Ye Xiwen felt like he had a familiar feeling but it was only a part of his fleeting thoughts. Then he looked towards the right-hand side of the Army of God and saw Jinyi young master. He was clad in a fine brocaded uniform of Jinyi Guards. Just like the crowd of Yongan city government, even their front was clean. Thanks to their ominous reputation as the largest organization of spies and assassins in the Ming Empire, no one dared to stir them up on the way.

The forces of Destruction Army were stationed beside Jinyi

young master's team in blood-stained clothes.

Besides the current owners of the 8 sword commands, several other experts were also present on the scene and were excitedly discussing about the sword command owners.

Of course, a lot of them were at half-step legendary realm but no one dared to mess with them in any way because these sword command owners had slaughtered their way to this spot after facing several hurdles. Not to mention they also had the backing of big influences. They must not be provoked at any cost, because those who already did were the most unfortunate ones.

"Since all are here, let's get started!" Said the fifth god and looked coldly at Ye Xiwen, as if looking at a dead man.

"Rumble!" Along with an ear-shattering bellow that resounded everywhere, a huge portal appeared out of thin air with eight giant keyholes, having the appearance of scabbards. This portal had a very conspicuous appearance and was releasing a surge of desolate breath into the sky which immediately had a repression effect on everyone.

"The door leading to the relics of Wang Heavenly faction is going to open now. Be prepared everybody!" At this time, the leader of Yongan City government with unfathomable breath shouted.

Suddenly, a streamer of light flew toward the portal. A sword command automatically inserted itself into one the keyholes, and suddenly, as if after having received some kind of stimulus, the

huge portal started rumbling and trembling.

Immediately, the other sword command owners also allowed their sword commands to depart towards the keyholes, including the black-robed expert. Even Ye Xiwen was no exception.

When the last key went inside the keyhole, a door appeared in the portal and started to slowly open. There was nothing but misty whiteness on the other side of the door.

"Let's go!" Ye Xiwen shouted. He was the first in his team to rush out, followed by the wolf cub and the Mo siblings. A total of four figures lased out like beams of light and crossed the portal.

The black-robed expert also rushed into the portal and instantly vanished without a trace.

When Ye Xiwen's team crossed to the other side of the portal, they suddenly felt like everything around them was gone, leaving behind only chaos to welcome them.

After stepping into chaos, Ye Xiwen could certainly feel the space around him twisting, turning and breaking apart. If not for the aura of protection originating from the sword command, Ye Xiwen estimated that they all would have been directly torn to pieces in this chaos.

He knew that they were supposed to pass through numerous layers of different space before reaching the Wang Heavenly

faction's small world.

Although the entrance to this small space was located near Yongan City, its real location was not known to anyone.

In fact, no one was told about the specific location of a martial art station other than a handful of high-level officials, or else if the location was found then the hostile forces would be able to directly tear the space to infiltrate. And that would definitely be a huge disaster for a martial art station.

Yi Yuan School also had a small world and its entrance was hidden in the depths of Yi Yuan School's mountain forest. The real secrets of Yi Yuan School were stored up safely in that small world and its true location was not revealed to anyone. Only a handful of elders would stand guard perennially to protect the small world and one must pass through all those guarding elders to enter the small world. Not to mention there were tokens similar to the sword commands to go inside.

Hence, if there was a strong enemy invasion and Yi Yuan School was completely destroyed, this small world would act as the perfect hiding place to block out all the enemies because even if the enemy managed to find the entrance to the small world and shattered the portal, they wouldn't be able to reach the small world without the guidance from the tokens. Not to mention, it was a near impossible task to find this small world in the midst of chaotic space turbulence.

# Chapter 306: Wolf Cub Under Heavenly Tribulation

---

Perhaps, even the founder of Yi Yuan School did not know the real location of its secret small space inside the chaotic space. In other words, it would be a near-impossible task for the enemy to randomly tear up space to pinpoint the location of Yi Yuan School's secret space. This was a way to safeguard the existence of a martial art sect, like the final lifeline.

Space was constantly distorting, fragmenting and breaking apart! It was as if the universe itself was disillusioned, with space debris floating around everywhere. It was a spectacular scene, a gorgeous one yet extremely dangerous at the same time.

Although Ye Xiwen had confidence in his gilded tyrant body, he was still cautious because there was a possibility that bumping into those fragments of space debris might cut his golden body. If he was in sage realm then only he would have a certain ability to withstand space debris.

"Boom!" The distortion in space vanished all of a sudden and they were greeted with bright scenery!

Yes, they had entered the secret ruins of the Wang Heavenly faction.

Even the desolation of this place was pleasant to the eye. All one could see was a desolate scene of endless mountains everywhere.

No one could say for sure but this place had been neglected for thousands of years. Usually, a small space like this one was governed and periodically maintained; and it had active spiritual arteries to maintain a continuous production of Lingqi, giving vitality to this world. However, this space was left abandoned for too long; even the spiritual arteries had started drying up!

Vast stretch of barren land indicated a mass-scale death of vegetation; the space deterioration had also begun. If left untouched, this space would completely collapse in coming millenniums!

As soon as the dragon veins would die, this space would have almost nothing to hold onto.

One could see ruins of some ancient structures, disclosing a bit about this place's history and vicissitudes.

"Roar!" A loud beastly roar came from a distant place, followed by a series of beast roars spreading from all directions. These roars belonged to the demon beasts that were originally sent to this small space as captives, to act as the prey for the disciples of Wang Heavenly faction. However, the disciples were long gone and the demon beast had flourished over time, spreading throughout this entire small space.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"



"Roar!"

The roaring sound was getting louder and louder as if the source of the roar was getting closer. Suddenly, a giant red griffin, with its whole body covered in flames, appeared out of nowhere and attacked.

Ye Xiwen was at the front. Initially, he couldn't tell what kind of bird it was until he saw its real form in the flames. It opened its huge mouth to bite Ye Xiwen with its mouthful of sharp teeth.

"Bang!" As soon as the griffin arrived right in front of him, he slapped it directly on the face and it immediately died a tragic death.

"The demon beasts in this small world are surprisingly so powerful!" Ye Xiwen said that although he had slapped a griffin to death, it was definitely a demon beast of Complete Truth realm.

Soon, he discovered a large flock of griffins flying towards his team. Each having the strength equivalent to the truth seventh or eighth stage. There were a few half-step legendary level demon beasts in that flock as well.

"Boom!" A large section of fluctuating Swordqi emerged from Ye Xiwen's hand and went straight into the sky. It seemed as if the sky itself was pierced by a sword as the Swordqi went forward and crashed into the flock of griffins.

"Slash!" With a loud piercing sound, the Swordqi delimited a wide path through that huge flock of griffins in a split-second, butchering numerous griffins almost instantly. However, there still were an overwhelming number of griffins rushing towards him and his team.

At this moment, he had a serious look on his face as he said: "Be prepared!"

As soon as his voice fell, the flock of griffins overran them.

The wolf cub had a cultivation of half-step legendary realm and thus had the capability to deal with this situation, but the Mo siblings were in distress. They were in Complete Truth realm and suddenly got surrounded by a large number of griffins that were at truth seventh or eighth stage, it was truly disadvantageous for them. Not to mention, they didn't stand a chance against the griffins of Complete Truth realm and half-step legendary realm.

But the good news was Ye Xiwen had already taken care of this problem by pinpointing and killing the formidable griffins first. The remaining ones were not powerful enough to be a threat to the lives of the Mo siblings.

They all knew that this would be a rare opportunity to gain experience because Ye Xiwen was on their side, watching over them. He wouldn't let them have any problems.

In the following half a month period, Ye Xiwen continued on a

killing spree. Only God knows how many demon beasts were slaughtered during that time. Several ethnic groups of demon beasts had been here in this small world and the lack of human presence had contributed to a vast explosion in their population. Ye Xiwen just wanted to kill these demon beasts left and right because there were just too many of them available on the platter.

Ordinary people couldn't imagine how Ye Xiwen and his team continued the killing spree for several days non-stop without a moment of rest.

As they were venturing deeper into the depths, the demon beasts were getting stronger and fiercer. After reaching a certain point, they only found the demon beasts of Complete Truth realm.

Such type of rigorous practice with back to back battles was the most effective way to level up. The Mo siblings finally stepped into half-step legendary realm, and after having passed through numerous battles, their inner states completely stabilized.

"Heavenly Wolf Howling Moon!" The wolf cub howled and summoned a magnificent diagram which instantly killed a demon beast that appeared on verge of stepping into the legendary realm.

The wolf cub, then, devoured the demon core of that demon beast, and almost immediately, was surrounded by intermittent waves of terrifying breath. His hair inverted as he stood still while surrounded by his own aura raging wantonly.

"He plans to challenge the heavenly tribulation!" Ye Mo shouted.

His breath began to boil up, rolling away in all directions. In the sky, layer after layer of dark clouds started to build up. This was a spectacular scene of the instantaneous formation of heavenly tribulation.

It appeared like the wolf cub was planning to have a breakthrough from half-step legendary realm to half-step legendary fist stage. This heavenly tribulation was the great test that must be cleared at all costs. Not to mention, there was no option of backing out.

Ye Xiwen hastily said: "Hurry up and get away from us!"

He didn't want to receive accidental injuries while messing with a heavenly tribulation, especially with the one that was going to test a freak like wolf cub. Although this heavenly tribulation had not manifested completely, Ye Xiwen could still sense its terrifying coercion.

Moreover, this time the wolf cub was already at half-step legendary realm so the heavenly tribulation would be calibrated accordingly to test him. Ye Xiwen couldn't imagine the extent of its destructive power but it was enough to make his scalp tingle a bit.

The wolf cub quickly went far away and immediately, a rain of raging lightning strikes began to aim at him. His black furry body was immediately struck by thunderbolts one after another. Soon, the air was filled with burning smell.

The wolf cub started hopping around to dodge the rain of the thunderbolts. Ye Xiwen and the Mo siblings were standing afar and observing this magnificent spectacle. They were not planning to help the wolf cub.

At this moment, several tyrannical soul searches swept out of nowhere. They turned out to be coming from the older generation experts of the legendary realm. They must have sensed the heavenly tribulation and sent their soul searches. It seemed like they were aiming to attack Ye Xiwen and his team while they were at their weakest since one of the team members was undergoing breakthrough.

Ye Xiwen sent his soul search to intercept the incoming ones. Who'd be so courageous to challenge him? Had they not seen him killing three powerhouses of older generation within moments? It seemed like some people were still coveting to take down Ye Xiwen; after all, he was one of the top players of the younger generation and was operating on his own, without the backing of any major influence. If they managed to kill him, then they might seize various treasures that he must have accumulated during his adventures. The very thought of seizing those treasure from the corpse of Ye Xiwen must be exciting them to no extent.

Among those who were considered the top players of the younger generation were several members of the Army of God, the Jinyi young master, the Seven Star Lords and so on. They were considered untouchable because of their strong backings.

The expert in black robe was the first to go in but was nowhere to be seen. There was no news about him in the past few days as if he

didn't exist in general.

Similarly, the Destruction Army was backed by the Seven Star Lords, hence must not be provoked.

In the end, the older experts must have decided that their best and easiest option was to target a lone powerhouse like Ye Xiwen.

"It seems like I haven't killed enough to prove my point." Ye Xiwen said with a sigh.

"Ha ha ha, kill, kill them all, kill as many as you can!" Ye Mo said while laughing like a madman. After all, those killed by Ye Xiwen would transform into blood fog and their flesh and blood would be absorbed by Tianyuan mirror. The more he would kill, the faster would be the restoration of Tianyuan mirror.

"You wait here. I will go get rid of some annoying flies." Ye Xiwen said.

Mo siblings nodded. Even they had sensed arrogance in those soul searches.

Ye Xiwen, carrying a long blade, instantly turned into a golden beam of light and sped towards the distant place, precisely toward the hideout of those masters.

# Chapter 307: Half-Step Legendary Realm's First Stage

---

Ye Xiwen treaded on a rainbow, marching across the void while raising the long blade in his hands. In a blink of an eye, he arrived in front of a warrior.

“Ye Xiwen, what do you think you are doing?” That warrior saw Ye Xiwen suddenly appearing in front of his face and a trace of fear abruptly appeared on his face, after all, they were already discussing about joining forces to take him down. This proved the point that Ye Xiwen was a terrifying existence and they were really not sure if they could deal with him on their own. Hence, they planned to join forces against him, otherwise, who would be willing to share Ye Xiwen’s treasures with others?

“You are overreaching yourselves!” Ye Xiwen sneered thinking that these people really wanted to gang up on him.

“Shua!” The long blade in Ye Xiwen’s hand suddenly exploded and released terrifying rays of light. Without enough time to respond, a touch of bloodstain appeared on that warrior’s nape, and almost at the same time, his body suddenly went sluggish which was visible to the naked eye. His blood and essence condensed into a stream of scarlet blood and merged with Ye Xiwen’s body. In addition, it also started getting absorbed by the Tianyuan mirror the very next instant.

After having absorbed the fine essence and blood of a legendary expert, the Tianyuan mirror immediately burst into the waves of carnage. The outline of Ye Xiwen’s figure resembled that of a blood

god who seemed to have arrived from the ancient times to slaughter everyone.

Pitiful screams came from the distance as the experts of legendary realm started getting killed by Ye Xiwen one by one. The Mo siblings were speechless and looking at each other with empty expressions on their faces. They couldn't help but realize that Ye Xiwen was really a sinister person and fairly decisive in performing such tasks. He truly was a big shot with great persona!

Being a big shot wasn't something that commanded one to not act personally rather it made sure that one would certainly not let off an enemy no matter what. In a life and death situation, rage and decisive killing was a must. It wasn't like the Mo brother and sister were softhearted people, since the day they set foot on this road, the gathering of a variety of talented geniuses had made their existence comparable to that of an ant's, not to mention they were also hunted down at multiple occasions.

They also gazed at the heavenly tribulation that had encircled the wolf cub and suddenly felt like even those around Ye Xiwen were not normal. The wolf cub's heavenly tribulation was getting increasingly terrifying with passing time. If it was them surrounded by that kind of heavenly tribulation, they would have long been hacked to death. But this wolf cub, although shrieking and howling wildly, was constantly jumping around and bravely facing the vicious attacks. There was no sign of injuries on his body, nor was there any significant damage done to his vitality and basic strength.

At this time, the wolf cub was suddenly struck by a thunderbolt



and it seemed like he was dead. The whole heavenly tribulation suddenly started raging and began to boil with excitement. A section of lightning crossed down from the sky and started condensing into wolves one after another. All of those lightning figures appeared like wolves of half-step legendary realm with their wolf king standing at the back. Not to mention, the wolf king was at the peak of half-step legendary realm's first stage.

Several ice-cold eyes were staring intently at the wolf cub. In a chorus of loud howls, hundreds of lightning wolves sprang toward the wolf cub at once.

All these wolves were at the same level as the wolf cub and were unusually horrifying.

Mo siblings were immediately amazed by this scene. Everyone knows the fact that incredible experts have to go through much more terrifying heavenly tribulation during breakthrough. Since this tribulation was getting even more terrifying, it was quite easy to figure out that it was abnormal. Even a demon beast powerhouse would certainly fail to survive through this level of heavenly tribulation. Therefore, one could say that this ordinary looking wolf cub definitely had an extraordinary origin and perhaps was of noble descent.

The wolf cub roared and rushed forward, crashing into the pack of lightning wolves and tangling together. Initially, it seemed like an easy task for the wolf cub but now, it might actually turn into an exceptional bloody battle.

A lightning wolf bit the wolf cub and directly ripped off a piece of

flesh from his body. He was immediately thrown into pain and yelled out loud. Instantly, he turned around and swallowed that lightning wolf in one go. Huge amount of lightning energy contained in the body of that lightning wolf was instantly absorbed by the wolf cub into his body, immediately raising his spiritual value a little.

It was hard to tell how long this battle continued but finally, those lightning wolves were wiped out by the wolf cub. However, the real trouble had only just arrived as the most powerful lightning wolf, the wolf king, suddenly flew toward the wolf cub while howling loudly and then nipped at him.

After absorbing a lot of lightning wolves, the wolf cub's stature had already exceeded more than two meters in height, hence now it equally matched with that lightning wolf king. The two great wolves started attacking each other in the sky.

This was truly a tragic battle. The wolf cub was bleeding heavily with no way to stop the blood loss. Large chunks of his flesh were torn apart, with bits of flesh and blood falling down from the sky.

The frigid preying that happened just now made the world change its color. The Mo siblings had their complexions changed as a result of witnessing this battle firsthand. It was such a tragic heavenly tribulation that they would have definitely failed to pass, but the wolf cub was still fighting.

Then, abruptly, a flash of rainbow colored light dazzled the sky. Ye Xiwen, carrying a long blade in his hand, was treading the rainbow. His body was covered with stains of blood all over and

brimming with murderous aura. In a split-second, he killed a lot of legendary experts.

He said nothing but looked at the wolf cub from afar. He could tell that the wolf cub's fight was in its last act. The muscles on his chest were gnawed off while the lightning wolf king had half of its head bitten off. A normal demon beast would have died as a result of that but it was made up of pure energy and all it needed was to restore itself to its original form.

Ye Xiwen was relieved seeing that eventually, the wolf cub discharged a divine beam directly toward the lightning wolf king and hacked it into pieces before ultimately absorbing its entire energy the very next instant.

The wolf cub successfully crossed the entirety of heavenly tribulation and his body suddenly started falling down from the sky. Ye Xiwen and the Mo siblings quickly rushed toward him to check on his condition.

“Gee, I did not expect you to actually have such a tribulation!” Ye Xiwen said with admiration and amazement.

“You should try as well.” The wolf cub cast a weak gaze at Ye Xiwen, as if having no strength left to lift his eyelids.

But at this time, everyone noticed that the clouds of heavenly tribulation did not disperse, on the contrary, they grew denser and denser.

“Crap! Just now, I spent all my strength to cross the heavenly tribulation. What is going on?” The wolf cub suddenly cursed out loud.

“This is mine!” Ye Xiwen said as he looked up and gazed at the raging cloud. He could feel the heavenly tribulation firmly locking on at him, making it impossible for him to escape. He could tell that if he tried to leave that spot, the heavenly tribulation would shoot him down.

Mo siblings quickly took the wolf cub and got away from Ye Xiwen. When the wolf cub’s heavenly tribulation was that terrifying, then Ye Xiwen’s was definitely going to be unimaginably insane.

“Your killing intention has greatly affected the heavenly tribulation, that’s the reason why it has not yet dispersed; rather it is coming down together with your heavenly tribulation.” Ye Mo said.

The heavenly tribulation didn’t target the experts randomly. It usually targeted those with exceptional murderous aura or those who [offended the heavens](#) and then tried to reason. But today, this didn’t happen because of Ye Xiwen’s murderous aura. First, the wolf cub’s heavenly tribulation had not left, and secondly, the cultivation of Ye Xiwen was at such an advanced level that the heavenly tribulation was going to appear for him sooner or later.

伤天害理 ; shāng tiān hài lǐ : to offend Heaven and reason ; bloody atrocities that cry to heaven ; outrageous acts

In the sky, the clouds were darkening and getting denser and denser with electric snakes shuttling back and forth inside those clouds.

“Hua la!” Along with a shrill noise, hundreds of electric snakes swooped down from the clouds, [outdoing one another](#) while falling towards Ye Xiwen.

zhēng xiān kǒng hòu : striving to be first and fearing to be last ;  
outdoing one another

Ye Xiwen was entirely still but continuously improving his martial skill. At this instant, his gilded tyrant form suddenly went berserk and started exuding rays of golden light in all directions, giving rise to the golden swords that were slashing the electric snakes.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

Intermittent and fierce explosions occurred right above Ye Xiwen. Violent storm waves formed by the explosions mingled with the electrical sparks and swept everywhere, engulfing everything in the path and wreaking havoc.

After the divinities on Ye Xiwen’s body transformed into golden

swords, then they started cutting through the raid of electrical energy. His gilded body was absorbing that energy constantly and evolving. Such a heavenly tribulation was a nightmare for an ordinary genius of legendary realm, but it was nothing for Ye Xiwen.

His gilded tyrant form rushed to the fourth layer and the durability of his body reached unimaginable proportions.

“Crash-bang!” At that moment, bolts of lightning crashed from the clouds like the torrential downpour, all the way toward and upon Ye Xiwen.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The heavenly lightning was getting more and more intense. Its power was also growing gradually, getting stronger and stronger, enough to drown Ye Xiwen in a sea of lightning.

The Mo brother and sister were stunned seeing such a crazy tribulation and that also, much more aggressive than that of the wolf cub, almost to the point of exaggeration. Really, just what kind of pet was this wolf cub? And what kind of owner was Ye Xiwen? Such an inconceivable pair was truly mindboggling.

The heavenly tribulation continued to test Ye Xiwen but could not do anything to him. Gradually, the lightning strikes also stopped but Ye Xiwen was not yet relaxed because he knew that the heavenly tribulation was still not gone.

And as expected, a lightning bolt transformed into a long spear and struck down with a loud rumbling sound.

Ye Xiwen immediately raised his hand to block while shooting his other palm toward the incoming lightning spear.

“Boom!”

With an extremely dreadful explosion, the lightning spear set off a lightning storm and started to wreak havoc.

Ye Xiwen's hand was now covered in blood which happened as a result of the lightning storm set off by the lightning spear. The impact shook his body completely and almost cracked his bones.

He suddenly turned vigilant as this was the first time he was injured while crossing a heavenly tribulation. He immediately activated the phoenix regeneration and healed the wound on his hand.

However, the heavenly tribulation clouds were still roaring in the sky and three lightning spears appeared at once.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

Ye Xiwen rocked his golden divine clothes as he bravely received those three lightning spears on his body, which tore open his flesh. However, his injuries were soon repaired by phoenix regeneration and that also, in a flash.

These lightning spears were really nasty as they were so fast and there was no way to dodge them.

Ye Xiwen would take them on each time and his body would be covered in blood as a result. But he continued to absorb these lightning spears into his body, and slowly, his wounds grew smaller in size and fewer and fewer in number. Eventually, those lightning spears no longer posed any threat to his gilded tyrant form as it had become much more formidable than earlier after nourishment.

Finally, it seemed like the heavenly tribulation didn't have the means to continue any longer, hence resigned in the end, of course, quite unwillingly.

As soon as it ended, Ye Xiwen's body suddenly began to emit waves of intermittent golden light. After having passed through the baptism of this heavenly tribulation, his 'tyrant body technique' had reveled great benefits in the form of the enormous progress that came as the byproduct of all this.



Ye Xiwen's breath also began to have an unceasing breakthrough, bit by bit approaching the first stage of half-step legendary realm. The so-called half-step legendary realm's first stage required an absolute accumulation of energy prior to the breakthrough, which was naturally extremely difficult to achieve.

“Boom!” A burst of energy swept out of Ye Xiwen's body all at once.

And finally, he stepped into half-step legendary realm's first stage.

## Chapter 308: Dragon Essence Appears

---

The time was crawling away until half a month had already passed. At the end of it, Ye Xiwen completely consolidated the inner state of his cultivation while wantonly slaughtering demon beasts that happened to appear in his path and absorbing the essence from the demon cores and so on. Ultimately, his cultivation fully consolidated at the peak of half-step legendary realm's first stage.

With all sorts of secret technique in his arsenal, he was confident enough to sweep away any and all experts of half-step legendary realm's second stage quite effortlessly. In fact, he was confident that he might even be able to contend with the weaker experts of half-step legendary realm's third stage.

Other than a dab hand like Ye Xiwen, even the wolf cub was at half-step legendary realm's first stage and could easily contend with experts of half-step legendary realm's second stage. In addition to that, the Mo siblings had also reaped a huge profit in the past half-a-month period. They also experienced an enormous promotion in their strengths and obtained the remains of various heavenly treasures, etc. Before long, they were also able to reach the first stage of half-step legendary realm.

Such a tyrannical team would be considered extremely powerful in the entire domain of Wang Heavenly faction. In short, this team was so formidable that one could not find an opponent for them in the vicinity, neither did anyone tried to mess with them or appear anywhere nearby.

Soon, the name and fame of Ye Xiwen and the others rushed out and spread throughout the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction.

Ye Xiwen rushed all the way toward the central regions of this small world because he didn't want his team to advance too far away from their destination. After all, if their team happened to encounter a group of powerful demon beasts, there was no way to escape that situation so easily.

The best course of action was to maintain unceasing slaughtering and keep moving forward all the way toward the destination.

“Boom!” At this moment, Ye Xiwen shot his fist and blasted away a group of uncanny and grotesque-looking demon beasts of some unknown species.

“This is totally unreasonable! These spiritual arteries have almost dried up. What on earth are these demon beasts relying on for a living?!” The wolf cub said in his usual foul-mouthed manner. Although they were decisively and mercilessly killing their way toward the destination while continuing on the killing spree for half-a-month which was enough to make anyone throw up disgustingly, but they weren't homicidal enough to not realize the condition those beasts were in.

“Seems like a desperate attempt by these high-level spiritual arteries is [to show filial piety to the living beings of this world](#), perhaps this world's last resort is to return the favor to its residents.” Ye Xiwen said, “Similar to how some people experience [a dying flash](#) when they miraculously gain heightened consciousness right before dying, this world's spiritual arteries are

acting up frantically at the end of its lifespan, trying to return the favor while simultaneously speeding up the demise of this world in the process.”

回光返照 huí guāng fǎn zhào: final radiance of setting sun ; fig. dying flash [of lucidity prior to demise]

反哺 ; fǎn bǔ: to support one's parents in their old age; to show filial piety; to repay; to return a favor

Ye Xiwen had already asked about all this from Ye Mo. Only god knows these old monster had lived for how many years and followed the Demon King for all those years, and of course, he had seen it all. The very extent of his wisdom was non-quantifiable, not to mention there were only a few real secrets that didn't come under his domain of knowledge.

Now, they were entering the observation region of the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction and finally experienced the true madness of the ruins. At this stage, the spiritual arteries started acting crazily, spewing Ling qi everywhere and thereby causing a sudden increase in the numbers of demon beast.

The more they ventured into the depths, the more warriors they encountered en route, all rushing in one direction. The reason was very simple – there were reports of discovering a valley where the dragon essence was supposedly laid out.

The news immediately caused numerous experts go crazy – didn't they come to this small world for the dragon essence? Actually, everyone had come here for the dragon essence only.

After a long time, they finally got the accurate news and it contained something peculiar that was bound to make people excited.

There were reports about an approximately 50 to 60 meters tall black [Jiao Long](#) [Flood Dragon]. Though it was not an adult yet but was already very terrifying with its black scale glowing breathtakingly and making it look like a mountain in general. Its moustaches [feelers] were constantly moving up and down quite vigorously.

蛟龙 jiāo long: legendary dragon with the ability to control rain and floods

Suffused with horrifying breath [aura], dreadful enough to make a human tremble in fear, its whole body was shrouded in fog that was being churned by electrical sparks.

Right beneath that flood dragon was the corpse of a long dragon. The experts were looking intently at this strange scene and suddenly understood that the dragon essence actually took birth after the death of a dragon.

They were quite surprised to see the dragon essence which appeared just like a real dragon but it was covered with a matte of dragon corpse. However, unlike an ordinary corpse, it contained an aggressive vigor [imposing aura].

Dragons were considered praiseworthy creatures throughout the world and inherently carried a very scary coercion, known as Longwei [Dragon Power]. No wonder it remained in the corpse

even after death.

More and more experts rushed to this spot. Jinyi young master, the fifth god and the other powerhouses had already arrived. But this time, they did not have the thought of in-fighting. Everyone's focus was centered on this incomparably huge flood dragon. They were aware of the fact that this flood dragon must be killed first; otherwise, it would be impossible to encroach on the dragon essence lying beneath it.

“This flood dragon should have been born not many months ago, he is still in infancy!” Ye Mo said. “Normally, a flood dragon is born in the Legendary realm, grows in the Sage realm and by the time it's fully grown up, it would have at least reached the Great Sage level. This is absolute for all flood dragons. This flood dragon has already reached the peak of legendary third stage and should be having a breakthrough to legendary fourth stage any time now.”

“The more powerful is a demon beast, the more difficult it finds growing up, especially for an inborn demon beast like this one.” Ye Mo further explained, “Usually, a flood dragon's childhood stretches for hundreds of year, however, this young dragon was born not long ago and was still able to break through to such an extent. I think this is somehow related to the absorption of dragon essence.”

Ye Xiwen and the Mo siblings were dumbstruck when they heard the explanation. So, a real flood dragon would absolutely reach the Great Sage level once it was all grown up? This was simply unheard of! Just how terrifying was the dragon race!

But while this flood dragon was just an infant, it already had all it would take to deter even the most formidable human experts present on the scene. Even Ye Xiwen might not be able to deal with this dragon. But the experts still did not want to give up this opportunity. They had finally managed to find the dragon essence, how could they just let it go?

They could tell this flood dragon was about to step into legendary fourth stage and if that happened, no one would be able to face it. As long as it was sitting on top of the dragon essence, its rate of progress was definitely going to be faster. They certainly knew about the dragon essence, hence somewhat figured out this problem.

By that time, they would have no chance to snatch the dragon essence away from the flood dragon.

Even now, it was very difficult but if they let it be like that for any longer, then it would become impossible later on. Moreover, they already noticed that the flood dragon was enraged after being encircled by human experts.

Although this dragon was unable to speak, its tyrannical soul perception [soul search] swept over and properly relayed its anger to everyone.

Moreover, allowing this dragon to grow any stronger wasn't going to be beneficial to them in any way.

“It seems like not much time has passed since the hatching of this flood dragon’s egg. I do not know from where Wang Heavenly faction found a dragon egg. Since the world has changed, even a hybrid dragon is hard to find, let alone a legitimate true blood dragon.” Ye Mo said, “My estimate is that this flood dragon’s egg must have stayed on the dragon essence for a long time before hatching, probably ever since the complete decline of Wang Heavenly faction.”

“Humans, damn it!”

The angry young flood dragon roared loudly; its several hundred feet long body soared high in the sky instantly like a mountain and flew towards the human experts nearby. The noise from terrifying explosions immediately broke out and submerged the space itself.

The flood dragon’s impact was in direction of the Army of God. They were the first group to arrive and had already initiated the attack once but did not succeed. However now, the dragon was vengeful, hence immediately rushed toward the crowd of the Army of God.

Although it hadn’t been long since this dragon hatched out of its egg, but its body was quite huge. At this instant, it gave out a long and loud cry and released a type of fluctuating coercion in all directions that swept out, chipping the space just like mighty ocean waves.

“Bang!”



“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Those members of the Army of God, who were above half-step legendary realm, barely managed to save their lives but those below that had their bodies fragmented into pieces by the shock waves.

“Humph!” The fifth god rushed forward with his long halberd just like a god from ancient times. The long halberd directly punctured into the body of the dragon.

“Boom!” Ripples of horrifying energy waves were set off everywhere, crazily disintegrating anything in the path. The fifth god immediately repositioned himself and then again directly stabbed the black flood dragon between the eyebrows with his halberd. This hit again set off a storm of rogue energy waves everywhere. A scale that was about half-a-meter in size was instantly chipped off but the flood dragon immediately used its tyrannical power to send out shock waves, shaking off the halberd in the process.

“Poof!” The fifth god spouted a mouthful of blood and was sent flying dozens of meters away. At that very instant, the flood dragon faced forward and immediately rushed to grab the fifth god’s flying body in midair.

Several experts were watching this from the sidelines and immediately held their breaths as they realized that this young

flood dragon was extremely scary. They couldn't help but engage themselves in introspection, thinking whether they could really face such a creature?

Many reached the conclusion that it was meaningless to even think of facing this flood dragon as they feared losing their lives by the shockwaves itself, facing it head on was simply out of the question.

“Listen everyone, no matter how we do it, we must kill this beast!” At this time, the patron saint of Yongan city spoke. “I hope we are able to work together this time, otherwise, no one will be able to reap benefits. But there's a possibility of hope if we manage to slay this beast together.”

The experts nodded in agreement, all at once.

“Yes, he is right. We must slay this young flood dragon no matter what!”

“Indeed, it must be slain at any cost.”

Many people confessed that they couldn't obtain the dragon essence anymore as they were coveting the young flood dragon in their hearts. Regardless of its age, it was still a dragon with the blood of a real dragon lord flowing in its veins. It was said that in this world, only the race of gods could contend with this so-called race of terror, the dragon race!

# Chapter 309: Flood Dragon Slaughtered

---

If they could obtain even a small part of its body, then it would be like the supreme and most precious treasure to them.

“Ye Xiwen, come on, kill this baby flood dragon and make it a blood sacrifice for your Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array. Doing that will upgrade its power by multiple levels and might help in fully achieving the legendary level!” Ye Mo said excitedly as the Flag Array took deepwater black serpents as sacrifices in order to establish the foundation of its enhancement. Besides, both the dragons and snakes belonged to the same dragon species yet contained a major difference in their basic power levels. There simply was no comparison between a pureblood flood dragon and a deepwater black serpent.

If Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag was nourished with a young flood dragon’s blood, the level of its power was bound to rise dramatically.

“Young Flood Dragon and Dragon essence, both are mine!” Ye Xiwen made up his mind. But in order to obtain them, he must defeat those extremely high-handed top players of the younger generation and the older generation.

Ye Xiwen had already made up his mind and was all prepared to face all those people in front of him. He wouldn’t hesitate to kill anyone, not even the God or the Buddha would escape his wrath if they were to stand between him and his goal!

A while ago, that old patron saint's words had already made it quite apparent to everyone that in order to obtain the dragon essence, it was necessary to first get rid of the flood dragon.

“Humph!” The first one to attack was the Jin young master of Jinyi guards. He took out a huge fan and suddenly a giant sierra smashed down upon flood dragon's body out of nowhere.

The impact directly crushed some of the dragon's scales, making it roar again and again in pain.

This was called [Shanhe Shan](#). This class of magical weapons had many such weapons but Jin young master's might added to its own; and with each movement of the fan, the mountains and rivers slammed down one after another directly upon the flood dragon without giving it any respite.

a fan of mountains and rivers

However, this flood dragon was really very fearful and it also seemed like it did not have any declining tendency. Instead, it continued its frenzy all the while.

At this time, the black-robed powerhouse launched a powerful strike, releasing a rippling Swordqi that rushed out horizontally and cut into the flood dragon's body.

By now, even the old patron saint finally went into action and called forth a massive hand print [hand seal] that fell down from the sky.

The members of Destruction Army also jumped into the battle, filling the entire sky with their murderous aura. This was like the reincarnation of a killing star, not to mention it seriously took quite huge courage in one's heart to rush into a face-to-face battle with this flood dragon.

Ye Xiwen was also unwilling to be outdone by them. In his hand appeared a crazily burning heavenly golden sword intention and then was instantly shot up high into the sky.

The world changed its color. Even everyone was impressed seeing such a formidable shot. One must know that although sword intention and sword qi had only a mismatch of one word, but the two were not the same thing in any way. Just like Zhen Yuan and Swordqi were in itself different from each other. One was just a scattered form of energy while the other had a condensed form along with a specific shape.

The so-called sword intention was an artistic conception, an ideal condition of a sword technique that could be congealed anytime after having comprehended the same earlier. So, there was an absolute need for an expert to comprehend their sword skills to as far as they could go until reaching the epitome of sword arts.

Although the black-robed powerhouse's rippling Swordqi was strong, it was still only Swordqi.

Many people saw the sword intention in Ye Xiwen's hand and were immediately vigilant of him. This Ye Xiwen was certainly not

an ordinary expert. But they actually did not know that he could congeal sword intention because he learned it from watching a tyrannical old sword master use the same attack. That sword master's sword skills were really out of this world. Ye Xiwen had managed to just deconstruct a part of the ideal condition he saw back then which made him able to achieve his current sword intention attack. Regarding uniting a part of the soul into the sword intention was simply not possible for him to achieve at his current level. In fact, he did not even know the level requirement for that type of accomplishment.

At this instant, his sword intention penetrated straight through tough dragon scales, further penetrating into its flesh. This caused its blood to splash out as it roared out uncomfortably in pain. Ye Xiwen managed to score one effective attack against this dragon and opened the first wound on its body.

The experts saw Ye Xiwen in action and finally understood that even though this dragon was very difficult to deal with, it was not impossible to slay it. In fact, even if they were individually not its opponent but by joining forces, they could still cherish the hope of making this dragon learn the meaning of pain and hatred.

Suddenly everyone was greatly encouraged, and with a boosted morale, they bellowed and rushed toward the dragon in abundance.

“Roar!” The dragon suddenly received a barrage of attacks from several experts, including the top players’ of the younger generation. It suddenly started roaring and its roars were so tyrannical that it seemed as if space itself would collapse, the earth

was moving and a cluster of dark clouds had started to gather up in the sky. Within the thick layers of dense clouds, one could see the shadow of a seemingly endless thunder dragon seething with excitement.

According to the legend, the dragons had the ability to control the forces of nature and a flood dragon would do well in the department of water manipulation and weather control. With the world's imperial symbol, a flood dragon had a considerable amount of abilities that were attributed to the mythical dragons mentioned in the fables.

In a blink of an eye, heavy rain started pouring down in the form of torrential rains while each and every drop turned into ice and hailed upon the experts. Numerous electric dragons were lurking in the clouds and penetrating through the layers of ice to strike the people underneath.

This flood dragon's magical powers were just ridiculously strong!

These hailstones and electric dragons were aiming for the experts and hacking them down relentlessly but Ye Xiwen simply disregarded them entirely. Tianyuan mirror was floating above his head and protecting him from those attacks. Not even a hint of these attacks was able to reach his body.

In fact, before crossing the heavenly tribulation, he might have been worried about such a large-scale attack. But right now, they did not pose any threat to him.

“Clang!” He immediately issued the sword intention attack which instantly burst into a terrifying golden beam of Swordlight and directly crashed into the flood dragon’s scales. The mind-blowing explosion set off raging ties of boundless energy in all direction.

“Kaca!” The scales within a radius of several meters couldn’t sustain the impact of Ye Xiwen’s sword intention and instantly disintegrated, turning into powder, followed by the sword intention condensing into a long sword and piercing all the way into the flesh of the flood dragon.

“Puchi!” It’s blood splattered out like a fountain of water.

Ye Xiwen’s body immediately released a golden light that went forth and immediately enclosed the young dragon’s blood, then brought it back to be absorbed by the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag. Almost in an instant, the flag array shook vigorously and horrifying rays of light exploded out of it. The greeting from dragon blood had such a reaction, even Ye Xiwen barely managed to stop the souls of deepwater black serpents from flying out of the flag array. It seemed like they were really excited and all set to make trouble. Fortunately, he quickly pinned them down inside the flag array and stopped them from popping out.

“Haha, this is really useful, Ye Xiwen! The metaphysics of this baby flood dragon is absolutely useful for the evolution of Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array.” Ye Mo said with a smile, “This baby dragon comes from the true blood species of dragons, and is certainly not like that deepwater black serpent king who was going to transform into a flood dragon after stepping into



the legendary realm. This baby flood dragon has such a large body and has the blood of a true dragon flowing in its veins. Its blood and essence should be more than enough to make all your deepwater black serpents evolve into legendary level flood dragons.”

“En!” Ye Xiwen nodded.

The flood dragon felt an intense piercing pain and immediately moved its sierra-like tail across the expansive sky, pumping out whistling winds everywhere. The fast moving tail left behind a vacuum in its path and the experts that were planning the siege from behind had no time to escape. Consequently, they lost their lives in a flash.

The display of such inhuman force scared off several experts and they pulled out immediately after witnessing the death of several of their own.

Ye Xiwen also did not dare to be negligent. Although this was only a young flood dragon that was at the peak of legendary third stage but considering its origin, powerful body and inexplicable magical powers, it could easily contend with the experts of legendary fourth stage.

Ye Xiwen moved his footsteps and his body got wrapped in golden clothes, along with a pair of devil wings which appeared behind him. In a blink of an eye, he disappeared from the spot in a golden flash of light and then appeared several meters away, avoiding the flood dragon’s attack quite effortlessly.

Even if this young flood dragon was under large scale siege, its terror was still incomparable. However, almost immediately, others immediately filled the lacking position of Ye Xiwen in the fight and engaged the dragon. Right now, not everyone wanted to fight with the dragon but if they did not kill it now, they were probably going to die.

This was a 'You die or I die' kind of battle and everyone was putting their lives on the line at the moment.

Without a hint of hesitation, Ye Xiwen immediately re-invested himself into the battle and started attacking the young flood dragon.

It seemed as if everyone had gone crazy, whether it was for the young flood dragon or the dragon essence, their bloodshot eyes were fixated on their targets and in any event, the young flood dragon was a common obstacle for all, a barrier that needed to be eradicated at the earliest.

The dragon was surrounded by a huge crowd of experts and was being constantly miserably battered, leaving it with no way to break out of the tight encirclement. Each time it tried to break out, that resulted in the death of an expert. It was a peerless yet ominous beast with extremely terrifying strength.

However, even though this flood dragon was very powerful, it still couldn't contend with so many of top tier powerhouses, including an expert like Ye Xiwen who would be considered

outstanding among human experts. There were many top players of the younger generation with each having their own inheritance of terror, and at this time, all of them joined forces to take that young flood dragon down. Its power began to exhaust slowly and there were patches of blood stains all over its body. It was losing more and more blood, even one of its legs was almost cut down by that black-robed mysterious powerhouse.

At this time, the young dragon was [gasping heavily like an ox](#) while both of its eyes were red. Everyone was kind of happy in their heart as they knew that this baby dragon [had reached its exhausted state](#) and was only drawing its last breaths.

气喘如牛 qì chuǎn rú niú: to breathe heavily like an ox ; to huff and puff

强弩之末 qiáng nǔ zhī mò: lit. an arrow at the end of its flight ; fig. spent force

“Boom!” Ye Xiwen summoned the Hanshan seal that transformed into a huge mountain range and directly smashed down upon the flood dragon with the contained force of hundreds of millions of units. The flood dragon couldn’t resist the impact and was directly pounded onto the ground.

It opened its big mouth and spouted pure dragon blood.

“Die!” After shooting a shaking sword intention up into the sky, Ye Xiwen opened the devil wings behind his back and immediately flew towards the flood dragon. Then he arrived right above the dragon’s head; a sword intention instantly blossomed in a flash

with a burst of wind and was issued toward the young dragon's head. The collision left the scales on its head in a completely shattered state.

“Boom!” With the loud sound of an explosion, the sword intention pierced the flood dragon's head.

# Chapter 310: Battle With The Fifth God

---

## Battle with the fifth god

The young flood dragon's body started twitching frantically as its entire brain was churned and minced by Ye Xiwen's sword intention attack; even its soul was annihilated in the process. It finally stopped moving anymore and left this world.

"This dragon essence belongs to the Army of God! Encircle it!" The fifth god shouted loudly, and just like a thoroughly rehearsed army answering to a great general's command, the Army of God huddled in a fence around the dragon essence.

The fifth god's figure rushed towards the dragon essence just like a fine strand of rainbow light in the sky so as to take it in his grasp.

"The dragon essence belongs to this old man!" The old patron saint sneered and immediately broke through the encirclement of the Army of God. He sent many of the army members flying, while several of them had their bones directly crushed. They just couldn't stop the old patron saint. And those who actually tried, lost their lives.

"Boom!" A big hand made its way toward the dragon essence to seize it.

"You dare to snatch my dragon essence!" The fifth god thundered angrily, the long halberd in his hands all of a sudden sparkled and released bright rays of light that resembled stars in the night sky.

Just like a wicked dragon, it immediately flew toward the old man's big hand to block it.

His cultivation had recently reached the second stage of half-step legendary realm and the resulting outcome of that was completely apparent to all. His tyrannical power caused the space in front of him to collapse, disintegrating into the chaos on the other side.

“Bang!” With a loud noise that sounded like the collision between gold and iron, the long halberd tore its way into the big hand, making huge amounts of Lingqi to leak out crazily and overflow everywhere.

A startling rainbow colored Sky Sword flashed in the sky. Actually the black-robed powerhouse was attempting to nab the dragon essence like every other powerhouse on the scene.

“Humph!” Jin young master also rushed in and unleashed the wrath of ‘the fan of mountains and rivers’.

Several hidden experts of the older generation with many having a profound cultivation of legendary second stage, also rushed over to snatch the dragon essence. In fact, some of them had deeper cultivation than that of Hu Meiniang et al.

Also, there were many people who knew that they didn't have a chance to obtain the dragon essence instead they were interested in seizing the young flood dragon's corpse. They suddenly rushed toward the dragon corpse but were startled to find a figure approaching faster. All of a sudden, a huge golden hand congealed

out of nowhere and grasped that flood dragon's corpse in one go. Yes, it was Ye Xiwen who successfully captured the dragon corpse. He tactically chose to go after the dragon corpse before dragon essence because with so many top players in the battlefield, competing over dragon essence, it was certainly going to take a long time to reach the final outcome. So might as well just going for the dragon corpse now and joining the fray later on was preferably in its last phase.

Right after the young flood dragon's corpse was received into the Tianyuan mirror, it immediately began to dismember the huge and extract massive amounts of its essence to be fed to the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag.

"Listen everyone, let's kill Ye Xiwen and recapture the young flood dragon's corpse!" At this time, an expert mustered his strength and raised his voice from the crowd without knowing whether he would be successful in provoking the crowd's mood against Ye Xiwen.

"Yes ah, Ye Xiwen, you alone cannot keep an entire dragon corpse, you're just being too greedy!" A warrior said indignantly.

"I was the first to snatch it, so naturally it is mine! What did you all expect? I killed the dragon hence I get to keep its corpse." Ye Xiwen smiled coldly as he said that. The young dragon's corpse was of great significance to him, like hell he would hand it over to anyone. They would have to give up the idea altogether.

"Come on, let's kill him already. Just think, not only can we recapture the young flood dragon's corpse from him but can also

get his secret treasures. Henceforth, everything will go soaring up for us!” A sharp voice sounded from the crowd but no one knew who proposed that.

However, even before his voice fell, Ye Xiwen snorted and a shaking Swordqi condensed high up in the sky and fell down upon the crowd of experts.

“Boom!” The target of this Swordqi attack was an expert, who was at the first stage of half-step legendary realm and right now was hidden in the crowd. However, he still couldn’t prevent his body from getting penetrated by the Swordqi as it nailed him directly to the ground.

“Have the ability and guts to stand up and say it to my face!” Ye Xiwen clamored in a calm yet cold voice. He was paying attention to the source of the voice that was trying to stir up the crowd against Ye Xiwen. Of course, if all these people were instigated to attack Ye Xiwen then the situation might go out of hand.

The people were speechless, looking at each other, not sure about what just happened. A moment ago, someone said something from the crowd but no one expected that he would be killed by Ye Xiwen so promptly. Some experts recognized that he was an expert with the cultivation level of half-step legendary realm’s first stage and could be counted among the strongest experts present in the crowd. Even so, he was crucified by Ye Xiwen’s sword. Ye Xiwen’s power had simply gone beyond their imagination.

They were not stupid, it was just that they did not know how they got incited a moment ago into thinking that they could take



down Ye Xiwen. But now they were also saving their thoughts, the so-called 'law does not punish numerous offenders'. If everyone joined forces and together attacked Ye Xiwen then there might have been a chance of forcing Ye Xiwen to hand over the dragon corpse. However, it took him just one sword strike to cut down all their thoughts and intentions.

When an expert of half-step legendary first stage could not stand a chance against Ye Xiwen and his sword, there was no way someone else would dare to rush toward the absolute demise.

The crowd was neither moving forward nor was it retreating. Everyone wanted to have one person to take the lead but no one wanted to be that leader, no one was willing to stand out and challenge the possibility of taking the fall for all. The fate of that previous warrior was for all to see. Indeed, Ye Xiwen might not be able to kill them all but he would certainly kill off all the leading ones quite effortlessly.

Fortunately, the status quo between them and Ye Xiwen didn't go for long and before it might take a turn for the worse, all of a sudden, from the side of the battlefield where contention over the dragon essence was going on, a big golden hand rose up, blotting out the sky, directly went toward Ye Xiwen.

"Humph, Ye Xiwen!" The fifth god roared as he rushed across the expansive sky, all the way toward Ye Xiwen while holding his halberd upright. Each of his steps was opening void in the space and wild magical power was surging everywhere. People who watched this felt as if they were looking at the reincarnation of some ancient god.

He was just too fast, almost instantaneously, he arrived in front of Ye Xiwen, pulling a long shadow behind him.

His golden colored Zhen Yuan was surging and boiling around him. His power level was also seething and had already reached the peak. His presence truly resembled that of a brave general.

“Ye Xiwen, time to die!” The fifth god said in an ice-cold voice. It seemed as if the halberd in his hands was about to break the world itself, bringing about the rebirth of chaos in this world as it punctured forward to stab Ye Xiwen. It was truly a frightening scene.

Ye Xiwen directly withdrew from the current spot he was at, then thundered loudly and quickly put on his divine golden clothing, releasing waves of qi in all directions, as if to sweep away the universe. Layer after layer of formidable golden divinities was surging everywhere and appearing like a golden tide. Amidst all this, Ye Xiwen released an earthshaking Bladeqi and swept it away.

At this moment, he went all out so as to not [leave any margin for error](#).

留余地 liú yú dì: to leave room to maneuver; to leave a margin for error

“Boom!” The long halberd and the long blade’s tip collided with each other. It seemed like the sudden formation of Mahjong tiles which was a result of an instant rupturing of the surrounding

space as it crumbled down into a landslide of fragments.

The entire space just exploded in the end.

The experts suddenly looked at Ye Xiwen with incomparable amazement. Only a while ago, they were planning to snatch the dragon's corpse away from him but what they just saw made them feel helpless. The fifth god's power was enough to sweep away everything in front of Ye Xiwen but still couldn't make him budge at all.

The fifth god's pupils suddenly contracted as his complexion turned pale. He was confident that after having stepped into the second stage of half-step legendary realm, he would have more than enough power to beat Ye Xiwen. He never expected for Ye Xiwen to have grown so strong, perhaps even stronger than him.

"Ye Xiwen, I will end your life today." The fifth god immediately resumed his calm. His facial expression turned ice-cold as he stared at Ye Xiwen with his knife-like sharp gaze. The long halberd moved in his hands and shot a black colored light straight toward him.

"Boom!" The long halberd set off boundless coercion, as if piercing the void itself, and then released a murderous aura that went across the sky, all the way toward Ye Xiwen.

Without a bit of hesitation, Ye Xiwen took a step, immediately a burst of golden divinities seeped out of his body and swept out like a dreadful golden tide. It seemed as if the long blade in his hand

was roaring like a golden dragon.

“Boom!” This battle was shaking the heaven and earth, the explosions were collapsing the surrounding space and the waves of killing intention was sweeping everywhere in the sky. In fact, a huge space had already collapsed under the aftermath of collisions between their attacks.

This was a terrifying matchup, several experts felt amazed while watching this battle. Even though they were at the same level, they still weren't a match for those two.

“Ye Xiwen, drop dead!” The fifth god tightly clenched his steel-like teeth and thundered out these words from his throat. His long halberd went toward Ye Xiwen, striking again with an unparalleled black light.

“If you are only at such level, then today, even if the Great Golden Immortal descends to this world, he cannot save you!” Ye Xiwen shouted loudly and his long blade shot an even larger Bladelight toward the incoming attack. This time, he didn't restrain himself and went all out, instantly issuing an exceptionally fearful attack.

“Shua!” The halberd and blade attacks intersected, leading to the horrifying ripples of terror which proliferated from those sophisticated weapons and spread out, sweeping the surrounding region, as if even the vacuum was crushed as a result. The dreadful explosion set off layer after layer of energy waves in all directions.

“Boom!” The fifth god only felt a terrifying power boiling and making its way through his long halberd before invading his hands.

“Bang!” The halberd was in the both hands of the fifth god before his hands fell prey to Ye Xiwen’s terrifying attack. Blood began to gush out of his hands, revealing cracks and bones through the open wounds.

“How is this possible?” With an incredible look in his eyes, the fifth god found it extremely hard to believe what just happened. One must know that a month ago, in his battle with Ye Xiwen, he clearly had an upper hand in the battle. But in such a short period of time, only after a month’s time, the tables actually turned in Ye Xiwen’s favor. Ye Xiwen not just caught up to him but actually surpassed him.

This was simply hard to believe, just like a miracle. One must know that although the fifth god had recently reached the second stage of half-step legendary realm and was actually like a newbie on the new stage, he could easily defeat a majority of the senior experts of the same level.

“During the blow just now, if I am not mistaken, didn’t it appear like the fifth god actually fell under the wind?”

“Good gracious! This is insane! Only a month ago, the fifth god clearly had an upper hand but now he appears to be losing. How is this even possible?”

At this time, several warriors were discussing among themselves, finding it very hard to believe that the illustrious fifth god was being forced down to a disadvantageous position.

“How dare you hurt me, die!” The fifth god bellowed and his halberd rumbled once again. The wound on his hands did not seem to hinder his pace at all as he almost instantaneously arrived in front of Ye Xiwen once again.

“The End!” Ye Xiwen said indifferently and struck with his long blade, seemingly delimiting the trajectory of a meteor falling from the sky.

# Chapter 311: The Fifth God Slaughtered

---

The forces of Destruction Army, Jin young master et al, were stationed nearby. Although they also wanted to see the end result of this battle, they couldn't put down the contention over dragon essence. They did not have the time and luxury to witness someone else's battle.

A cold blade-tip swept through the golden divinities and cut across all the way, releasing a burst of golden light everywhere in the sky and cracking open voids at several spots. The chaos was visible on the other side of the cracks.

“Boom!” This collision was comparatively much more terrifying than the earlier one. The fifth god rushed toward Ye Xiwen, just like an ancient god carrying an unusually dreadful power with him which appeared to be divine in nature.

Their bodies were glittering and it seemed as if two golden statues of ancient gods had suddenly come to life and gotten engaged in a crazy battle.

“Bang!” A dreadful force ran through the halberd and penetrated into the fifth god's body, instantly rupturing his flesh and churning his blood. His huge body was sent flying horizontally all the way before maliciously crashing into a mountain peak.

Everyone was dumbfounded as the battlefield had been divided into two parts. One part of the battlefield was hosting the life and death battle between Ye Xiwen and the fifth god while the other

part was witnessing a fierce competition among Jin young master as well as some profound elusive experts with profound cultivations. Interestingly, each of them was competing only for the dragon essence.

Although there were a lot of experts on the other side having intense fights with each other, the battle between Ye Xiwen and the fifth god was genuinely tragic. These two were ruthless, merciless and simply did not give any value to each other's existence.

Especially the fifth god who was accustomed to being domineering and tyrannical, but this was the first time he completely fell under the wind. Moreover, among all the battles he had with peers of his age and level, this was an unprecedented one.

After all, not even a few of them were able to push him back to such an extent, let alone a kid like Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen did not hesitate, simply rushed forward while towing his long blade, step by step across the sky. It seemed as if the size of the sky was shrinking inch by inch in his presence. As his glistening figure flickered once, almost in a breath's time, he caught up with the fifth god. The long blade transformed into a long dragon and its cold cutting edge swept down directly upon the enemy.

The fifth god suddenly opened his eyes. His gaze was like a blade, chilling and quite scary. Once again he shot by channeling a surge of killing intention through his long halberd, all the way toward Ye Xiwen.



“Shua!” Ye Xiwen raised his long blade to block the incoming attack.

“Boom!” Ye Xiwen stood firmly where he originally was but the space around him collapsed immediately under the impact of this horrifying attack.

The long halberd broke the universe!

The fifth god also took advantage of this opportunity to catch Ye Xiwen off guard. He was breathing heavily as he clenched his teeth while his face showing the appearance of a god that was ready to kill. Intermittent rays of golden light were twinkling through his body. Even one could clearly see a bunch of quaint illegible text flashing within his body and slowly combining together to form an ancient scripture.

“It’s an incomplete ancient scripture!” Ye Mo exclaimed loudly, “No wonder they dare to call themselves the Army of God. It turns out that they really have obtained a part of god’s inheritance!”

“Ancient scripture? What is that?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“There is a detached part of the universe, aloof from life and death. It is said that six fearful powerhouses jumped out of there. They claimed to be gods and some of them left behind ancient scriptures. These scriptures are the essence of their spiritual life as they have recorded the entirety of their perception of the universe, along with all sorts of magical spells and whatnot. Each time an

ancient scripture makes an appearance, it causes bloody battles.” Ye Mo explained, “This fifth god had possibly obtained one page of an ancient scripture. No wonder he is tough, fierce and so hard to deal with.”

Gods are actually considered as taboo in Zhen Wu Jie. No one knows whether such a creature really exists or is just a myth. However, whether it’s a legend or not is not entirely hidden from Ye Xiwen because he is exposed to a little something about gods. He can say for sure that gods are truly frightening creatures. Some demon beasts that seemed to have the blood of god flowing in their veins were much more powerful than ordinary demon beasts.

No wonder even a single page of an Ancient God Scripture was enough to create an earth-shattering powerhouse like the fifth god.

“Ye Xiwen, this is a big opportunity, ha ha ha ha!” Ye Mo shouted, “So what if he only has one page, it is still priceless. You will simply be unable to estimate its value no matter how much you try. You know, it is said that the gods had taught their ancient secrets to only a handful of confidants and disciples. Unless a powerhouse like that falls from the sky, there is no way to obtain such a priceless treasure. You should consider yourself extremely lucky if you manage to obtain even a single page of an Ancient God Scripture.”

“Snatch it away before anyone else does. Others simply have no way to bring out the real value of this page, but if it falls into your hands, then it’s a different case altogether. You will be able to parse out massive amounts of information about the Ancient God Scripture inside your mysterious space which would bring

immeasurable benefits to your future cultivation.”

Ye Mo and Ye Xiwen had been together for so long, so naturally Ye Mo was aware of the existence of the mysterious space because Tianyuan mirror was now owned by Ye Xiwen. Hence, the tool spirit of the mirror just couldn't betray his master. Now, Ye Mo was like a confidant to him and knew almost everything about Ye Xiwen apart from the fact that he had come from the Earth.

The fifth god's back was burning with bursts of energy and each illegible character floating behind him contained the essence of true Dao. A unit of golden light fell upon his body and gradually healed his injuries.

However, the fifth god's complexion turned even more unsightly as he realized that the ancient page in his hand couldn't be used easily. Right now, he had actually been compelled by Ye Xiwen to bring it out and use it to defend himself, however, he could clearly feel the greedy looks centering upon him from all sides. He could sense the burst of joy popping in the hearts of almost all experts present on the scene, with their eyes brimming with greed. Of course, this outcome was perfectly conceivable. Even if he managed to kill Ye Xiwen, the news about this ancient page would still attract numerous experts towards him.

Let alone the members of Destruction Army, Jin young master and the others whose burning hot gazes seemed extremely scary. Even an ordinary expert would be more than able to understand the preciousness of an Ancient God Scripture. Even if there was only one page, it would still be considered as a priceless treasure.

No one could say for sure that gods really existed in this world, but there were a lot of people who believed that when someone kept on progressing and arrived all the way at the level of gods, they could acquire immortality and live forever. This was the so-called interpretation of god in the hearts of a vast majority of genius experts.

The gods are not indifferent; they do not govern myriad types of things under the sun. In the heart of an expert, the god is a super-strong and absolute being and anything he leaves behind is a priceless treasure, even a standalone page from an Ancient God Scripture is not an exception to that.

Its value is inestimable, even more than the value of the dragon marrow because its effects are anyway going to be for a while, but one page from an Ancient God Scripture, once perceived through meditation, would help one in achieving much greater benefits which would stay for a lifetime.

“Ye Xiwen, prepare yourself to die!” Said the fifth god as these words jumped out through the gaps between his teeth. His facial expression became more and more ferocious. No matter what kind of trouble he would have to face in the future, right now, the biggest problem for him was that Ye Xiwen. Hence he vowed to himself that he would definitely kill him.

The fifth god’s head was glowing brightly with the influence of Ancient God Scripture, sweeping away one after another. His state was restored to the pinnacle, his vitality was brimming as it seemed like his long halberd was applying horizontal compression on the sky, breaking the surrounding space and creating openings

to the chaos. All of this was aimed at Ye Xiwen along with the surge of God's coercion that also swept toward him while shaking the entire world in the process.

Ye Xiwen was calm and completely fearless. The long blade in his hand bloomed into a terrifying Bladelight; his golden clothes also released bursts of golden light that obscured half of the sky as the ice-cold tip of his blade cut horizontally toward the incoming attack.

“Bang!” The tips of the blade and the halberd had a fierce collision in midair, leading to a gorgeous explosion that swept away as many things as possible in the range and opened cracks in the surrounding space.

There was no comparison between the power displayed by the fifth god just now and what had been showing all this time. This was the effect of the page from an Ancient God Scripture which was also his trump card. Once used, there was no turning back.

A frightening force swept over to the side of the fifth god. That one page of Ancient God Scripture began to emit intermittent sounds of the chanting of ancient sutras from behind him. It was hard to tell how many eras had passed since the power of this ancient sutra chanting had been sealed inside that page, so as to block it from leaking outside.

As the raging storm of energy rushed past Ye Xiwen's body, his golden clothes danced crazily in the stormy winds.

Even while facing the sudden insanely strong rise in the fifth god's power, Ye Xiwen's complexion remained unchanged. He just lightly said: "Your only option is to break through to the third stage of half-step legendary realm right now, or you shall die without a doubt. I will guarantee you that much."

So long as one was not a complete fool, one could clearly sense a burning killing intention in the fifth god's heart. In fact, the fifth god never harbored a small killing intention toward his enemies because weeding out an enemy had been his principle all along.

Everyone was aghast with a sudden strike of amazement that took them off guard. Just now, they saw the power of the fifth god but they just couldn't comprehend as to what exactly was emboldening Ye Xiwen to the extent that he openly threatened the fifth god with no hesitation whatsoever? Of course, he also seemed to have enough power to defeat the fifth god.

Many experts were looking at Ye Xiwen!

"Such audacity!" The fifth god said with a sneer. He naturally did not dare to look down on Ye Xiwen anymore and had to put away his usual stance of overlooking all living things in front of him. However, he still could not come to terms with himself and felt like he might be able to kill Ye Xiwen. No wonder he was offering a sacrifice by resorting to using all his might and secrets in order to defeat Ye Xiwen.

"Die!" The fifth god shouted angrily, grasped the long halberd and rushed forward while sweeping away the overflowing godly might along with him. One could see a type of simple and

unadorned aura, somewhat ancient in nature, being increasingly released by the Ancient God Scripture behind his body.

It was really like looking at a god. He went toward Ye Xiwen while leaving behind a trail of chaos. His black halberd appeared just like a black flood dragon when it roared loudly and soared into the sky from the abyss.

“Today, I will let you know what disparity of strength truly means!” Ye Xiwen sneered and immediately used the long blade in his hand to release a Bladelight as bright as the stars which instantly dazzled the entire sky. It seemed as if Ye Xiwen was holding the entire horizon in his hand as his long blade.

“Bang!”

With a horrifying sound of the collision, Ye Xiwen and the fifth god severely crashed into each other. The page of Ancient God Scripture also collided severely with Ye Xiwen’s golden divinities and the impact caused the space avalanche in the surrounding region, exposing the jet black turbulence on the other side.

It was like a battle between two gods and the scene was simply spectacular. Ye Xiwen’s Bladeqi contained an irresistible force and it cut off the fifth god’s golden light right away.

The golden light dispersed. Figures of the two godlike warriors crisscrossed then staggered apart from each other as the fifth god’s body suddenly made a ‘Puchi’ sound and blood came gushing out. His tall body had been cut into two halves, slantingly downward all

the way from the shoulder. There was an utter look of disbelief on his face. He just could not believe that he was defeated so easily in a blink of an eye.

But all of a sudden, a big hand descended from the sky and attempted to grasp the fifth god's corpse in midair.



# Chapter 312: Dragon Essence Is Captured

---

Then, abruptly, a big hand, which was made up of qi, descended from the sky and attempted to grasp the fifth god's body.

In order to grab the fifth god's corpse, suddenly the old patron saint rushed out of the competition going on over the dragon essence.

Originally, the fifth god's corpse shouldn't have been so important to fight over but it happened to contain one page of an Ancient God Scripture. The old patron saint wanted to capture the fifth god's corpse before anyone else and use the ancient knowledge contained in it to enhance his own martial art practice.

It would take time because that entire page had already been refined by the fifth god and its essence was located inside his corpse.

“Do you want to die?” Ye Xiwen instantly waved his long blade toward that big hand, which was extending toward the fifth god's corpse, and the next instant it extinguished after chopping it off.

“Ye Xiwen, you've already swallowed the flood dragon's corpse and now you also want to seize the page of an Ancient God Scripture?” The old patron saint looked coldly at Ye Xiwen and said. There was a look of greed clearly visible on his face.

Even a page from an Ancient Scripture was enough to make anyone excited.

“Yes, it’s mine! If you really want to die, then come on and fight me.” Ye Xiwen sneered.

He already struggled hard in a life or death kind of battle with the fifth god and once it was all over with his victory, that old patron saint wanted to meddle in and reap the benefits as a third party. He would certainly not allow that to happen so easily!

Ye Xiwen’s eyes seemed even deeper and much profound as if the birth and death of the universe itself were repetitively taking place in the depths of his eyes.

“Hand over the ancient scripture to me and we Jinyi Guards will guarantee your safety during your stay in the Ming Empire!” Jin young master also appeared at this time and said while completely ignoring the ongoing fight over the dragon essence. Although the dragon essence was precious as well but if compared with a page of Ancient God Scripture, it was actually not so important. Forget about the experts of legendary realm, even the Sage level experts would go crazy for something like that.

The Jinyi Guards, the black-robed powerhouse as well as those elusive powerhouses of the older generation were staring at Ye Xiwen. The value of ancient scripture was simply inestimable and it was now inside the corpse of the fifth god. The one who would capture the corpse would also get a hold of that page. Moreover, there was a possibility that one might also manage to sense the rest of the ancient scripture by using that one page as the first step.

“When did Jinyi Guards start doing the work of bodyguard for random strangers?” Ye Xiwen sneered and said while making it very clear to everyone that he had his own aspirations regarding this page and nothing could convince him to give it up that easily.

“Humph, you sure do know how to talk big, young man. However, you must know that sometimes, it is best for your own good to act humbly and listen to your seniors.” At this time, an old man with profound cultivation stood up and said with a sneer, “Today I will teach you how to be respectful toward your seniors.”

The old man sneered again and blasted his fist, wielding the might of some type of terrifying boxing technique, all the way toward Ye Xiwen. The fist pressure swept over like a mighty ocean wave toward Ye Xiwen, as if to suppress the eternal domain with indomitable might.

“Old fogey, you alone dare to challenge me?” Ye Xiwen sneered and slashed with his long blade, releasing a radiant Bladelight that darted off in all directions along with a burst of deafening sharp sound. The Bladelight instantly flew toward the incoming fist pressure from multiple directions.

“Puchi!” His Bladelight annihilated the fist pressure in a flash by instantly cutting it into two halves. But then it didn’t stop there, instead went forward and directly crashed into the old man’s body.

“Puchi!” That old man was caught off guard and was instantly cut in half.

“Who else wants to try his luck? Come out right now!” Ye Xiwen said as he cast his ice-cold gaze skimming through the crowd.

Everyone was suddenly spellbound and had their minds blown away. They recalled how the fifth god, an expert at the second stage of half-step legendary realm, was unable to deal with Ye Xiwen’s tyrannical power. He just never stood a chance against Ye Xiwen, not to mention several experts were directly slaughtered by him. No one was able to push Ye Xiwen into the disadvantageous situation throughout the course of battles so far in this small world. In fact, no one was able to occupy the winning side, even for a short time, while fighting with Ye Xiwen.

The fifth god struggled for some time until he was finally killed by Ye Xiwen, which made them all aghast with amazement. Although they very much wanted to obtain the page of ancient scripture from Ye Xiwen, they didn’t have the confidence to face Ye Xiwen. Hence, they immediately retreated at the first sight of him. If they couldn’t face Ye Xiwen, then might as well just feign ignorance.

The experts were like they couldn’t do anything about it anyway and began to hesitantly join the competition over the dragon essence. The dragon essence just laid like a dragon’s corpse in the sky with a unit of terrifying attraction force originating from it and was increasingly pulling them toward the corpse.

Ye Xiwen also immediately joined the competition. With a flash of golden light, a big golden hand extended toward the dragon essence.

“Ye Xiwen, you’ve already obtained so much but you are still eyeing dragon essence?” Jin young master said in a discontented manner

“What a joke, don’t tell me that you think of this as some kind of fair treasure hunt where everyone gets a share from the treasure trove? Something like one treasure per person? Remember, only those who are capable get to keep the heavenly treasures! Others simply keep on waiting and just watch from the sidelines.” Ye Xiwen sneered and simply didn’t pay any attention to Jin young master’s words.

Jin young master’s complexion immediately turned unsightly. He secretly vowed in his heart that he would make Ye Xiwen go through hell. After exiting this small world, he would mobilize Jinyi Guards from all over the Ming Empire to make sure that Ye Xiwen would be [meeting a tragic end](#) no matter what.

死无葬身之地 sǐ wú zàng shēn zhī dì: to die without a burial site; to die a pauper; a tragic end

How could Ye Xiwen not know what Jin young master was thinking at the moment? Just by looking at his mutated facial expression, Ye Xiwen understood that he was planning to take revenge. However, he was not at all bothered because of a simple reason – there was a large crowd present in the vicinity and some of them were bound to publicize this matter as soon as they would go out. Hence, he was already prepared to face the imminent crisis and all sorts of problems and stress that were soon going to come his way. In fact, he was prepared to be chased down as well, so adding Jinyi Guards to all this mess would actually make no

significant difference either.

However, he knew that there was nothing to solve this issue unless he could kill everyone, or else, there was literally no visible way to avoid the disclosure of news. Therefore, he was not planning to let go of the dragon essence because his only option was to do all he could to upgrade his own strength in an attempt to increase the possibility of his survival in the upcoming series of crisis.

The top players and their respective groups simultaneously launched their attacks, concentrating their combined powers onto the dragon essence. Although it was shaped as a dragon, it wasn't a real dragon. If it was a real dragon, then it would be impossible to break its defense with this level of attacks.

“Boom!” There resounded a terrifying sound of an explosion and the entire dragon essence shattered into pieces and spread throughout the sky.

Without any hesitation, Ye Xiwen took out his Tianyuan mirror and sent it out, capturing the dragon essence's figurehead which was located at its front end. At this time, other experts also went into action with the intention to not skip even a shred of dragon essence, capturing a piece after another with each of them grabbing their favorite piece. Ye Xiwen went in for another attempt to grab a piece, but by this time, there wasn't much left of the dragon essence's pieces. There were only a few pieces remaining and Ye Xiwen instantly attempted to grasp the last remaining piece.

“Boom!” Two big hands instantly collided in the sky. Both the Destruction Army and Ye Xiwen had spotted the same piece and tried to grab it at the exact same instant. However, they ended up rendering each other’s attempt in vain. Meanwhile, taking advantage of this situation, other experts extended their big hands to grasp that piece of dragon essence.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen snorted and swept out the Bladelight that immediately chopped down all those big hands in midair and caused them to explode. That last piece of dragon essence finally ended up in Ye Xiwen’s pocket.

The masters felt their complexions turning pale by Ye Xiwen’s attack but they did not continue to get involved, after all, Ye Xiwen’s tyrannical power had been fully reflected while neutralizing their collaboration attack. Not to mention the way he seized that last piece just now clearly revealed his insane strength. Moreover, they were more or less satisfied right now as all of them had managed to obtain at least one piece of dragon essence, with some of them obtaining over two pieces as well.

When everything was over, the experts did not stay there any longer and immediately left the scene in abundance.

---

Half a month later, in the depths of the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction.....

The entire ruins of Wang Heavenly faction, as a result of losing

the dragon essence, had mostly dried up in absence of nourishment from spiritual arteries. So the entire environment was very harsh, filled with sandstorms everywhere, almost to the point of exaggeration. One could see that even the experts of truth realm would be torn in half directly in this kind of harsh environment.

The deeper they went in, these sandstorms continued to get more and more terrifying. But most importantly, it was very difficult for human experts to roam about in this environment because there were some hidden demon beasts that were already accustomed to such an environment after millions of years of evolution. In fact, it seemed like these storms were somehow related to those demon beasts. The region ravaged by these sandstorms had become the lair of demon beast and they had even formed a kingdom inside these giant storms. Countless demon beasts were thriving inside this demon beast kingdom.

As Ye Xiwen and his team ventured deeper, they found such storms getting more and more tyrannical with a lot of turbulence in the atmosphere.

They arrived in front of such a giant sandstorm which was about ten thousand meters high and several kilometers in diameter. It simply looked like a giant war-fortress that was targeting to sweep away all the enemies.

Ye Xiwen blazed with anger as soon as he saw many demon beasts lurking in this sandstorm.

The sandstorm was huge yet incredibly quick. Almost in a flash, it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. The first ones to rush over were a



type of sand type demon beasts. Their bodies were wrapped in layer upon layer of sand and each of them was at least at Complete Truth realm. They were working jointly to fire sand columns which then condensed together into a huge sand column and seemed to have tremendous power of impact, enough to move the mountains.

Ye Xiwen moved his palm and immediately blasted out a mysterious coiling dragon that soared out from the depths of the abyss. It faced upwards while roaring loudly and the huge sand column was instantly torn open. Even though some sand beasts were at half-step legendary realm, they were instantly blasted away. Some were killed while some of them were severely wounded. But who was Ye Xiwen? He was an expert that had already reached the peak of half-step legendary realm and his combat power was sufficient to defeat the experts of half-step legendary's second stage or even those at the third stage. There was no suspense in how his coiling dragon was able to tear that sand column apart.

# Chapter 313: Dragon Tomb

---

The wolf cub directly rushed forward and started an unscrupulous killing spree.

The Mo siblings weren't as fierce as the wolf cub, so they just stuck to killing the sand beasts on the periphery.

Ye Xiwen was also bombarding those sand beasts one after another with unceasing attacks without the slightest pause in between. Frankly speaking, those sand beasts weren't his opponent at all. Whenever a sand beast was killed by him, its essence and blood would be completely absorbed by him and instilled into the mysterious space.

Inside the [mysterious space](#), that one page of Ancient God Scriptures suddenly blossomed into unusually bright rays of light. The mysterious space was constantly deconstructing a variety of ancient heavenly avenues; even a single page of ancient scriptures contained a lot of characters with each having the essence of Dao. After all, these were the scriptures left behind by the legendary gods.

The mysterious space is helping Ye Xiwen in decoding and extracting heavenly avenues from the scriptures. These avenues are basically the 'Great Dao' a.k.a profound underlying principles of the universe.

On the one hand the people of Zhen Wu Jie completely denied the existence of the so-called gods, but on the other hand, they also believed that human beings could acquire godly powers by relying on their own efforts. Of course, this was a contradictory statement

with respect to the previous one, but both of these beliefs had continued to pass down for millions of years.

Inside the ancient scriptures, there was a faintly visible figure of a godly spirit which was unceasingly reciting those scriptures. Furthermore, it was also constantly attempting in vain to break out of Ye Xiwen's body, but the mysterious space was also constantly exuding bursts of seven coloured rays of light each and every time to suppress it down.

That one page of Ancient God Scriptures was undeniably a godly item that once belonged to a legendary godly spirit, so it was bound to contain ancient wisdom. Not to mention, it must have certainly possessed a spirit in the past. Therefore, now that Ye Xiwen was trying to comprehend the profound meanings contained in it bit by bit, this whole process seemed like a plundering-type comprehension through meditation.

The ancient avenues accumulated inside the mysterious space so far were being gradually extracted little by little, which appeared just like the spinning of a silk cocoon.

Although there was only one page of Ancient God Scriptures to comprehend, Ye Xiwen could only dare to say that he understood some parts of it. However, he still felt that this time's harvest of knowledge and insights was far more than the knowledge he obtained by reading all those books in the library.

Now it seemed like only Ye Xiwen's team was still roaming in the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction, while others had left long ago. Ye Xiwen's harvest was just too big this time with that one page of

Ancient God Scriptures being the best of it. Everyone wanted to snatch it from him and that was why most of the experts had left to inform their respective sects. They didn't have any other option but to call backup because none of the participants in this time's conquest was capable of dealing with Ye Xiwen.

There were many people who did not want to leave but could only choose to leave because they could only rely upon one of the eight sword commands to exit this small world, otherwise, they would be trapped in this ruined world for a lifetime before collapsing together with it.

This was why experts were so desperate to get their hands on the sword commands from the beginning, since capturing a sword command was equivalent to gaining the advantage of not being dependent on others.

Ye Xiwen knew about their motives, so he couldn't leave this world. For the time being, he was safe here because one sword command was enough to exit this world while all sword commands must be assembled together in order to open the entrance to this world.

However, four of the eight sword commands were already in Ye Xiwen's possession. He had obtained one sword command from the Mo siblings and the other three by plundering them from the fifth god's corpse.

Therefore, it was impossible for the experts to enter this world from outside, even if they wanted to come in. Their only option was to wait for Ye Xiwen on the other side of the entrance.

Because of this situation at hand, Ye Xiwen could only opt to go all out with his cultivation and level up as fast as possible in order to cope with the terrifying attacks which might come his way sooner or later.

Afterwards, he and his team continued to fight all the way until that small demon beast kingdom was completely wiped out by them.

The fine blood and essence of the fallen demon beasts were directly absorbed by Tianyuan mirror.

At this time, Ye Xiwen and the others bypassed the sandstorm and finally reached the depths of the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction. Before their eyes appeared the entrance to a subterranean palace with large amounts of Dragon Power [Longwei] scattered in all directions along with some Deadqi mixed with it.

“This is Dragon Power! F\*\*k, there’s so much of it! Could it be that this is actually a dragon’s lair?” The wolf cub suddenly gawked. His reaction was understandable after all the legends said that the dragon race was capable of contending with the legendary race of gods, making them one of the ruling races of Ten Thousand Worlds. This statement was enough to showcase the terrifying influence of the dragon race.

When one dragon could be considered such a tyrannical existence, a dragon’s lair or a dragon’s nest to be precise was enough to turn the sky and the earth upside down throughout the

Zhen Wu Jie.

“No, I think this is probably a dragon tomb; the final burial site for dragon lords.” Ye Mo said with a frown. “The Deadqi coming from inside is too thick and abnormally intense. It is impossible for a normal dragon’s lair to have this type of Deadqi, not to mention if there really is a dragon living here, then it would have shown up already.”

“If we enter a dragon’s lair, we will die for sure. However, if this is a dragon tomb, we have hit the jackpot!” The wolf cub’s eyes shone brightly. “Dragon race is known to hoard all sorts of treasures, not to mention a dragon’s tomb which is bound to have a lot of buried treasures inside of it. Most importantly, a dead dragon’s skeletal remains are genuinely considered as priceless treasures. A dragon at the end of its lifespan automatically goes to the dragon tomb and awaits its death. However, the location of a dragon tomb is something only a few know about. In fact, the location of a dragon tomb is considered the biggest secret even among the members of the dragon race. Only when a dragon reaches the end of its lifespan, it receives the summons from a dragon tomb. After that, it can follow a kind of inherent feeling to locate the dragon tomb. Not to mention a dragon tomb is an unequalled divine storehouse of dragon bones.”

“Dragons are always very sensitive about their tombs, so a dragon tomb is often considered as the most dangerous place to venture into.” Ye Mo said.

“I must go in to have a look, after all, how can you obtain a tiger cub without entering a tiger’s den? I don’t have any other option

right now.” Ye Xiwen said with a somewhat helpless smile appearing on his face. He certainly had no other choice because he knew that people must be waiting for him outside to gang up on him as soon as he would exit this small world. Therefore, he must enhance his strength as much as possible.

When Ye Xiwen and his team entered the underground palace, an overwhelming Dragon Power surged out to greet them. At this time, Ye Mo finally recognized what this place really was.

“This is not the tomb of a real dragon; it’s the tomb of a flood dragon!” Ye Mo suddenly spoke. “Even so, it is definitely a big opportunity.”

“I can tell that this dragon tomb has definitely existed for hundreds of thousands of years, long before the history of Wang Heavenly faction even took its roots. I suspect that the Wang Heavenly faction must have accidentally discovered this dragon tomb and used it as the foundation for their faction. That also explains the presence of a flood dragon egg in this small world.”

Ye Xiwen nodded. Of course, the tomb of a flood dragon wasn’t going to be as magnificent as the tomb of a real dragon, but this would also reduce the degree of risk involved by multiple folds.

Because of the intermittent waves of Dragon Power rushing out of the entrance to the underground palace, those muddleheaded demon beasts never dared to approach this flood dragon tomb. No wonder why it seemed like this place had remained undisturbed for an extremely long time.

“Dragon tobacco plant.....Dragon mushroom.....” It took just a glance for Ye Xiwen to recognize a variety of rare herbs that had been growing there for a thousand years, or even thousands of years. These herbs were absolutely priceless and could easily sell for over a million Ling Dans. One must know that such rare herbs were growing on the outside, so it would be hard to tell what they were going to find on the inside.

It was possible to see such rare things only in a dragon tomb because right after the death of a dragon, its corpse slowly decomposed and dissolved nutrients into the earth, not to mention its flesh and blood did the job of irrigation for such rare herbs.

Ye Xiwen and the Mo siblings would have never figured out the real preciousness of these herbs if not for Ye Mo’s explanations about them.

The dragon mushrooms looked like dragon-shaped spirit mushrooms as they were exuding the fragrance of spirit mushrooms. It was said that a millennium old dragon mushroom could increase the lifespan of a living being by over a hundred years. Not to mention these dragon mushrooms were only a small part of a variety of dragon mushrooms, some of which were 2000 years old, 3000 years old, and could even be up to 9999 years old – then it would transform into a dragon mushroom king.

Besides dragon mushrooms, a variety of herbs could be seen growing in the vicinity of the dragon tomb.



These best quality herbs were growing outside the underground palace and appeared like roadside weeds; as if nobody ever bothered to even touch them. The reason behind this was the decline of Wang Heavenly faction that made it difficult for the outsiders to gain access to this small world. The native demon beasts of this world did not have the means to overcome their inherent fear of Dragon Power, so they never approached this place even if they drooled over obtaining those precious herbs.

The Dragon Power merely acted as a suppression force upon sentient beings, but those muddleheaded demon beasts felt an instinctive fear of repression from it.

Although this wasn't the tomb of a real dragon, Ye Xiwen and the others still managed to get their hands on priceless treasures.

Ye Xiwen waved his hand and plundered the majority of best quality herbs in one fell swoop.

"Crap! You are really shameless, Ye Xiwen!" The wolf cub saw Ye Xiwen making the first move and immediately rained curses on him, but he himself wasn't slow and seized over a hundred spirit grasses.

The Mo siblings were a bit slow and only managed to seize over a dozen spirit grasses each, but both of them were very satisfied. After all, they would be able to obtain over a million Ling Dans, enabling them to crush an expert of peak legendary realm quite easily.

Ye Xiwen got such a rich harvest outside the flood dragon tomb; this made him look forward to checking out the hidden treasure trove inside the tomb.

“Ha ha, I tell you Ye Xiwen, this is really a significant development! In the beginning itself, you obtained so many of these herbal medicines and most of which are capable of increasing the lifespan; it means these herbs can replenish your spiritual essence and some can directly improve your skills as well.” Ye Mo explained, “You have obtained some Dragon Yuan grasses which can help you in balancing out the overuse of Phoenix regeneration by replenishing the lost life essence.”

# Chapter 314: Flood Dragon's Blood Pool

---

Ye Xiwen's heavenly phoenix regeneration was actually a supreme level secret technique. However, the consumption of life essence was something that even the phoenix race couldn't escape despite being so loved and favored by the heavens, let alone a human expert like him. It was said that at the end of a millennium of its lifespan, a phoenix reached nirvana and took rebirth after completely regaining its exhausted life essence.

Ye Xiwen did not have the miraculous skill of the phoenix race as reaching nirvana was equivalent to dying as a result of exhausting one's life essence entirely. Life essence is fundamental to maintain the life of all living beings and the so-called process of strengthening the foundation is to find ways to increase the reserve of one's life essence.

While leading a pious life of martial arts practice, every breakthrough into the next stage can increase the lifespan by a corresponding increase in the life essence. However Ye Xiwen's consumption of life essence was just too fast, in fact he estimated that he had already ended up consuming more than 50 years worth of life essence, particularly while regenerating fatal wounds. He had been able to survive all those life threatening situations all thanks to phoenix regeneration technique. So he was reluctant to avoid using this technique even after knowing its shortcomings.

Ye Xiwen could only continue to make breakthroughs one after another to offset the consumed life essence. So long as the breakthrough speed was fast enough to make sure that the regeneration rate of the life essence would always remain above the consumption rate, he should be able to survive.

“I will need to buy some appropriate herbs after exiting this world.” Ye Xiwen nodded and said.

“Yes, these herbs can be used to refine Shou Dan [Longevity Dan], and I have a gift to add to Shou Dan’s formula. So, all you need to do is pay attention to collecting those raw materials for the medicinal pills. The refined pills always give more benefits compared to the ingredients, not to mention you can just sell the ones you don’t need. This would form a positive feedback circle and you will never lack life essence as a result of that.” Ye Mo said.

“En!” Ye Xiwen nodded as on the road of martial art practice, the biggest natural enemy was none other than time itself. As long as there was enough time, even a pig should be able to practice. However, the struggle of life with the heavens could never be a simple matter because there was an absolute requirement of longer practice time to reach the higher levels of cultivation.

Even if a Shou Dan would add only 50 years of life to one’s lifespan, it was still enough to make everyone go crazy over it. It was well-known fact that the owner of an alchemy refining furnace would never lack financial resources. Of course, Ye Xiwen was aware of this and had been looking for a good opportunity to learn how to use it properly. Not to mention he had already obtained a mighty technique called ‘Celestial Emperor Tool Refining Tactics’ from Ye Mo. It was the key to demonstrating the gate to the enlightenment of Dao, thereby making it more valuable than the ancient scriptures. Unfortunately, his Dao was not in agreement with it, otherwise, his cultivation would be far greater than what it current was. However even so, the ‘Celestial Emperor Tool Refining Tactics’ was of great significance to him.

The refining method of Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag had also come from the ‘Celestial Emperor Tool Refining Tactics’.

Ye Xiwen and his team continued to go deeper into the underground palace. After stepping down a very long ladder which went all the way down seven hundred meters, they saw a pleasant-looking hall which was really massive; it was hundreds of meters in height. They weren’t able to guess the width and depth of this hall but they certainly saw a pool of blood that was about 100 feet in length; it was exuding traces of coercion in the air.

“F\*\*k! This is the blood pool of a flood dragon!” The wolf cub glanced at the pool and exclaimed. The blood pool was long and slender like a river. When looking from above, it would actually appear in the shape of a flood dragon.

“Legends tell that flood dragons actually belong to the species of Asian Dragons [Yalong species] and are closest to the real dragons in terms of habits and appearance, unlike other kinds of Asian Dragon variants. This flood dragon’s blood pool is an irrefutable evidence of that.” The wolf cub said with a sigh full of emotions, “According to the legends, the depths of the dragon world has dragon blood and if an Asian Dragon gets the opportunity to take a dip in it, it would be able to wash away the blood of other demon beasts from its own blood vessels and would acquire the pure blood of a real dragon. The gathering places of flood dragon tribal groups often have these so-called ‘flood dragon’s blood pool’. A very powerful flood dragon is able to release a part of its essence and blood to form a blood pool while some Asian Dragon species can soak in the blood pool to turn into pureblood flood dragons.”

Ye Xiwen looked at the wolf cub and thought that this little beast really knew a lot about all this stuff related to dragons.

“However it’s such a pity that the essence and blood of flood dragon have almost been consumed up. The remaining blood will only give some ordinary effects if applied.” The wolf cub said in a disappointed tone.

Ye Xiwen was not disheartened because so much blood was present in the such a big blood pool. He could always extract enough essence and blood to make the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag take a thorough rebirth with all of the deepwater black snakes evolving into flood dragons.

Ye Xiwen was about to seize the flood dragon blood when the entire pool shook up all of a sudden and a group of huge monsters soared out. More than a hundred huge figures appeared in front of them in the blink of an eye.

“Flood dragons, how can there be so many of them!” Exclaimed Ye Mo as he remembered how hectic it had been to defeat one young flood dragon, and now that so many of them suddenly appeared out of the blue; he didn’t know what to do.

Ye Xiwen also saw that these monsters had dark bodies and were releasing terrifying Dragon Power just like the young flood dragon that he had seen earlier.

But he was suddenly overjoyed to see so many flood dragons at

once, after all even one young flood dragon had piqued the interest of so many people earlier. He calculated that all these flood dragons should be enough to refine all of the 108 sides of the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array, thereby reaching its perfection level along with an ultimate power surge.

Moreover, the soul of deepwater black snake king that was sealed inside the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag would also transform into a flood dragon directly, which would then greatly increase its might.

Ye Xiwen noticed that these flood dragons were different from that young flood dragon he had fought earlier. These baby dragons were originally from the Asian Dragon species [Yalong species] and successfully transformed into flood dragons after immersing themselves into the flood dragon blood pool. Although they were at legendary first stage or second stage, they weren't as aggressive as the young flood dragon he fought previously. This difference arose from the inherent disparity between Xiantian [inborn nature] and Houtian [nurture].

“Roar!” The flood dragons roared simultaneously in abundance and it seemed like the sky would be torn to shreds anytime now. At this time, they suddenly spat water swords from their mouths toward Ye Xiwen. The water swords instantly punctured the sky like extremely sharp thorns before falling down toward him.

The attacks of these legendary level flood dragons were very swift and fierce. In fact, there was some kind of world law contained in those water swords, making them even more horrifying.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen snorted and congealed a big golden hand. The water swords were all directly grasped by that big golden hand and crushed to pieces.

Fortunately, these baby dragons had recently transformed into flood dragons, so their cultivation wasn’t going to be too profound, or else, the situation might turn quite troublesome.

The big golden hand of Ye Xiwen instantly rose against the wind while simultaneously getting bigger and bigger and then, almost covered the entire underground hall as it grasped toward those flood dragons.

His hand was like a giant fishing net which immediately entrapped those flood dragons. They were struggling like trapped fishes but had no way to break out of his clutches.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

The flood dragons counter-attacked furiously by spitting lightning from their mouths and violently somersaulting inside his grasp. It seemed as if thunder and lightning were dancing vertically and horizontally among cloud-covered mountains.



These dragons were enraged as they opened their mouths to attack, but Ye Xiwen's golden hand was just too big like the layers of golden clouds. The attacks certainly did hit his golden hand but could only set off a burst of golden ripples in the divinities. There simply was no way to break free from his grasp.

Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant form had been practiced to the fourth layer; and after passing through the baptism of both heavenly tribulation and that young flood dragon's blood, he had already reached the fourth layer's peak. Even after achieving such a tyrannical form, his gilded tyrant form didn't have a breakthrough because the fifth layer was yet to be deduced.

These days, the mysterious space's main task had been to continue to deduce all sorts of ancient avenues. It could be said that he obtained enormous benefits as a result of that, which broadened his horizon as well as improved his cultivation.

However, the deductions of other martial arts fell down significantly, in fact even the deduction of 'coiling dragon palm' diminished. Ye Xiwen had obtained stunning inheritances such as the 'gilded tyrant form' that could grant him enough power to tear even the gods and devils to shreds. Similarly, the coiling dragon palm could break the heaven and earth when practiced to the acme level. But none of the two were complete. Each new layer needed full-fledged deduction in the mysterious space.

Moreover, Ye Xiwen also lacked enough Ling Dans to fulfill the requirement, especially when the requirement was so enormous. During the last two week's time, he had continued to kill demon beasts in order to obtain their demon cores. Now he was using the

cores as the last resort. That was why he set a firm resolve that he would find a way to fix this problem after exiting this world.

Wealth and cultivation go hand-in-hand on the path of martial arts practice; this is something which will always be true.

Even if Ye Xiwen had enough Ling Dans, the deduction of the next layers of such stunning secret techniques would need large numbers of Ling Dan and a lot of time to master as well. Fortunately, he had obtained the full version of phoenix regeneration technique, so he didn't need to deduce the missing parts for this one. However, in order to grasp it more profoundly, he must spend a lot of time to comprehend it.

All of these deduction processes involved huge energy requirements which always worried Ye Xiwen. However, they would certainly seem like worthwhile worries to the others.

This explained why the gilded tyrant form didn't have a breakthrough to the fifth layer even after reaching the peak of the fourth layer. Not to mention if it had actually reached the fifth layer, then the attacks of those flood dragons wouldn't have been able to set off ripples in the divinities.

When an exceptional expert like the fifth god was completely suppressed by Ye Xiwen, these baby dragons simply didn't stand a chance against him. Ye Xiwen was basically invincible while they actually needed a breakthrough to the third stage of legendary realm if they even considered giving him a good enough challenge.

Ye Xiwen's big golden hand started to shrink in midair; it now appeared like a huge cage that had entrapped all those flood dragons. They simply had no way to escape from his clutches.

“Boom!” At this instant, he suddenly closed his big golden hand and more than a hundred flood dragons were directly squeezed to death.

He was not at all hesitant in offering those flood dragons to the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag and began to refine them one after another.

# Chapter 315: Heavenly Tribulation Appears Again

---

In comparison to a deepwater black serpent, a flood dragon's blood would undoubtedly be purer and superior in quality. Hence, if dragon blood was to be offered to the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag, then its might would naturally grow much bigger.

Ye Xiwen began to refine the corpses of baby dragons one after another, and kept on adding their essences into the flag array. It could be said that there was a huge difference between his current and previous strength levels; even the degree of restoration of Tianyuan mirror was quite significant this time, which was also the reason why the refining of 'Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag' took only one day.

This also included offering the 'blood of flood dragons' to the flag, which ultimately led to the evolution of all deepwater black snakes into flood dragons.

The wolf cub had been guarding Ye Xiwen during this period. He didn't even budge one step away from Ye Xiwen since this Dragon Tomb was a dangerous place. Although they had obtained a lot of benefits here, there was still a possibility of encountering some unexpected situations; just like the sudden appearance of those flood dragons. If Ye Xiwen had not moved into action at the right time, then his team wouldn't have come out alive of that ambush.

Ye Xiwen placed the flag back into his stock. Considering the enhanced power of Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag, it could be said that his strength had also increased multiple times. In fact,

he would now be able to deal with the expert of legendary third stage quite easily.

After Ye Xiwen was done leveling up the flag, he and the others continued to venture deeper into the tomb.

As they went deeper and deeper, they could feel the gradual rise in the intensity of Yinqi, as it was blowing against their faces and assaulting all their senses at once. Clusters of Deadqi could be seen surging high inside the hall, intertwining into layer upon layer of clouds.

The entire hall seemed like it was built at the edge of some cloud district. They could also see a primitive looking cavern on the other side of the thick Deadqi clouds.

On the other side of the clouds, there was a seemingly endless pile of dragon skeletons lying on the floor. Each of the skeletons appeared like a small mountain. In fact, the original flood dragons used to be even bigger in stature. Not to mention that the real dragons were incomparably massive, almost rivaling the size of the stars.

During their lifetime, dragons were known to possess supernatural powers to manipulate their own size. However right now, their skeletons were lying motionless on the ground.

"Haha, I never thought that we would come across so many skeletons of the flood dragons. Was an entire group of flood dragons buried here?" Ye Mo said.

Taking a broad view ahead, there were thousands of skeletons of flood dragons in the Dragon Tomb; some were small while the others were larger in size. It could be said that these skeletons definitely belonged to a large ethnic clan of flood dragons, but now they all had perished completely. Perhaps, those baby flood dragons were the last surviving members of the flood dragon clan which had already faced destruction, or they would have never left their precious tomb unattended.

In fact, their sacred family tomb had been turned into the foundation of a martial arts school. Of course, there were no explanations behind the presence of all these ladders and halls inside the tomb, besides accepting the fact that the downfall of entire flood dragon clan had already taken place at an earlier date. Later on, the Wang Heavenly faction must have constructed its school here using this Dragon Tomb as foundation. But even they met with deterioration and complete downfall with the passage of time, leaving behind a bunch of ruins for others to explore.

Since these dragons had died tens of thousands of years ago, their tyrannical bodies couldn't survive the impact of time. Even though they were such powerful creatures, their flesh and blood had long been absorbed into the ground, acting as nourishment for the spirit grasses, which had been growing in the vicinity for thousands of years.

Only a mountain of snow-white skeletons had survived till now, still exuding an unusual white glow that hadn't disappeared for all those years. This was certainly a sign of successful cultivation, not to mention that even the skeletons of most inferior quality, in the pile, belonged to Sage realm flood dragons. If alive, just one would

be enough to spread chaos throughout the Ming Empire.

"Ha ha ha, we are really lucky!" The wolf cub laughed and galloped towards the mountain of skeletons. The lingering traces of Dragon Power simply did not have any effect on him.

Even though the flesh and blood of these flood dragons had dissipated into the earth, the precious dragon scales were still intact. Moreover, these scales could be turned into full-body armors and helmets; their value was simply unquantifiable.

In short, these dragon bones were priceless treasures.

"Rumble!" The flood dragons' skeletons began to shake suddenly along with the entire Dragon Tomb. A strange green light suddenly lit up in their empty eye sockets, as these beasts of Sage realm actually came back to life.

"Damn!" Ye Mo suddenly said in a loud voice. "It seems like this place still has the remnants of dragon souls which are bringing all these skeletons back to life!"

Some traces of consciousness were still left in these skeletons, which usually stayed in a latent state, unless someone tried to rob their clan's tomb. The formidable race of dragons simply couldn't be underestimated no matter what.

One after another, the dragon skeletons flew up in the air while issuing frightening roars. Dragon Power began to rush wantonly in

all directions, and in the blink of an eye, the dragon skeletons rushed towards Ye Xiwen and the others.

The dragon skeletons were flying in the air and appeared just like dragon spirits. However, flesh and blood began to congeal out of nowhere, slowly and gradually filling their ghostly shadows; their loud roars were shaking the world.

"Let's get out of here, hurry up!" Ye Mo shouted.

There was no need to say that, since Ye Xiwen and the others had already begun speeding all the way to escape. Ye Xiwen had opened his devil wings behind his back to escape at an extremely fast speed; the Mo siblings escaped together and flew directly out of the cave. Although the wolf cub wasn't as fast as Ye Xiwen, he had started to run earlier than Ye Xiwen. The wolf cub's agility skill was amazing, and so was his speed.

Ye Mo's warning was unnecessary because everyone already knew about the severity of situation. The resurrection of Sage level dragons was no joke. In fact, even the resurrection of the flood dragons of legendary eighth or ninth stage would be a terrible event. Even Ye Xiwen had to flee at the mere sight of Sage level dragon skeletons.

They were dealing with dragon skeletons of sage realm, and that too more than one or two; one could easily imagine the tyranny of the situation. No wonder even the Wang Heavenly faction had been unable to lay their hands on these dragon skeletons, which had remained untouched for thousands of years in a huge hall, located on the other side of Deadqi clouds.



The rattling sound of bones colliding with each other was accompanied by terrifying screams of the resurrected flood dragons, resounding everywhere inside the underground tomb. Both Ye Xiwen and wolf cub were afraid to turn their heads back, but couldn't help doing so. One thing was sure - they needed to get out of there as fast as possible.

"Whoosh!" With a shrill piercing sound, Ye Xiwen directly turned into a golden streamer of light and escaped from the underground tomb.

The wolf cub closely followed him while escaping, and stopped only after having exited the underground tomb. At this time, he was breathing heavily. He was only a bit slower than Ye Xiwen, but almost had his back bitten by one of the dragon skeletons.

That skeleton dragon's agility skill was not superior to that of the wolf cub, but its cultivation level was far above his.

This was a clear demonstration of the saying, 'If you cannot run faster than the enemy, then at least run faster than your companion'.

"These old fogies have died long ago, why cannot they just stay dead? Geez, they just had to come back to life and cause such ruckus." The wolf cub was still gasping for breath as he said these words in an irritated tone. The intermittent roars and screeches of those skeleton dragons could still be heard arising from inside the underground tomb. The peculiar screeches of these dead creatures

reminded Ye Xiwen of those terrifying screams, which used to haunt the demon island every night.

However, the skeleton dragons continued to pace back and forth near the entrance of the tomb but did not dare to come out, because stepping out of the tomb would actually suppress their consciousness, turning them into nothing more than a pile of bones.

Their responsibility was just to guard this place from strong raiders. As soon as they realized that Ye Xiwen and the others had already gone out of their reach, they could only roar bitterly a few times before returning to the depths of the tomb.

"It's such a pity, those skeletons are priceless treasures but..." The wolf cub said with a trace of regret appearing on his face.

"But we've obtained great benefits this time; don't be greedy and learn to be satisfied with whatever you already have." Ye Xiwen said while indirectly referring to the priceless medicinal herbs.

"Well, I'm planning to take on the heavenly tribulation. You invoke a protective barrier around me." Ye Xiwen said. His cultivation had already reached the peak of half-step legendary realm's first stage, and including the non-stop massacre of demon beasts at his hands, which had continued for a period of half-a-month; his foundation had already reached a profound level, exceeding all basic requirements for a breakthrough. Not to mention, he had diligently studied the Ancient Scriptures for two whole weeks as well.

He was only missing a turning point. In fact, he had noticed the need of having a breakthrough right before sacrificing the baby flood dragons to his flag, but he just wanted to finish the tomb exploration first.

At present, he should be able to contend with the experts of legendary third stage with the help of Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag. Hence, after having a breakthrough by successfully crossing the heavenly tribulation, he would be able to easily beat the experts of legendary fourth stage; at that time, his self-defense capabilities would also increase significantly.

Choosing to cross the heavenly tribulation here was beneficial to Ye Xiwen since the skeleton dragons couldn't step out of the tomb's entrance, while the heavy presence of Dragon Power in the vicinity kept the demon beasts away. In short, he could face the heavenly tribulation without worrying about being disturbed while doing so. In addition, the wolf cub was also going to use a protective barrier to isolate Ye Xiwen during the breakthrough process.

With Ye Xiwen no longer concealing his true cultivation, his energy broke free and spread out. In the sky, the heavenly tribulation clouds started to gather slowly. At this time, he suddenly felt as if the heavenly tribulation had firmly locked onto him body.

The dark clouds were getting denser and stronger, as the electric snakes suddenly began to shuttle back and forth across the clouds.

"Huala!" There sounded a loud and shrill noise as the thunderclouds activated all of a sudden. Hundreds of electric snakes dived down from the clouds, rushing all the way towards Ye Xiwen.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

A series of explosions occurred right above Ye Xiwen as soon as those electric snakes pounded upon his divine clothing.

"Crash-Bang!" At that very moment, there began a downpour of thunderbolts which crashed upon him one after another.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Those thunderbolts had crashed upon the gilded tyrant body of Ye Xiwen.

# Chapter 316: Surrounded

---

Several thunderbolts bombarded on Ye Xiwen's body back to back, but they couldn't make him move by even a hair's breadth; on the contrary, they had no other choice but to get completely absorbed by him.

This time, apparently, the heavenly tribulation was somewhat impatient. It could no longer wait and immediately flooded the whole sky with innumerable lightning weapons; swords, spears, halberds, and so on. Altogether eighteen sorts of densely packed weapons were bolting across the sky; and just like a torrential rain, they directly fell upon Ye Xiwen.

The might of each and every of these weapons was much higher than the previous thunderbolts; it was as if these weapons contained souls of their own. The power of their attacks was simply majestic as they set off endless waves of killing spree across the sky.

Just then, a great number of weapons, like a huge storm, swept down from the sky. This scene was filled with a dreadful terror.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

As soon as these weapons crashed onto Ye Xiwen's body, there were intermittent bursts of metal clanging sounds as a result of the impact. Previously, the heavenly tribulation had been unable to injure him, but this time, these lightning weapons not just rumbled on his body but also blew open several bloody wounds on his body.

However, Ye Xiwen immediately cured his wounds using the heavenly Phoenix Regeneration Technique. This time, he did not dare to be negligent. He promptly started operating 'Tyrant Body technique' so as to endure the barrage of volleys from these weapons, which were wreaking havoc upon his body without a pause.

Mo siblings were standing nearby and were simply staring at him in awe, because when compared with Ye Xiwen's previous heavenly tribulation which they had seen before, today's heavenly tribulation was ten times more intense. The last heavenly tribulation was just like a common nightmare while this time's tribulation was not only much more dreadful, but also unpredictable; there was literally an unceasing downpour of weapons.

Such a huge change that was going on inside the heavenly tribulation was dangerous enough to get them twisted into pieces. However, Ye Xiwen was still completely calm and composed, though he was being continuously hacked by those lightning weapons, and was in great pain. A very miserable look had already crawled onto his face. Indeed, this time's heavenly tribulation had also failed to budge him even a bit.

Even half an hour later, the heavenly tribulation failed to have the slightest effect on him; therefore, it could only disperse resentfully in the end.

However, Ye Xiwen's imposing aura was more frightening than before; and it now completely engulfed his wounds and had begun to heal them gradually.

Ye Xiwen breathed out with satisfaction as he finally entered the second stage of half-step legendary realm. Going by his current strength, he was now much more confident than ever. And to the extent that even the experts of the legendary fourth peak couldn't stand any chance against him.

Ye Xiwen felt that now he had some strength to spare for self-defense, but it was pretty obvious that this was far from enough.

But no matter what, it had already been beyond his control, so he needed to cultivate a massive amount of Ling Dans. At the same time, he had several techniques to practice, so the constant need of Ling Dans couldn't be ignored. And though his Tianyuan mirror could condense Ling Dans, the produced quantity was far from adequate.

Moreover, they could remain inadequate like this for a lifetime.

Eventually, the heavenly tribulation dispersed; and since it had been crossed by Ye Xiwen, the usual scenery of sandstorm had been replaced by a calm and tranquil sky without a shred of clouds visible across thousands of miles.

Ye Xiwen looked at the slowly approaching Mo siblings and the wolf cub, and said: "I have decided to wait here for a while before leaving, while you people continue staying here for at least ten days before going out."

This matter had already been properly discussed amongst them. Ye Xiwen was the strongest in this group and Mo siblings were way inferior to him in strength. So, if they were to go along with Ye Xiwen they would definitely prove to be a huge burden upon him.

It would be better if Ye Xiwen left alone because then he wouldn't have to tend to two or more people at the same time. And moreover, withdrawing in a dire situation would be far easier for him alone.

After that, he apportioned the 'sword commands' he had seized from the fifth god amongst themselves, so that the others could exit this small world anytime and anywhere using those 'sword commands'.

----- After having explained everything to them, Ye Xiwen immediately opened the gate of the ruins and went out.

"Ye Xiwen... Ye Xiwen is here!" The scouts of major forces recongnized Ye Xiwen's figure the moment it appeared in their line of sight, because his picture had long been spread throughout the major forces.

Just one page of Ancient God Scriptures was worthy of sending



any major force into a complete frenzy. Several experts had arrived near the entrance to the ruins of Wang Heavenly faction and were still arriving. And although Ye Xiwen had obtained merely one page of the Ancient God Scripture, this news had spread throughout the major forces. As a result of which countless people had come to observe.

"It really is him, that's for sure; hurry up and report, today this kid is going to die!" One of the scouts of a major force hastily said.

"Ye Xiwen is really stupid; unless he hides there for a lifetime, it is absolutely impossible for him to evade the murderous chase of our Army of God. Could it be that he thought that just by hiding there for half a month, he would be able to escape this tragic fate?" A member of the Army of God coldly said.

Suddenly all sorts of summoning talismans soared in the sky, sending reports that Ye Xiwen had finally shown up after half a month's time.

"Ye Xiwen, they have already issued summoning talismans. Be prepared for a fierce battle!" Ye Mo said.

"En!" Ye Xiwen nodded, he did not prevent those scouts from sending out the summoning talismans because there were too many of them, and he did not have the means to stop them all.

It seemed as if many forces were interested in obtaining the power of ancient god scriptures.

"Ye Xiwen, die!" A roar suddenly resounded throughout the sky. At this moment, dozens of rainbow lights were already flitting across the sky, as if trying to delimit the sky into several parts.

Also, a few dozen warriors were floating in the air, constantly releasing an unscrupulous aura from their bodies. Besides, they were being led by several experts who were powerful enough to actuate the atmospheric Lingqi with a mere hand gesture. Yes, they actually had the battle efficiency of legendary level.

Amongst them, two experts possessed exceptionally tyrannical imposing aura; one of them was a youth who roughly had the appearance of a 27 or 28-year-old; he also had gracious facial features which gave a divine feel to his presence, while his golden colored robe was making his appearance look quite extravagant and classy.

And the person beside him looked more or less the same as him. This person's facial features were also quite gracious which made him look exceptionally attractive. He was clad in a long golden robe but appeared a little younger than the previous one, roughly 25 or 26 years old.

From the discussion of the surrounding people, Ye Xiwen could at least figure out this much that one of these two men was the third god, while the other one was the fourth god; both belonging to the Army of God.

To Ye Xiwen, the appearance of these two men and the previously met fifth god seemed very much alike, with almost the same temperament, as if they really were Gods in general.

And right behind them, there were dozens of breathtaking warriors and each one of them was an invincible character of half-step legendary realm. One could tell that each of them was favored by the gods and held supreme dominance in his respective region. Thus, the inside story of the existence of the Army of God could be clearly inferred from this scene.

Ye Xiwen swept his eyes around and noticed the presence of the insignia of 'Army of God' on the bodies of these experts. It seemed like all the forces of the Army of God, which should have been dispersed throughout the Ming Empire, had concentrated here to encircle and annihilate Ye Xiwen.

"These super experts, who have the insignia of the Army of God on their hands, are more than enough to flatten the major influences of Yongan City. But today they have assembled to deal with Ye Xiwen!"

"This is nothing! Actually, Ye Xiwen has beheaded the fifth god and that has thoroughly enraged the Army of God. This has also triggered the anger of their high-level experts, who are now raging with fury!"

"Look at those two men who are leading the powerhouses of Army of God, aren't they the fourth god and the third god? It is reported that the Army of God has altogether five great gods, but there is a huge difference among them on the basis of their strength. Speaking of which, actually the fifth god was the weakest one while the fourth god and the third god are far above the fifth god based on their respective strength levels. It is said that the

second god and the first god have already left for the Qin Empire. So now, the Ming Empire is left with only three gods. And since the fifth god was killed, the third god has taken over the task of sealing off the place, while the task of exploring these ruins has fallen into the hands of the fourth god. In short, they have together started out on a trip, and perhaps this is not really the so-called rage of the Army of God."

"Are you Ye Xiwen?" That 27 or 28-year-old youth asked. Actually, he was the third god who was coldly staring at Ye Xiwen at this moment. He occupied a very commanding position in his army; his facial features were solemn while his stare was quite bone-chilling as if was about to turn into a sharp sword to behead Ye Xiwen right here, right now.

"Yes!" Ye Xiwen nodded.

"So, you are the one who killed the fifth god." The fourth god gazed at Ye Xiwen with his heart-chilling sharp eyes, it as if a ferocious beast had selected a human to devour to its heart content. In spite of being aware of Ye Xiwen's real identity as the killer of the fifth god, he still asked in an inquisitive manner.

Ye Xiwen also had nothing to hide, so he slightly nodded in response.

"Good!" The third god coldly glared at him. His face was expressionless as it seemed like he was looking at a dead man; Ye Xiwen was just like a tiny ant in his eyes.

"Today, it would be very difficult for you to fly away from here even with your wings. So, if you have any last words to say, go ahead!" The third god seemed very lenient when he said that, but in reality he was a very cold and detached person. That was why he talked about the death of the fifth god quite indifferently. Actually, the Army of God had been established a long time ago, but nothing grave like this had ever happened. If the first and the second gods had not left the Ming Empire, then perhaps they would have personally moved into action.

In his eyes, Ye Xiwen was already dead, so at present, the only thing he was concerned with was: at what time Ye Xiwen would finally perish?

"Listen Ye Xiwen, hand over the ancient god scripture to me and we Jinyi Guards will guarantee your safety!" Just then, a loud sonic boom resounded in the sky.

It was followed by the arrival of a large fleet of warriors streaking across the sky.

Dozens of warriors arrived at the scene. They were all clad in the uniform of Jinyi Guards and none of them appeared weaker than the members of Army of God. There were also a few legendary level experts among them, with each releasing intense killing intention in the vicinity. This group was quite eye-catching in a way.

And the one at the front was the famous Jinyi young master, whom Ye Xiwen had seen earlier.

Ye Xiwen knew that this should be the master of Jinyi Guards.

"Ye Xiwen, hand over all the items which you have obtained in the ruins, and you shall live." Jinyi young master said in a cold voice. He was quite pleased by the fact that Ye Xiwen had been surrounded and didn't seem to have a way out. Earlier, Ye Xiwen had been too strong to deal with. In fact, even Jinyi Guards hadn't dared to face him. However, now that the tables had turned against Ye Xiwen, it was the perfect opportunity to ask him to surrender obediently.

"Jinyi Guards...I never thought that so many of these experts would arrive here. Could it be that Jinyi young master has called backup from Yongan City as well as from the nearby cities?"

"Exactly! That one page of ancient God scripture is said to have alarmed the entire organization of Jinyi Guards. If there was enough time, then more Jinyi Guards were estimated to arrive."

"Encircled by both the Army of God and Jinyi Guards, I am afraid it is really a dead end for Ye Xiwen this time around."

# Chapter 317: When I Decide To Kill Someone, No One Can Save Them

---

“Ye Xiwen, you will die today for sure, and I will also make sure that by the time I am done with you, you will be left unable to even beg for your life!” The fourth god tightly clenched his steel-like teeth and his handsome face twisted fiercely. Actually, these five great gods had grown up together; they shared a close brotherly bond amongst themselves. To them, the news of a brother getting murdered by Ye Xiwen had been quite devastating.

He simply wished in his heart to thoroughly destroy Ye Xiwen by crushing his bones to dust.

“Humph, don’t be so full of yourself; there are several others who want to kill me, so you alone are nothing but inconsequential!” Ye Xiwen sneered and said. One could see that both sides no longer cared to give face to each other. There was nothing that could ease them now.

“You are courting death!” The fourth god was thoroughly enraged by Ye Xiwen’s response. A long spear instantaneously appeared in his hand and he immediately swept out a terrifying Spearlight that rushed towards Ye Xiwen at a tremendous speed. It crossed the expansive sky, rippling along the way, while it seemed as if the world would be broken into pieces any time now.

Many spies were present in the surrounding and all of them held their breath in astonishment. They noticed that the fourth god actually had the strength of half-step legendary realm’s fourth stage. Although he had recently stepped into the half-step

legendary realm fourth stage, he wasn't even 50 years old. Even the old experts of 100 years of age and above were able to achieve barely half step legendary fourth stage or so, hence it could be seen that the strength and talent of the fourth god had already reached a considerably higher level. Even in the entire Southern region, the experts with almost the same age as him couldn't achieve the same level as he had achieved. At this moment, Jinyi young master, who was standing nearby, also saw that and it instantly stole away the colour of his face because he was only at half-step legendary third stage and that, too, because he had recently consumed a piece of dragon essence.

Actually Jinyi Young master was considered as a top genius not only in the Ming Empire but also in the entire southern domain. In fact, since his debut, he had always been at the top. When compared to the fifth god, he was not bad. However, compared with the fourth god, he actually fell short by a bit. Not to mention that he couldn't possibly be compared with the first three gods.

Furthermore, there were other powerful forces like the Seven Star Lords on this ancient road. Such comparison suddenly made it somewhat hard for him to accept his powerlessness, turning his face a bit gloomy.

Ye Xiwen snorted coldly. In a flash, a long halberd emerged in his hand. This halberd actually belonged to the fifth god. Ye Xiwen didn't even know the material used in its formation. At that time, when the battle between him and the fifth god had ended in the death of the latter, this halberd had surprisingly remained intact.

Ye Xiwen brandished the halberd from his hand and instantly



shot it up into the sky. It pierced through the sky to face the astonished Spearqi that had been shot by the opposite party.

Although Ye Xiwen's halberd technique was not profound as it was not obtained as an extraordinary inheritance, yet the sheer might used by him in this halberd attack had more than compensated for all that. In fact, the power displayed by this halberd this time was far more terrifying than that by the fifth god.

Previously, Ye Xiwen had stayed in the library for several months. There, he had studied all sorts of martial techniques as well as the so-called avenues of the martial arts. Although he could not become proficient in all of them, his tyrannical strength was more than enough to balance out what was lacking.

"Bang!" The golden beam of the halberd instantly collided maliciously into the majestic Spearqi, causing a huge pressure that crushed the space. It resulted into an immense shock wave that set off energy storms in all directions.

"Ah, Fifth brother!" The moment the fourth god saw the long halberd in Ye Xiwen's hands, his eyes immediately turned red while his already fierce facial expression turned even more eerie. He gave out a loud bellow which vibrated throughout the surrounding space.

An icy-cold and piercing killing intention suddenly blasted out from his body and scattered everywhere.

The experts present in the surroundings immediately felt this

intense killing intention and quickly drew a few steps back. His killing intention was so frightening that some of the spies with comparatively weaker strengths felt as if they would be shattered into fragments.

"Ye Xiwen, I will strangle you to death!" The fourth god shouted ferociously with a touch of callousness and arrogance in his tone. His qi enveloped the world itself just like a vast ocean and swept towards Ye Xiwen to engulf him completely.

"Die!" The fourth god snarled aggressively which shook the space before shattering it into pieces. His grandiose imposing aura swept across and engulfed the surrounding area as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen. At that time, he looked exceptionally scary, like a mountain hurling towards Ye Xiwen.

"Get lost!" Ye Xiwen also roared loudly. His golden divine cloak draped over his body instantly. He also started the operation of gilded tyrant form. He swept out his halberd, rocking the entire space in the vicinity. His qi engulfed the opposite party's imposing aura. The golden tide that he had swept out had already blotted out the entire sky.

"Boom!"

Both sides collided with each other in midair like two stars. In that split second, a large area in the surrounding space crumbled down while the dazzling light spread out in the horizon like millions of arrows made up of Bladelight, streaking across the sky at once.

In the face of such a terrible collision, whether it was the Army of God or Jinyi Guards, all withdrew as far as possible, so as not get swept away by the aftermath of this collision. Even though they were the leaders of their respective domains, this collision was too dreadful for them to withstand.

"Bang!"

After the collision occurred, the energy waves swept out and shattered the surrounding space, shocking everyone in the process. Just what kind of force was this attack comprised of that it led to such a terrible collision.

"Bang!" A figure was instantly sent flying out of that group of dazzling light. Unexpectedly, it turned out to be the fourth god. The fourth god had released such an invincible imposing aura only a while ago, but now his clothes were completely tattered while his hair was all messy. He spat out a mouthful of blood.

Everyone's eyes shrank as they hadn't expected that the person who would be sent flying out like this would actually turn out to be the fourth god. Actually, that terrible explosion was caused by Ye Xiwen. Indeed, Ye Xiwen was extremely strong.

However, Ye Xiwen didn't even wait for him to catch his breath and quickly leapt up, making his way through the space avalanche and rushed towards the fourth god.

The Lingqi in the atmosphere had gone completely chaotic. The

turbulent flow of Ye Xiwen's long halberd directly broke through this chaotic aura and like a black flood dragon, it swiftly dashed towards the fourth god to bite him.

"Hey, stop!" The third God was very much confident of his brother, but hadn't thought that during that horrifying collision, it would actually be the fourth God to fall into a disadvantageous position. Moreover, he was almost on the verge of being killed by Ye Xiwen.

Sensing the situation, the third god immediately shot out a move that took the shape of a big hand and rushed toward Ye Xiwen's long halberd at a lightning speed.

The third god was stronger when compared to the fourth god. He had almost stepped into half-step legendary fifth stage. In fact, had he not received the news of the fifth god getting killed, he would have already stepped into the fifth stage after a closed-door training session.

"Hmm, when I decide to kill someone, no one can save them!" Ye Xiwen snorted coldly. The situation had taken a turn where there was no room for reconciliation between him and the Army of God. Now, it had become a matter of life and death for both sides; either Ye Xiwen would kill them or the Army of God would kill him.

All of a sudden, a blue vein burst open in Ye Xiwen's right hand as he pulled back the long halberd and instantly shot it towards the fourth god. The halberd darted forward while absorbing the very soul of the expansive sky.

Ye Xiwen had already reached the peak of the fourth layer of Gilded Tyrant Form. Surely, one could imagine the sort of tyrannical force that he would have used to throw that halberd just now.

Ye Xiwen swiftly turned around and shot out his palm. In a flash, a coiling dragon came out from his palm, raised its head upwards and gave out a loud roar before soaring up into the sky. Then, it immediately flew towards that big hand of the third god.

"Boom!"

The coiling dragon collided with the third god's big hand which was made up of Lingqi. Afterwards, it tore that big hand into shreds and flew towards the third god to gobble him up.

At the same time, that long halberd which had transformed into a black flood dragon, also galloped towards the fourth god.

The experts of Army of God immediately moved into action. They absolutely could not allow the fourth god to be killed in front of them. They were thoroughly enraged when the fifth god had been killed in front of them, but now if the fourth god was to die before their eyes as well, then their faith would surely collapse.

An expert of half-step legendary first stage directly went forward and stretched out his hand and made a futile attempt to grab that long halberd.

"Whoosh!" The sound of the terrific friction was heard by everyone as the bones in his hand were shattered and blood began to ooze out from the wound. In fact, his whole body was affected by the terrifying force contained in that halberd. He fell down from the sky while the blood sprayed out from his body.

However, his attempt had slightly delayed the advancement of the halberd. This gave opportunity to many experts to arrive in front of the halberd. Yet nothing could resist the tyrannical force of that halberd as it broke through all their defenses. Even the experts of half-step legendary second stage couldn't stop it and were directly reduced to a group of blood mist. This halberd was simply unstoppable!

It took quite long to describe the entire scene, but all of this happened in just a moment. The halberd ultimately broke past the layers of experts and arrived in front of the fourth god.

"Puchi!" The halberd pierced through the body of the fourth god and directly nailed him to the ground.

"Boom!" As soon as his body was nailed to the ground by the halberd, his blood splattered out. It had directly crushed his soul before virtually crucifying him.

He lost his life that very instant.

The third god went crazy due to rage as he saw the death of the fourth god. Not to mention that it had happened right in front of

him. This feeling was more heart-wrenching than the grief caused by the news of the fifth god's killing. After all, the fifth god hadn't been killed before his eyes, while the fourth god was killed right in front of him.

Surely, this unbearable feeling had pierced his heart.

"Fourth brother!" The third god bellowed as his fierce imposing aura swept across in all directions.

The third god ferociously roared. His eyes were bloodshot as he gradually walked towards Ye Xiwen while towing his long blade.

Each and every one of his steps trod down the space, as his imposing manner was rising with each advancing step. An intense killing intention swept out towards Ye Xiwen to lock him down on the spot.

-----

# Chapter 318: Bloody Battle

---

“Bang!”

The earth trembled due to the might of the third god and a golden light emitted from his body which spread throughout the vast sky.

All the spies of the major forces got stunned as their bodies were covered in cold sweat. The third god had not begun to attack yet, but his terrifying might had already swept over in all directions.

Jinyi Young master's face turned pale as he stepped back. He considered himself as the top disciple of the younger generation but, the fourth god who was already at the half-step legendary fourth stage, had died in the hands of Ye Xiwen. This indicated that Ye Xiwen was even fiercer than the fourth god.

However, this third god was even more powerful than the fourth god. A formidable breath swept across the surroundings. Now, there simply was no means for anyone to approach him.

For a formidable master like him to use his full power against this young genius was already a matter of joke.

“Ye Xiwen, die!” The third god clenched his steel-like teeth and squeezed out these few words before rushing towards Ye Xiwen in a flash. The golden Zhen Yuan rushed out from his body and turned into a sea of golden energy before surging towards Ye Xiwen.



Ye Xiwen's golden body also emitted a large amount of golden Zhen Yuan, which similarly swept towards the third god.

“Bang!” The golden divine energies collided, and while looking from afar, it seemed as if two oceans made of gold had collided.

The frightening shock waves swept all over the sky, and both of them stepped upon their respective sea of gold and ferociously pounded into each other.

Two long blades hit each other and a monstrous storm swept across everywhere. It seemed as if the space itself would collapse any time now.

Ye Xiwen's imposing aura surged up once again and his golden clothes flared up. Finally, Ye Xiwen didn't hold back and went all out, releasing the entirety of his strength of half-step legendary second stage in one go, by relying on all sorts of secret techniques. Ye Xiwen's intrepid strength was simply beyond anyone's imagination.

“Puff!” In the third god's hand, the web between the thumb and the forefinger cracked open and blood splashed out. The entire blade was stained with blood.

Ye Xiwen also felt a giant force pounding into his own body as the long blade hit him. He suddenly felt a sharp pain in his chest, but immediately felt it disappearing. Although the third God was very strong, only a tiny step away from entering the half-step legendary

fifth stage, his overall strength was not less than that of Ye Xiwen. However, his body was not as strong as Ye Xiwen's, hence his attack couldn't injure Ye Xiwen.

“What! Was the third god injured just now?” A chill ran inside everyone's backs. The third god had obtained fame at a very early age, even before stepping on this ancient road. Earlier, people in the Ming Dynasty did not know him, but after he had stepped on this ancient road, no one could injure him even among his peers. There really was no such master who could hurt him. However, that same third god had been injured today.

It was not because of any trick or conspiracy. It was a fair battle between two equally strong fighters and the third god had actually been defeated by Ye Xiwen.

The wounds on the third god's hands healed rapidly, leaving only the scars behind. A formidable master like the third God obviously had some kind of healing technique in his arsenal, although much inferior to the Phoenix regeneration technique, yet good enough to deal with such small wounds.

The Third god held the long blade in his hands and stared at Ye Xiwen with a cold look in his eyes. His icy gaze made everyone tremble with fear as his long blade was pointed at Ye Xiwen.

“You are very strong, no wonder fifth brother and fourth brother have died in your hands, but today you are doomed. You cannot escape from my hands!” The third god sneered and said.

The third god had great self-confidence and his self-confidence arose from his strength. His strength was enough to dominate the young generation, and even when compared to the experts who were more than a hundred years old, he was not that bad.

The cold tip of the blade burst into a frightening radiance, overflowing with murderous intention. The third god raised his long blade and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen in the blink of an eye. The blade instantaneously slashed towards Ye Xiwen. It was an invincible blade technique, and no one could guess from where he had obtained this inheritance. It seemed as if the blade would cut the world, as if it would cut through the very flow of time.

Ye Xiwen laughed coldly as the long blade danced in his hands again, emitting a bright moonlight in the sky which took the shape of a beautiful moon diagram. It was as bright and dazzling as the sun.

The two long blades collided again. The third god's blade and Ye Xiwen's 'full moon creative concept' banged maliciously into each other, setting off burning hot rays of light in all directions.

"Bang!" Both the third god and Ye Xiwen had put all their effort into this attack and were exhausted. As a result of this time's collision, both of them had their hands injured.

People were watching from afar with their eyes wide open. They could tell that this time's collision was more ferocious than the one from a moment ago.

“Ye Xiwen, you cannot waste time!” Ye Mo said suddenly. “As time passes, more and more masters will come. Now it’s only the Army of God and the Jinyi Guards with whom you have to fight. But, if they are grouped together with other forces, you will not be able to deal with them. And, what if an old monster shows up? Then, even with the devil wings, you will not be able to escape!”

Ye Xiwen’s heart shook because since the time he had come out; he had been trying to escape. However, the army of god and the Jinyi Guards had blocked his way so that he couldn’t escape. He did not have time to waste here, and since the words about him coming out of the small world had already spread out, more and more masters would continue to arrive here.

At that time, even if really wanted to escape, he would most likely fail to do so.

The look in Ye Xiwen’s eyes was getting colder and colder. The third god must be killed quickly otherwise, the consequence could be disastrous. As far as the Jinyi Young master was concerned, Ye Xiwen simply couldn’t care less.

Although the Jinyi Guards were considered as a monstrous presence in the Ming dynasty, they were also the personal guards of the Emperor. There were a large number of experts in the capital city, but only some of them could be mobilized in this peripheral region, with the strongest among them being at half-step legendary fourth stage. In fact, the strength of these experts was almost comparable to that of the fourth god. Not to mention that Ye Xiwen was presently dealing with the third god, so he couldn’t possibly be bothered by the likes of them.

Certainly, if he continued to stay here for longer, the Jinyi Guards from other places would gather here, and at that time, the situation would be different. Thankfully, Jinyi Guards didn't have their main forces readily available in the nearby regions.

Therefore, the third god must be killed as quickly as possible.

The long blade in Ye Xiwen's hand released a strong beam of light. His left hand issued an enormous aura as the Hanshan seal appeared in his hand.

Ye Xiwen's facial expression turned from ice-cold to merciless. He had made up his mind to slaughter the third god, hence there was no hesitation in his heart, and neither was he going to hold himself back.

This scene was just too terrifying, as the Mt. Tai itself was taking shape at this time.

The third god's complexion changed for the worse as this was the first time his usual dignified countenance had fallen under the wind, but he still didn't lose his confidence. His dignified demeanour had been shaken by the unexpected win of Ye Xiwen a while ago. Although he would not admit it, his confidence had been thoroughly shaken for a moment.

Ye Xiwen waved the long blade in his hands, but this time, it didn't appear to pierce the sky like usual. It was a rather mediocre slash as it seemed as if an old man had barely managed to wave the

blade in his hands.

The blade attack directly cut its way through the sky to descend upon its target.

However, the Third god couldn't interpret even the slightest bit of meaning that was hidden in Ye Xiwen's attack. The long blade appeared quite slow but in reality, it was moving very fast and had almost arrived in front of the third god.

The third god's hair fluttered frantically as the sharp blade wind blew against him.

The third god's reaction was full of resentment as he no longer dared to look down on Ye Xiwen. As soon as Ye Xiwen was ready to launch his attack, the third god had also prepared an attack of his own.

"Clang!" Soon, a melodious metal clanging sound resounded everywhere, appearing to be disseminating from the prehistoric times after having crossed the river of time.

This strike appeared rather mediocre and there was nothing strange about it either, but the blade wind it swept out was incomparably sharp.

"Puff!"

Blood splashed out from both of their bodies as they had been

simultaneously struck by blade winds. The ice-cold blade wind had torn open their flesh. Even the so-called tyrant body of Ye Xiwen had been sliced open almost instantly by the blade wind.

Ye Xiwen's wounds were a few inches deep and few feet in length. He had received terrible wounds all over his body.

However, the third god's condition was even more miserable than Ye Xiwen's. Since his body was not as strong as that of Ye Xiwen, hence the blade wind had caused deeper injuries on his body, reaching all the way to his bones.

Ye Xiwen sneered and suddenly, the phoenix regeneration technique started repairing his wounds. The third god was also restoring the wound on his body, but the healing rate was far less than that of Ye Xiwen's.

Although his wounds had started to heal as well, it was nothing like the way Ye Xiwen had healed his wounds within a few breaths' time. Not just that, his battle strength had also been restored to the peak.

"Die!" Ye Xiwen roared as his whole body appeared like a vast ocean, as if rushing forward to topple the mountains and overturn the seas.

With a burst of golden energy beneath his feet, Ye Xiwen instantly unleashed his long blade and rushed towards the third god. Although the third god had not yet recovered, he just didn't have a way out of this precarious situation because Ye Xiwen had

already attacked.

At this time, Ye Xiwen went all out. Since the third god was already wounded, it was important to kill him off once and for all.

“Bang!” Summoned by the Hanshan seal, a huge mountain took shape in the sky all of a sudden and fell directly upon the third god.

“Bang!” The third god got smashed as his flesh and blood splashed out everywhere. His left hand, which he had used to block the incoming attack, was completely broken.



# Chapter 319: Utter Annihilation

---

The battle between both the sides took a tragic turn, and the third god's flesh was split open. However, even Ye Xiwen was not in a good condition, as the third god's long blade had caused severe wounds on his body from which blood was spilling out.

The attacks from both the sides had caused cuts and bruises on their bodies. However, none of them were ready to step back. The third god had lost his two brothers in the hands of Ye Xiwen and hated him for that. Also, Ye Xiwen eagerly wanted to get out of that place at any cost. It didn't matter to him whether he got hurt or had to hurt in order to escape.

Meanwhile, Ye Xiwen's phoenix regeneration technique began to operate frantically. The loud cries of phoenixes could be heard coming from his body.

Finally, his strength was restored to the peak. He slashed with his blade and the 'full moon creative concept' was displayed in the sky before it began to descend upon the vast earth. It seemed as if the laws of the world itself were turning upside down.

Although the third god's flesh was split open, he was still as brave as ever. With immense hatred in his heart for Ye Xiwen, he swept his blade out, displaying his blade skill at its utmost. It was obvious that no other expert of half-step legendary fourth stage would have been able to survive this attack except Ye Xiwen. And, if it was not for Ye Xiwen's tyrannical body and phoenix regeneration technique to aid him, perhaps even he would have been chopped down already by the third god's blade attack.

However, because of this, it was very important to kill him within the shortest span of time. Therefore, Ye Xiwen could not afford to drag on any longer.

Both of them had to kill each other's conviction mercilessly. Their blades had pierced into each other's bodies and blood was gushing out from the wounds. The situation was so tragic that everyone had held their breaths.

Was it possible that if they had exchanged their places, they would have blocked this kind of attack?

Actually, these two were not merely fighting, but they were fighting to kill each other.

The scene made everyone feel a chill running down their spine.

However, in the end, Ye Xiwen's phoenix regeneration technique began to operate miraculously, and in an instant, he reached his peak condition. The third god soon fell into a disadvantageous position. His body was not as powerful as the tyrannical body of Ye Xiwen, not to mention that Ye Xiwen had been constantly maintaining his combat strength at its peak. Moreover, because of the continuous collisions, the third god had already been severely injured and the increasing gap between their battle efficiencies was now visible to everyone.

Ye Xiwen instantly broke through the space and rushed towards the third god like a powerful golden tide, as if to engulf everything.

The long blade held in Ye Xiwen's hand suddenly turned into a golden dragon which then soared along with the golden tides.

Ye Xiwen tried to give the third god a fatal blow so that he could score the winning point.

The third god also had some kind of healing technique. Although his technique was inferior to the Phoenix regeneration technique, the recovery rate was not very slow. Right now, they were basically competing on their respective ability to regenerate.

Undoubtedly, Ye Xiwen had the advantage in the healing technique, so he did not give any opportunity to the third god to stand up and fight back, and gave him the final blow.

The Third god's body was completely drenched in blood, but there was still a cold expression on his face. With immense hatred in his heart, he stared at Ye Xiwen and crazily rushed towards him.

"Boom!" Once again a terrific collision took place. The collision set off golden waves which then swept out numerous storms in a circular manner, as if to engulf everything around it.

"Clang!" Soon the sound of metal clanging could be heard, as the third god waved his long blade toward Ye Xiwen and directly shattered the space in the process.

This was a ferocious battle which caused the blood to drip everywhere from their bodies. It was really a tragic battle.

“Die” Ye Xiwen looked coldly at the third god as the long blade continued to dance in his hands.

“Stop!” At this time, from the other side, the Jinyi Young master was watching the battle. He was concerned with the battle not because he had good intentions or anything, but because he had seen the terror of Ye Xiwen. And, if he would let Ye Xiwen kill the third god, then Ye Xiwen definitely would turn toward them after that. Therefore, he had no option other than rescuing the third god at this time.

All the members of the Jinyi Guards, one after another, charged towards Ye Xiwen, and along with them, the remaining masters of the Army of God also rushed towards him.

Perhaps, a group of half-step legendary realm or legendary realm experts together might not be able to kill Ye Xiwen, but at least they must stop him from killing the third god. As everyone knew that only the third god could compete with Ye Xiwen, and once he was dead, they would completely lose their hope.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

Numerous attacks swept towards Ye Xiwen, but none of them

could hurt him. Suddenly, a red curtain appeared around him, and those attacks could not damage his body even a bit. This clearly was the effect of Tianyuan mirror.

Ye Xiwen directly rushed toward the third god. At this time, his golden robe was completely drenched in blood, and the wounds on his body were spilling blood in all directions.

Perhaps, in his expeditions of all those years, this was the first time when the third god had been beaten so miserably. Even among his peers, no one could hurt him to this extent. And, even when he used to fight with the first and the second god, definitely not to kill, he still had never been defeated so miserably.

Ye Xiwen swept out his long blade, and although it looked slow, it was very fast in reality. And in the blink of an eye, it appeared right in front of the third god.

The third god didn't have his long blade and he could not block the attack without it. Neither could he compete with Ye Xiwen's tyrannical body, therefore, it was simply impossible for him to resist.

"Puchi!" Ye Xiwen's long blade without any hindrance directly cut the third god into two halves.

His blood splashed out and pieces of his bones fell from the sky. Finally, the famous third god had been killed by Ye Xiwen.

Everyone who saw the battle, was stunned. They could not believe that the third god had lost the battle, and not only just lost, but had actually been killed by Ye Xiwen.

This was not the same as everyone had expected. In their imagination, the third god should have easily defeated Ye Xiwen because if Ye Xiwen was the rising star in the world of martial arts, then the third god had remained famous for many years.

But, the reality was something else. Such a famous master had been killed by Ye Xiwen. Moreover, he had been run over by the absolute strength of Ye Xiwen. There was no planning or schemes involved in the battle. He was killed just because Ye Xiwen was more powerful than him.

So, did that mean the third god was not strong? No, he was strong. However, even an expert of half-step legendary fourth stage like him could not be the opponent of Ye Xiwen, and died without being able to stop even a move.

Such a strongman had been killed by Ye Xiwen had been reduced to a pile of bones. And, in addition to this, a strong image of Ye Xiwen had spread in the outside world.

Many people's heart shivered. They witnessed the defeat of a top master of the younger generation who was killed and defeated terribly and did not have even a bit of luck by his side throughout the battle.

The road of martial arts was very cruel. On this road, the

geniuses were like ants, and even the so-called peerless genius was only a bit stronger than the rest of ants. One could always come across formidable masters and the peerless rivals, who were always eager to excel. These reasons clearly indicated how much difficult it was to tread on this road.

Suddenly, a burst of cold wind blew, setting off an endless bloody atmosphere in all directions.

Ye Xiwen breathed heavily for a few times. His phoenix regeneration technique began to operate frantically and his countenance again turned to normal. All the wounds on his body healed and it seemed as if he was not at all hurt in the battle

“Now, you are next!” Ye Xiwen sneered, and looked toward the Jinyi Guards and the remaining members of Army of God.

The spies of other major forces were in shock. They had seen how Ye Xiwen killed the two gods, and now they were guessing that, could it be that Ye Xiwen would also take down the Jinyi Guards in one stroke?

Was he planning to completely infuriate the Jinyi Guards?

The Jinyi Guards were unable to believe that Ye Xiwen would actually do such a thing in the illustrious Ming Empire, but for Ye Xiwen, Jinyi Guards were simply nothing. Since the two parties had no consideration to give face to each other, there was no scope left for hesitation.

War! War! War!

Ye Xiwen's long blade was brandished directly towards the Jinyi Guards. It turned into a magnificent Bladelight, forming a dazzling curtain of blades which killed all of them one by one.

This blade attack was so magnificent that it suppressed the world itself. The sword intention ran amuck and shattered the space.

Moreover, the people who had come to kill Ye Xiwen weren't weak as well. Most of the half-step legendary realm super masters could be said to have their own heritage and means. However, the Jinyi Guards who had surrounded Ye Xiwen could be described as a group of ordinary masters concentrated at one place, with the formidable masters out of the picture.

But, it was of no use, as Ye Xiwen had suppressed their morale. It was not hidden from anyone that his tyrannical gilded body was incomparable. And, with all his strength, he rushed towards the Jinyi Guards.

"Puchi!" An expert of half-step legendary second stage was directly split into two halves by Ye Xiwen. His body parts fell from the sky as his blood splashed out.

Tianyuan mirror appeared over Ye Xiwen's head and slid down a curtain of scarlet light in order to protect Ye Xiwen from the attacks of the Jinyi Guards. Now, their attacks could not hurt him even a bit.



Meanwhile, Ye Xiwen immediately chased the Jinyi Young master while the Jinyi Guards were trying to block his way. The Jinyi Young master was the real culprit, so it was impossible that Ye Xiwen would let him escape.

The Jinyi Young master saw Ye Xiwen's attack coming and immediately waved the 'mountains and rivers' fan with his hand. It exploded a huge mountain of energy which advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen snorted coldly and soon unleashed his long blade. He slashed with his blade and it directly cut the mountains and crashed into the chest of Jinyi Young master. It directly cut into his chest all the way to his ribs and opened a huge wound, from which the blood began to gush out. He was in very grim state right now.

The Jinyi Young master screamed and immediately retreated. However, how could Ye Xiwen let the enemy go? So, he immediately chased after him. At this time, the Jinyi Guards arrived one after another to the rescue of their young master. After all, Jinyi Young master was considered as a supreme existence among them.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen's figure directly crashed into the group of approaching Jinyi Guards, and an expert was immediately killed by him.

“Ah!” Ye Xiwen's Bladeqi swept out and another legendary realm master of the Jinyi Guards was cut into two halves.

# Chapter 320: The Name Spread In Ming Empire

---

“Clang!” Soon the metal clanging sound could be heard as Bladelight rushed toward the expert of the Army of God. It seemed as if it was cutting its way through the sky before it actually chopped an expert into two halves.

Ye Xiwen’s blade suddenly released huge amount of energy which swept away the warriors.

The battle between them could only be described as tragic and none of them were holding their hands. Both of them were looking to kill each other.

“Yet another one has died!” Among the spies of major forces, many masters heard the news of Ye Xiwen killing a legendary realm master. It made them hold their breath. Certainly, the death of a legendary master in the Ming Dynasty was discouraging for all other masters. However, even the masters of such level were nothing in front of Ye Xiwen as they continued to fall prey to him and fell one after another from the sky like a bunch of dumplings from a pot.

One must not forget that a master of half-step legendary realm was not like a plant which could be cut so easily. However, Ye Xiwen killed such an expert with ease.

“Go to hell!” At this time, the only remaining expert of the Army of God who was at half-step legendary second stage master burnt

his own life energy and suddenly broke through to the half-step legendary third stage. After that, he immediately rushed toward Ye Xiwen.

“Bang!” An explosion took place as that expert laid out his palm and released out a huge rolling mountain of energy, shattering the space in the process.

Ye Xiwen used his glowing golden hands to directly tear apart that huge mountain of energy.

Ye Xiwen’s big hand found its way to that expert of Army of God and pounded on his body.

“Bang!” His bones were broken as his mangled body fell from the sky. Although his body was not weak, it was nothing in front of Ye Xiwen’s palm strength that contained the tyrannical might of gilded tyrant form. Therefore, he simply couldn’t sustain the blow.

Kill!

The murderous intent could be seen in their bloodshot eyes and it seemed as if the entire sky would collapse at once. It was like the sky and the earth were turning upside down; as if it were a scene from the time when the creation of universe had taken place.

Ye Xiwen’s complexion remained the same. He had only one thing in his mind and that was to get rid of this farce and escape as soon as possible!

Everyone got stunned after watching the killing intent in Ye Xiwen's eyes. Ye Xiwen's body was strong enough to sustain the attack of even the master of half-step legendary second stage. And, the attacks from those masters of half-step legendary realm and half-step legendary second stage simply could not hurt him.

With the might of gilded tyrant form, even one strike of a palm could slice off a mountain. Right now, Ye Xiwen had a golden appearance with golden energy surging in and around his body.

“Bang!” Finally, even the last master of the Jinyi Guards failed to escape from the hands of Ye Xiwen, and was reduced into a pile of bones in the blink of an eye.

And now, only the seriously injured Jinyi Young master remained.

However, at this time, no one could put a check on the casualties of the masters of Jinyi Guards and the Army of God. Today, those spies of the major forces clearly got to see an apocalyptic scene.

After this war, Ye Xiwen would definitely become famous. In addition to this, he was sure to be ranked among the top masters of the younger generation.

The last remaining expert's body exploded as his splashed out. It was like a rain of blood from the sky.

“So terrible, this Ye Xiwen is extremely frightening. He has not only killed three gods of the Army of God, but even the Jinyi Young master would probably die at his hands. This time, Ye Xiwen has really pierced the heaven!”

“Yes, but I’m afraid that the Jinyi Guards would be really furious after this. I wonder why their deputy commander has not arrived yet.”

“Well, I am more curious about his inheritance. Don’t tell me it is as hard to deal with as that one page of the Ancient God Scriptures!”

“I can tell that his fortuitous encounters are not limited to that one page of Ancient God Scripture, as he can simply restore his strength and wounds continuously using some kind of secret technique, which is something far more important than that one page of Ancient God Scripture!”

“Yes, and his body as well, I do not believe that his body is naturally that tough. He has definitely used some kind of method to toughen his body. He is just like a moving treasure trove and once news about it spreads out, he will not have a single peaceful day in his lifetime!”

“Hey, in fact, each and every one of these god’s favored geniuses experience fortuitous encounters in their life, but no one gets to know what kind of treasures they obtain in the end. However, the most important thing is that Ye Xiwen has bullied other people and especially those who have strong backings. It is said that he belongs to a small sect from one of the ten southeastern countries.

Isn't he an ideal choice for bullying?"

"To emerge from such a small place of the Southeastern region and have such a combat power is purely a matter of talent which can stun the world. And, if he doesn't fall in the future, he will definitely become one of the top masters of the southeastern region!"

"However, it's not easy to survive on this road as this road is famous as 'the road of death'. In the last many years, many geniuses have fallen on this road. Each and every inch of this road is literally paved with the bones of the fallen geniuses. In order to enhance one's cultivation by leaps and bounds, these geniuses would only get a timeframe of a year. Of course, only the so-called exceptional geniuses could walk on this road and strive to grow powerful!"

Ye Xiwen instantly arrived in front of Jinyi Young master and released huge amounts of golden Zhen Yuan, dazzling the entire sky in the process. In the sky, there appeared a huge Hanshan seal which was in the shape of a massive mountain. Immediately after that, this huge mountain of energy swept down towards Jinyi Young master.

"Bang!" Jinyi Young master's body was smashed down and he fell down from the sky.

Finally, Jinyi Young master had also died in the hands of Ye Xiwen.

“Boy, you have courted death!” As soon as Ye Xiwen killed the Jinyi Young master, a loud sonic boom transmitted from the horizon and a huge hand advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen’s was startled in his heart, and he immediately opened his devil wings and dodged to one side in order to avoid getting struck by that attack which could have killed him in one blow.

“Boom!” That big gasified hand instantly pounded on the ground and left a big handprint on it. It was an unusually terrifying scene.

“Ye Xiwen, you must hurry up and get out of here!” Ye Mo shouted immediately, “Now the enemy is still far away from us. If they manage to catch up with us, you would be in big trouble!”

Ye Xiwen nodded, then immediately flapped his golden devil wings and flew straight towards the horizon like a streamer of golden light. It seemed from the attack that the enemy was at least an expert of profound legendary realm; Ye Xiwen was definitely not his opponent. If this enemy’s attack from so far away could be this terrifying, if they managed to get close to Ye Xiwen then he would certainly be in big trouble.

-----

At this time, the Ming Empire was in a state of turmoil. The death of the three Gods and the Jin Young master had added fuel to the fire. It seemed as if everyone had suddenly turned furious.

All three Gods had been killed off in one breath and even the Jin Young master, who had been specifically trained by 'Jinyi Guards' had died a pitiful death in battle. These two forces comprised of a total of two hundred people and none of them were ordinary experts. Many of those were actually the so-called extraordinary sons, coming from thousands of prestigious clans of the Ming Dynasty. Although the masters of the Army of God were not so famous, they still had several young rising stars under the age of 50; who had managed to reach half-step legendary realm and even legendary realm. In other places, such a genius would be given utmost importance, but here, he was obscured in the dazzling rays of so many geniuses.

While considering small countries like the ten countries of southeast region, an army comprising of such combat power would be enough to wipe out an entire country.

However, even the masters of such caliber had died in the hands of Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen used to be a famous expert earlier, but he became well-known on this road after beating the fifth god. However, even after that, his fame remained limited in the vicinity of Yongan City.

However, even in the vicinity of Yongan city, his fame remained quite short-lived. In fact, for a majority of people, he was simply nothing.

However, also for a person like Ye Xiwen to kill hundreds of experts of half-step legendary realm and legendary realm alike, was a great achievement.



Suddenly, Ye Xiwen's name spread everywhere in the Ming Empire.

“Did you hear what happened to that domineering Army of God? Out of the five great gods, three are already dead. Moreover, all three of them died in the hands of the same person!”

“These five gods used to be the top masters of the younger generation and Ye Xiwen unexpectedly killed three of them in one go. Don't you feel that this Ye Xiwen is really going against the heaven's will?”

“I must say that this guy has established his position among the top players of the younger generation.”

For a moment, everyone was a bit concerned and was talking about this fierce young master. As everyone had expected, the Army of God and the Jinyi Guards issued an arrest warrant for Ye Xiwen. They declared that whoever would catch Ye Xiwen would get a lot of rewards.

Army of God had gone out of its way to announce that as long as Ye Xiwen was killed, they would not inquire about the Ancient God Scriptures.

Though nobody took the Army of God's declaration seriously, after all, if anyone were to kill Ye Xiwen, then they would undoubtedly keep the Ancient God Scripture for themselves.

However, with this announcement, at least no one would need to worry about the consequences of seizing the Ancient God Scriptures from Ye Xiwen, because the Army of God would not come looking for trouble.

Suddenly, several forces joined together to catch Ye Xiwen.

Apart from the Jinyi Guards and the members of the Army of God, many other small and large forces were trying to encircle Ye Xiwen, so that they could get their hands on the legendary Ancient God Scriptures. It was not a secret that one could use this treasure to enhance one's cultivation by a step.

These people were part of the Ming Empire. In fact, some forces of other empires had also turned up in the Ming Empire to catch Ye Xiwen.

Although Ye Xiwen had the ability to elude, it was difficult for him to remain invisible for long time.

Ye Xiwen killed a large number of experts for three whole days, but on the third day, he was ambushed by the Jinyi Guards in a small town. After a protracted battle, Ye Xiwen escaped again after having murdered all of the experts who had encircled him.

Ten days later, Ye Xiwen was ambushed by a group of Dongchang experts. However, he continued to kill those experts one after another, though he sustained a serious head injury when he was struck by an enemy in his head. In the end, he managed to escape

from there but with severe injuries.

# Chapter 321: Famous All The Way

---

After the head injury caused by Dongchang's expert, Ye Xiwen had disappeared for a total of three months. However, three months later, he resurfaced and was again intercepted by one of the experts of Jinyi Guards. This time, the Jinyi Guards had sent an expert who was actually at Small Complete legendary realm. He had personally led a group of experts to encircle and kill Ye Xiwen, but in the end he himself was actually killed by Ye Xiwen.

After this incident, Ye Xiwen had really stirred up the whole country; he was also being considered as the most talented figure of the younger generation now, just like the first god, the second god and others. Not just that, many people also felt that in the entire Southern region, he could now be ranked among the first-class experts.

After having killed and beheaded a lot of experts of Jinyi Guards, wherever Ye Xiwen went, he kept on killing all the way; it could be said that the way to his destination had become a bloody battle for him. Even several people from other empires also started coming over, especially to seize the Ancient God Scriptures from him.

Some of them were above the level of Small Complete realm. So, for Ye Xiwen, escaping their murderous chase had almost become like a fight to death situation. He even bumped into the deputy commander of Jinyi Guards once; he was a very terrifying person of half-step Sage Realm.

And this particular war contributed greatly to the rising popularity of Ye Xiwen all across the country. However, people

actually looked askance regarding his combat strength because although he could not turn out victorious in that fight, he still fought to death before managing to escape. Even though that war was seen by countless people where they also saw a very dreary scene of how Ye Xiwen was split into two halves; however, in the end he successfully escaped from the hands of an expert of half-step Sage Realm. This was sufficient enough to suddenly send his fame skyrocketing all around. Even those who weren't in his favor, they also admitted that he was indeed a ridiculously strong opponent in the younger generation.

Furthermore, it had also become publicly known that Ye Xiwen might have practiced an unparalleled body refining technique, because the body of an average expert couldn't withstand attacks repeatedly. Even if an expert of half-step legendary seventh or eighth stage was to suffer attacks from an expert of half-step Sage Realm, he would be thoroughly annihilated.

Ye Xiwen's insanely tyrannical body was enough to baffle so many people. And this news also became the reason for him being chased by many forces.

In addition to this, the rumors about that one page of Ancient God Scriptures as well as the ancient body refining technique spread everywhere. And many also spread the rumor that Ye Xiwen had a supreme restoration type power technique.

This also stirred up many people as they literally went berserk!

In this process, several top masters of the young generation had also tried to dig out information about Ye Xiwen's whereabouts so

as to capture him along with his treasures. However, not only were they all eventually butchered by Ye Xiwen, they also helped in further raising Ye Xiwen's popularity all the more.

After having escaped from a half-step Sage Realm expert, Ye Xiwen had already gotten close to True Martial University and that also in just one and a half month.

A large number of experts of the younger generation had eventually concluded their trips and were rushing to TMU in large groups.

Tianhui City was located in the Qin Empire, but it was actually not managed by the Qin administration. Standing erect on this piece of land, this city had already amassed a history of ten thousand years; this kind of long-established history was enough to give people goosebumps..

As for the origin of Tianhui city, no one could say anything clearly about it, but it was reported that the person who laid its foundation was a great personage; besides, it was also said that a disciple of TMU had founded it ten thousand years ago.

Even though Tianhui city was in the territory of Qin Empire, it was a very big and lively city. It was also located at the confluence of three ancient roads in the Qin Empire; and after passing through this convergence point if one continued along the road, then one would soon reach True Martial City.

This was also the prime objective behind Ye Xiwen's coming to

Tianhui city, because this was the only city he could now take a break in. Although he was away from the Ming Empire for the last two months and presently was in the Qin Empire, the news that he possessed exceptional secret techniques had widely spread everywhere; these three ancient roads were no exception either. Therefore, the idea of snatching the ancient scripture from him was not just limited to the Ming Empire because the Qin Emperor had also stated his desire to obtain that page of Ancient God Scripture.

In the event of Ye Xiwen setting his foot in any of the cities of the Qin Empire, he would be immediately chased down; and this road precisely turned out to be the most brutal place for him. Although he had been having fortuitous encounters repeatedly, the entire journey had remained filled with dangers as well. However, if it hadn't been the case, it would have been impossible for him to gain such huge benefits during this past year.

If anyone would see Ye Xiwen's present appearance, he would instantly notice that his forehead had started graying along with the appearance of wrinkles. And though he was still dressed in battered clothes, his overall appearance had definitely changed a lot.

This was in fact the side effect of Phoenix Regeneration Technique. During this entire journey, Ye Xiwen had experienced so many bloody battles that he could not even reckon all of them. It could be said that he had been killing all the way. There were several people who craved for the Ancient God Scriptures but one after another, all had been killed by Ye Xiwen.

Plenty of times, Ye Xiwen had escaped death, especially the last time when he had barely escaped from an expert of half-step Sage Realm. That time, he had almost died. Those who hadn't faced the terrifying power of such an expert would never understand it. However, thanks to this fight, he had caught the attention of the Qin Empire's powerhouses. And as a consequence, they were scared away just based on the thought that if such a great expert of half-step Sage Realm couldn't harm Ye Xiwen, then how could they possibly stand any chance? This way, Ye Xiwen had managed to avoid such a disaster.

Even so, his body had almost been cracked into pieces, and if it were not for Ye Mo who towed him away with the help of Tianyuan mirror, he probably wouldn't have survived.

The devil wings had been imparted to him by Ye Mo, so he could naturally escape very fast on his own as well. Before the experts of Qin Empire could show up to capture Ye Xiwen, they needed to escape from there as quickly as possible. At that time, it was Ye Mo who had moved into action and quickly dragged Ye Xiwen along to escape.

Only in that one battle, it could be said that almost 10 people were killed and there never was any possibility of their survival. However, Ye Xiwen had to rely on Phoenix Regeneration Technique to survive, though it ended up imparting him with his current appearance of someone who was suffering from premature aging.

It was just a 20-year-old's appearance, but his forehead was already graying and the life essence within his body had started



showing the signs of depletion. This was the so-called side effect of overusing Phoenix Regeneration Technique. Even if Ye Xiwen was under the clutch of such a big side effect, he was still as enthusiastic as before. This was not enough to make him give up.

He had arrived in Tianhui City with the intention of solving the shortcomings of Phoenix Regeneration Technique, and, thus, he immediately wanted to look for some herbal medicines in accordance with the ones he had found from the tomb of the flood dragon, in order to create a Longevity Dan which could help in supplementing his exhausted life essence.

The lack of life essence was the reason that he had already been stuck in the half-step legendary fourth stage for the last two months. It didn't mean that whatever he had accumulated so far was insufficient, but since his life essence was inadequate, he was getting old and that too extremely fast.

Although half-step legendary realm had contaminated the reputation of the legendary realm, if someone couldn't achieve the legendary level, they could still achieve the strength of legendary realm even while being in the half-step legendary realm. However, right now, what he couldn't achieve was the lifespan of legendary realm.

Originally, the lifespan of Ye Xiwen used to be more than 500 years, but since he had consumed a massive amount of life essence recently, which was supposed to be converted into his lifespan, therefore, now he was almost equivalent to a person of nearly 400 years old. In other words, he could now be considered as very old.

As for why people preferred young talent over old ones, the answer was quite simple - it was because in young age, vitality is exuberant with sufficient life essence along with infinite possibilities, which are enough to support one's life and help one breakthrough to higher levels.

The older a person would be, the greater the difficulty he would face in having breakthroughs. The same happened with Ye Xiwen; now the age of his body was four hundred years old, so breaking through to the half-step legendary fifth stage was highly unlikely for him.

Although presently he could maintain his fighting strength at the peak of Small Complete legendary realm, it had still become very difficult for him to have a breakthrough. In fact, it could be said that it had become literally impossible for him. Therefore, he must find a way to supplement his life essence which he had lost so far. In case he really replenished his lost lifespan, he would finally regain the possibility of having further breakthroughs.

Although he had the formula to concoct a Longevity Dan, he hadn't actually begun the preparation because he just had a few herbs required to concoct one. However, fortunately the ones he had were the main ingredients while the rest could be found easily. However, the only thing that was stopping him was a medicinal product called Tianyuan fruit.

It was very important to have a Tianyuan fruit to concoct Longevity Dan. However, these fruits were getting rarer now a days, as a consequence of which the Longevity Dan had ended up becoming a legendary drug.

In case Ye Xiwen couldn't find the Tianyuan fruit, he would then try to use only the available ingredients to increase his lifespan; however, the effect would be naturally far less. If it wasn't absolutely necessary, he wouldn't waste those ingredients like that.

Tianhui City was the number one bustling establishment in the Great Qin Empire along with a huge trading market of its own which was also quite famous for often having a lot of good things to buy.

As soon as Ye Xiwen entered Tianhui city, he directly went to find Tianhui City's largest Chamber of Commerce. He had already inquired about it and knew that this Chamber of Commerce was the largest in the city. It was reported that Tianyuan City had the support of city's main government from behind, so no one dared to underestimate the city's famous Chamber of Commerce. The story didn't end here, because this Tianhui Chamber of Commerce was reckoned to be the best out there in the entire Qin Empire.

Ye Xiwen barely strode in when there came an attendant to greet him: "Welcome to Tianhui Chamber of Commerce. How can I help you?"

Ye Xiwen nodded slightly; finally he had reached the so-called number one Chamber of Commerce. Although he was in ordinary attire or it could be said that he looked somewhat shabby, still the other side didn't express any disgust; at least on the surface he did not express anything.

"I would like to sell a few herbs in your Chamber of Commerce, but I don't know who would come to receive it. Can you point me in the right direction?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Respectable gentleman, I don't know what kind of herbs you want to sell here, but we don't accept common medicinal herbs." The attendant clarified, after all, considering the financial resources of Tianhui Chamber of Commerce, common medicinal herbs certainly weren't of any value to them.

"Is dragon grass good enough?" Ye Xiwen asked.

The moment the attendant heard that, he was suddenly startled and said: "Sir, do you really have dragon grass?"

Ye Xiwen nodded and thought in his heart that this place was really amazing because the name of dragon grass was even unknown to several warriors; however, this attendant not only knew about it, but it seemed that he also knew that it was a highly expensive and extraordinary item.

"Gentleman, please wait for a moment. I will ask our shopkeeper to come!" The attendant said promptly.

## Chapter 322: 5 Million Ling Dans

---

The attendant requested Ye Xiwen to wait in the hall and went upstairs to inform the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce.

After a while, a middle aged man dressed in a robe came out with the attendant and said, “Excuse me for making you wait for so long. I am the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce, Xia Chen!”

“Xia Chen!” Ye Xiwen said and cupped his hands in greeting.

“So how should I address you, gentleman?” Xia Chen asked.

“My surname is Wen.” Ye Xiwen didn’t tell his full name and nor did Xia Chen asked it again. Obviously, everyone had their own secrets and as long as the business deal remained genuine, everything else was fine.

“I do not know what Mr. Wen said about the dragon grass?” Xia Chen asked.

Ye Xiwen pulled out dragon-shaped grass from the void. It was dark green in color and a puff of smoke could be seen clouding around it. It released a group of Lingqi into the surroundings; and even one single puff of its fragrance could fully open one’s arteries.

“This really is dragon grass!” Xia Chen said in a trembling voice.

Although dragon grass was not the most expensive item, it was definitely very rare because it could only be grown inside a dragon's territory. Even though this dragon grass had grown in a flood dragon's cave, it was still a rare treasure. After all, the dragon grass related to the true dragons only existed in the fables.

“Moreover, this is a second grade dragon grass!” Xia Chen was surprised as he looked at Ye Xiwen. He did not expect that Ye Xiwen would actually have a second grade dragon grass.

Although dragon grass was considered a very rare treasure, since ancient times, a lot of people had been able to find a way to cultivate it. The dragon grass could only be grown inside a dragon territory and Dragonqi was also required for growing it. Therefore, even if one had the seed itself, the dragon grass could not be grown.

So, they thought of a way and captured a lot of demon beasts who possessed the blood vessels of dragons within themselves. That was how they had managed to cultivate rare herbs like dragon grass and various other dragon related medicinal herbs. However, even though those demon beasts had the dragon's blood vessels, they weren't real dragons after all. One must not forget that there was a huge difference between a real dragon and a flood dragon.

Moreover, the quality of the dragon grass was also divided into different grades based on their age and nurturing. Dragon grass was divided into nine grades, with the ones of first grade being of best quality, while the ones of ninth grade were the most inferior.

Although the first grade dragon grass was the best, it was already

considered as a legendary medicinal herb by the people. The best quality dragon grass could only be grown near the lair of a true dragon. Whereas the second grade dragon grass could be grown near the lair of a flood dragon that shared a close bloodline with real dragons. Indeed, a second grade dragon grass could not be compared with a dragon grass of first grade; it was still a very rare treasure to come across.

One must know that once a flood dragon was born in the legendary realm, its growth would be very fast and it would reach adulthood very soon, reaching Sage Realm at the end of it. And if someone dared to plunder the lair of a Sage level flood dragon, then was it not equivalent to courting death? This was the reason why second grade dragon grass was such a rare herb.

In the ancient times, only famous experts were said to have obtained second grade dragon grass, not to mention that only a few experts would usually get the chance to obtain one and that too with great difficulty. No wonder then that the dragon grass in Ye Xiwen's hand had amazed Xia Chen.

He was a very old man and had been the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce for a very long time, so the surprised expression that had flashed on his face a while ago didn't last long.

Everyone had their own secrets, and it was not considered a good practice to probe into others' secrets.

"Xia Chen, what do you think about this dragon grass? Is it good?" Ye Xiwen asked.

“It is excellent, I must say!” Xia Chen didn’t want to praise the dragon grass too much as he further said, “Would you like to sell it to us?”

“I was thinking of auctioning it here in your auction house, however, if you will give me the right price, I would love to sell it to you right now.” Ye Xiwen said.

“Really? If Mr. Wen would like to sell this dragon grass to us right now, then we would certainly give the most reasonable price for it and would not let Mr. Wen suffer an early loss!” Xia Chen was pleasantly surprised as he said that. He knew that if Ye Xiwen would have sold this dragon grass in the auction, then it would have slipped away from his hands. Moreover, the news of the appearance of a second grade dragon grass would have definitely attracted the attention of city’s strongest masters.

It was certainly one of the best opportunities to draw in tourists and more potential customers. But Tianhui Chamber of Commerce had been in operation for thousands of years; they didn’t need to resort to such a stunt to gain popularity.

A lot of people would be interested in buying this second grade dragon grass, so Tianhui Chamber of Commerce would probably wait for the right time to reveal it to the world. In any case, money was not an issue for the Chamber of Commerce, all thanks to its deep foundation of thousands of years as well as its profound accumulation of resources.



Ye Xiwen decided to sell it directly instead selling it at the auction because he couldn't afford to expose himself. Not to mention that his recent exploits had made him quite popular in the region. The sheer number of treasures he possessed could make anyone go crazy.

Therefore, even if he was getting a bit less amount of money for the dragon grass, he didn't care.

“We would give 5 million Ling Dans for this second grade dragon grass. However, if you would sell it in the auction, you may get up to 6 or 7 million Ling Dans!” Xie Chen said.

“That is fine, but I want it right away!” Ye Xiwen nodded.

Xia Chen immediately threw a small bag filled with 5 million Ling Dans towards Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen used his soul search skill and verified the quality and quantity of the Ling Dans. He was impressed by its supreme quality. He smiled and said. “Also, I would also like to entrust your Chamber of Commerce to help me in buying some medicinal herbs!”

“What kind of medicinal herbs do you want?” Xia Chen asked and continued, “We may not be the strongest Chamber of Commerce, but you will still find a lot of herbs here!”

“I want to buy Tianyuan fruit, and this and that...” Ye Xiwen had prepared a list of herbs and spoke out all the names of the herbs one after another.

“The other herbs are not difficult to get, but the production of Tianyuan fruit has decreased in the last two years!” Xia Chen said.

Ye Xiwen frowned. Although he had expected this earlier, he still felt disappointed. Tianyuan fruit was a very important ingredient. Even though there were many alternatives to it, but their effects were nothing like it.

“Although we don’t have it in our inventory, you may find it in the city’s giant market. You can go there and look for things that you need. You will find several warriors in the market who keep all kinds of stuff, and whatever you can’t get outside can be easily found in the market.” Xia Chen said. There was a sinister look in his eyes as he said this. He already knew that Ye Xiwen was not someone from this city.

“Thank you for pointing me in the right direction. However, how much will these other herbs cost?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“Well, considers these herbs as gifts which we would like to give to Mr. Wen!” Xia Chen said in a generous tone. Ye Xiwen had made a business of 5 million Ling Dans and the combined cost of these ordinary herbs was nothing in comparison to that. In fact, the overall cost of these herbs would not even amount to 1 Ling Dan.

“If that’s the case, then thank you!” Ye Xiwen knew that both of them were looking for personal profits and this was definitely not a favor from Xia Chen.

“Since the transaction is already complete, I will take my leave

no!” Ye Xiwen said.

“Take care!”

Xia Chen looked at Ye Xiwen’s back profile as he was leaving the place. Xia Chen then went to the second floor and opened the door to a room. There was tall woman inside the room who was looking outside the window. She appeared to be in her twenties, had a beautiful face, red lips, jade-like teeth and a pretty nose that was complimenting her overall beauty. Her big eyes were emitting brilliance. She was clad in a yellow robe and looked just like a fairy.

“Miss, I have followed your orders!” Xia Chen said in a respectful manner.

“Good!” The woman replied in a melodious tone.

“I just have one doubt, if I may ask. Since we have found out that that person is Ye Xiwen, then why not...” If Ye Xiwen was here, then he would certainly be shocked. He would be surprised to know that since meeting the attendant to sealing the deal with Xia Chen, not even a quarter of an hour had passed, but his identity had still been discovered.

One could imagine the influence of the Chamber of Commerce.

“And like others, do you also want to intercept him for the sake of one page of Ancient God Scripture?” The woman smiled and

said, “This is not how we operate here at Tianhui Chamber of Commerce. Our motto is to keep getting rich while maintaining cordial relations with all!”

“Indeed! That is absolutely right, Miss.” Xia Chen quickly nodded and said.

“You have read the news about Ye Xiwen and his killing sprees, right? So many people have tried to kill him but ultimately they all died at his hands!” The woman continued, “Some people are very stupid because they just cannot seem to understand a simple point that these top-notch geniuses have emerged victorious from their respective regional competitions, then how can they possibly be ordinary? In fact, some of them have already been noticed by the elder brothers in TMU. Sooner or later, they would join TMU and make contacts with a lot of formidable experts there. In the end, these young geniuses would become invincible masters. I already have detailed files on some of these young geniuses, Ye Xiwen being one of them. I can already tell that in the future, Ye Xiwen would certainly become my junior disciple. Like they say, beat the snake to death or it will cause endless calamity; if we failed to kill him now, then think about the amount of energy and resources we might have to spend in the future to get rid of him. It would be too costly, simply not worth the effort!”

“Only those fools do not know and think that since TMU recruits new disciples only once in hundred years, so they must take advantage of this event to killing those geniuses and gain a lot of benefits. In fact, several clans have flourished because of this twisted grinding of young talents, while, at the same time, many clans also perished at the hands of those young geniuses. Those fools must consider the fact that these young geniuses would one

day become formidable masters of TMU and may enter Sage Realm in the future. When that happens, they would surely come back to seek revenge. If you fail to kill them now, you must be prepared to face their wrath later on. I have heard that Ye Xiwen too has single-handedly destroyed an entire clan to take revenge. Therefore, let them fight while we watch from the sidelines!” The woman said in a cold voice.

“Yes Miss!”

-----

5 million Ling Dans

The attendant requested Ye Xiwen to wait in the hall and went upstairs to inform the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce.

After a while, a middle aged man dressed in a robe came out with the attendant and said, “Excuse me for making you wait for so long. I am the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce, Xia Chen!”

“Xia Chen!” Ye Xiwen said and cupped his hands in greeting.

“So how should I address you, gentleman?” Xia Chen asked.

“My surname is Wen.” Ye Xiwen didn’t tell his full name and nor did Xia Chen asked it again. Obviously, everyone had their own

secrets and as long as the business deal remained genuine, everything else was fine.

“I do not know what Mr. Wen said about the dragon grass?” Xia Chen asked.

Ye Xiwen pulled out dragon-shaped grass from the void. It was dark green in color and a puff of smoke could be seen clouding around it. It released a group of Lingqi into the surroundings; and even one single puff of its fragrance could fully open one’s arteries.

“This really is dragon grass!” Xia Chen said in a trembling voice. Although dragon grass was not the most expensive item, it was definitely very rare because it could only be grown inside a dragon’s territory. Even though this dragon grass had grown in a flood dragon’s cave, it was still a rare treasure. After all, the dragon grass related to the true dragons only existed in the fables.

“Moreover, this is a second grade dragon grass!” Xia Chen was surprised as he looked at Ye Xiwen. He did not expect that Ye Xiwen would actually have a second grade dragon grass.

Although dragon grass was considered a very rare treasure, since ancient times, a lot of people had been able to find a way to cultivate it. The dragon grass could only be grown inside a dragon territory and Dragonqi was also required for growing it. Therefore, even if one had the seed itself, the dragon grass could not be grown.

So, they thought of a way and captured a lot of demon beasts who

possessed the blood vessels of dragons within themselves. That was how they had managed to cultivate rare herbs like dragon grass and various other dragon related medicinal herbs. However, even though those demon beasts had the dragon's blood vessels, they weren't real dragons after all. One must not forget that there was a huge difference between a real dragon and a flood dragon.

Moreover, the quality of the dragon grass was also divided into different grades based on their age and nurturing. Dragon grass was divided into nine grades, with the ones of first grade being of best quality, while the ones of ninth grade were the most inferior.

Although the first grade dragon grass was the best, it was already considered as a legendary medicinal herb by the people. The best quality dragon grass could only be grown near the lair of a true dragon. Whereas the second grade dragon grass could be grown near the lair of a flood dragon that shared a close bloodline with real dragons. Indeed, a second grade dragon grass could not be compared with a dragon grass of first grade; it was still a very rare treasure to come across.

One must know that once a flood dragon was born in the legendary realm, its growth would be very fast and it would reach adulthood very soon, reaching Sage Realm at the end of it. And if someone dared to plunder the lair of a Sage level flood dragon, then was it not equivalent to courting death? This was the reason why second grade dragon grass was such a rare herb.

In the ancient times, only famous experts were said to have obtained second grade dragon grass, not to mention that only a few experts would usually get the chance to obtain one and that too

with great difficulty. No wonder then that the dragon grass in Ye Xiwen's hand had amazed Xia Chen.

He was a very old man and had been the chief shopkeeper of the Chamber of Commerce for a very long time, so the surprised expression that had flashed on his face a while ago didn't last long.

Everyone had their own secrets, and it was not considered a good practice to probe into others' secrets.

"Xia Chen, what do you think about this dragon grass? Is it good?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"It is excellent, I must say!" Xia Chen didn't want to praise the dragon grass too much as he further said, "Would you like to sell it to us?"

"I was thinking of auctioning it here in your auction house, however, if you will give me the right price, I would love to sell it to you right now." Ye Xiwen said.

"Really? If Mr. Wen would like to sell this dragon grass to us right now, then we would certainly give the most reasonable price for it and would not let Mr. Wen suffer an early loss!" Xia Chen was pleasantly surprised as he said that. He knew that if Ye Xiwen would have sold this dragon grass in the auction, then it would have slipped away from his hands. Moreover, the news of the appearance of a second grade dragon grass would have definitely attracted the attention of city's strongest masters.



It was certainly one of the best opportunities to draw in tourists and more potential customers. But Tianhui Chamber of Commerce had been in operation for thousands of years; they didn't need to resort to such a stunt to gain popularity.

A lot of people would be interested in buying this second grade dragon grass, so Tianhui Chamber of Commerce would probably wait for the right time to reveal it to the world. In any case, money was not an issue for the Chamber of Commerce, all thanks to its deep foundation of thousands of years as well as its profound accumulation of resources.

Ye Xiwen decided to sell it directly instead selling it at the auction because he couldn't afford to expose himself. Not to mention that his recent exploits had made him quite popular in the region. The sheer number of treasures he possessed could make anyone go crazy.

Therefore, even if he was getting a bit less amount of money for the dragon grass, he didn't care.

"We would give 5 million Ling Dans for this second grade dragon grass. However, if you would sell it in the auction, you may get up to 6 or 7 million Ling Dans!" Xie Chen said.

"That is fine, but I want it right away!" Ye Xiwen nodded.

Xia Chen immediately threw a small bag filled with 5 million Ling Dans towards Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen used his soul search skill and verified the quality and quantity of the Ling Dans. He was

impressed by its supreme quality. He smiled and said. “Also, I would also like to entrust your Chamber of Commerce to help me in buying some medicinal herbs!”

“What kind of medicinal herbs do you want?” Xia Chen asked and continued, “We may not be the strongest Chamber of Commerce, but you will still find a lot of herbs here!”

“I want to buy Tianyuan fruit, and this and that...” Ye Xiwen had prepared a list of herbs and spoke out all the names of the herbs one after another.

“The other herbs are not difficult to get, but the production of Tianyuan fruit has decreased in the last two years!” Xia Chen said.

Ye Xiwen frowned. Although he had expected this earlier, he still felt disappointed. Tianyuan fruit was a very important ingredient. Even though there were many alternatives to it, but their effects were nothing like it.

“Although we don’t have it in our inventory, you may find it in the city’s giant market. You can go there and look for things that you need. You will find several warriors in the market who keep all kinds of stuff, and whatever you can’t get outside can be easily found in the market.” Xia Chen said. There was a sinister look in his eyes as he said this. He already knew that Ye Xiwen was not someone from this city.

“Thank you for pointing me in the right direction. However, how much will these other herbs cost?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“Well, considers these herbs as gifts which we would like to give to Mr. Wen!” Xia Chen said in a generous tone. Ye Xiwen had made a business of 5 million Ling Dans and the combined cost of these ordinary herbs was nothing in comparison to that. In fact, the overall cost of these herbs would not even amount to 1 Ling Dan.

“If that’s the case, then thank you!” Ye Xiwen knew that both of them were looking for personal profits and this was definitely not a favor from Xia Chen.

“Since the transaction is already complete, I will take my leave now!” Ye Xiwen said.

“Take care!”

Xia Chen looked at Ye Xiwen’s back profile as he was leaving the place. Xia Chen then went to the second floor and opened the door to a room. There was tall woman inside the room who was looking outside the window. She appeared to be in her twenties, had a beautiful face, red lips, jade-like teeth and a pretty nose that was complimenting her overall beauty. Her big eyes were emitting brilliance. She was clad in a yellow robe and looked just like a fairy.

“Miss, I have followed your orders!” Xia Chen said in a respectful manner.

“Good!” The woman replied in a melodious tone.

“I just have one doubt, if I may ask. Since we have found out that that person is Ye Xiwen, then why not...” If Ye Xiwen was here, then he would certainly be shocked. He would be surprised to know that since meeting the attendant to sealing the deal with Xia Chen, not even a quarter of an hour had passed, but his identity had still been discovered.

One could imagine the influence of the Chamber of Commerce.

“And like others, do you also want to intercept him for the sake of one page of Ancient God Scripture?” The woman smiled and said, “This is not how we operate here at Tianhui Chamber of Commerce. Our motto is to keep getting rich while maintaining cordial relations with all!”

“Indeed! That is absolutely right, Miss.” Xia Chen quickly nodded and said.

“You have read the news about Ye Xiwen and his killing sprees, right? So many people have tried to kill him but ultimately they all died at his hands!” The woman continued, “Some people are very stupid because they just cannot seem to understand a simple point that these top-notch geniuses have emerged victorious from their respective regional competitions, then how can they possibly be ordinary? In fact, some of them have already been noticed by the elder brothers in TMU. Sooner or later, they would join TMU and make contacts with a lot of formidable experts there. In the end, these young geniuses would become invincible masters. I already have detailed files on some of these young geniuses, Ye Xiwen being one of them. I can already tell that in the future, Ye Xiwen

would certainly become my junior disciple. Like they say, beat the snake to death or it will cause endless calamity; if we failed to kill him now, then think about the amount of energy and resources we might have to spend in the future to get rid of him. It would be too costly, simply not worth the effort!”

“Only those fools do not know and think that since TMU recruits new disciples only once in hundred years, so they must take advantage of this event to killing those geniuses and gain a lot of benefits. In fact, several clans have flourished because of this twisted grinding of young talents, while, at the same time, many clans also perished at the hands of those young geniuses. Those fools must consider the fact that these young geniuses would one day become formidable masters of TMU and may enter Sage Realm in the future. When that happens, they would surely come back to seek revenge. If you fail to kill them now, you must be prepared to face their wrath later on. I have heard that Ye Xiwen too has single-handedly destroyed an entire clan to take revenge. Therefore, let them fight while we watch from the sidelines!” The woman said in a cold voice.

“Yes Miss!”

-----

## Chapter 323: Longevity Dan completed

---

“Yes miss, those medicinal herbs were for...” Xia Chen said hesitantly.

“It’s a Longevity Dan, isn’t it?” The woman said. Except a few, all the herbs were very important for making a Longevity Dan. And though Ye Xiwen had added a lot of irrelevant herbs to confuse the others, they had still seen through his plan in a glance.

“It seems that he is not as simple as we imagined. Although the recipe to make Longevity Dan is not very difficult to acquire, but the short supply of required herbs is the reason why only a very few people can make it!” The woman smiled and continued, “But he should also worry about his bodily functions which have dropped significantly, and, as a result, the situation he now finds himself in is difficult to deal with. Moreover, the hair on his temples has also turned white.”

“It seems that in the outside world, there are rumors about his miraculous healing technique. But it doesn’t seem to be true!” Xia Chen said.

“That is not true. You may not have heard how many times people said that he won’t survive, but he is still alive, and has done many things which to others seemed impossible. This is because of his miraculous ability; and I further admit that it’s extraordinary too!” The woman said, “Despite his transformation, amiability has made him rich.”

The day Ye Xiwen had returned from the Chamber of Commerce, he did not think that some people might be analyzing him thoroughly. However right now, he wasn't concerned about anything else apart from acquiring a Tianyuan fruit. The reason being he could easily use other herbs in place of Tianyuan fruit, but their effect would be miniscule in comparison to that of a Tianyuan fruit.

All those precious medicinal herbs obtained from the flood dragon tomb now appeared to be futile.

Ye Xiwen had listened to Xia Chen's instructions to reach the city's largest market, which, in any case, was not a difficult task. Now he only needed someone who was familiar with the place.

Finally, he found the so-called trading market, because it was actually considered a black market, situated in the public square. However, these warriors could not be considered professional merchants because they came to sell only one or two items. One couldn't even be sure whether they would have anything to sell the next time or not.

Ye Xiwen used his soul search technique to look through the entire market. Indeed, there were some good things as well inside the market. However, those warriors who had set up the stalls didn't only have the strength of the truth level; there were also some legendary level experts among them who possessed unfathomable cultivation. This was the reason why he couldn't look through their cultivation in depth. This place appeared like the territory of Crouching Tigers and Hidden Dragons.

There were many good items in the market, but Ye Xiwen was only looking for a Tianyuan fruit, and did not even give those other items a thought.

It was like finding a needle in a haystack, but Ye Xiwen knew he had no other choice and had to find the Tianyuan fruit anyhow.

“Wang Jingtian, didn’t you say earlier that you wanted to sell this fruit today?” Suddenly, a loud voice came from a distance and attracted Ye Xiwen’s attention.

Tianyuan Fruit! Ye Xiwen’s eyes suddenly glowed, and he ran towards the source of the sound. He was surprised to see a young man, around twenty years old, in a stall, and his stall was unlike others as it was open from all sides. One could easily smell the light fragrance of some medicinal fruit coming out of the stall. This was definitely a Tianyuan fruit.

And not just that, this Tianyuan fruit was also floating in the air, attached to a golden chain.

This Tianyuan fruit and the ordinary medicinal herbs were not the same. Tianyuan fruit didn’t grow in the soil; it directly grew in the sky instead by absorbing the abundant Lingqi from the atmosphere. It was very strange because sometimes Tianyuan fruits often grew so high in the sky that ordinary people could not see them.

“I will not sell it! I have told you that I will only exchange it for the ingredients which can be used for increasing lifespan. I am not



exchange it for anything else!” Wang Jingtian shook his head, and said firmly. He was a young man; however, a formidable master was standing before him, and was looking bitterly at him.

“How dare you not give me face? You shameless man! Don’t you know that...” That master spoke but was interrupted by Wang Jingtian, who then glanced at him and said, “Did you not hear me? I will not sell it. Now get lost!”

“The medicinal herbs that increase lifespan are very precious, and you want to exchange your Tianyuan fruit for them?” That formidable master bitterly looked at Wang Jingtian, but in the end he didn’t dare to create any scene, and went away after only giving Wang Jingtian a hateful stare.

As there were guards present in the vicinity, he could not do anything and left angrily.

Ye Xiwen immediately rushed forward and said. “Would you like to exchange this fruit for a Longevity Dan?”

Wang Jingtian was surprised to see a young man with white temples when he looked up; he was further taken aback by the mention of Longevity Dan. He could not believe his ears, and a surprised expression appeared on his face.

He wanted to exchange the Tianyuan fruit for any medicinal herb that could increase lifespan. However, it would definitely be better if it was a Longevity Dan.

“Do you really have a Longevity Dan?” Wang Jingtian looked at Ye Xiwen in disbelief. Longevity Dan’s recipe was not a secret, at least among the big forces, but it was hard to find the ingredients for refining it. Even the most experienced alchemist could only refine a Longevity Dan that could increase the lifespan by five or ten years. And even if a Longevity Dan could only increase life by five years, it could still be sold at an astronomical price.

“Yes, but in order to refine Longevity Dan, I will need your Tianyuan fruit!” Ye Xiwen said lightly.

Wang Jingtian looked at Ye Xiwen skeptically. It seemed as if he found it hard to believe Ye Xiwen’s words.

“Have you got any other option? You think you can exchange your Tianyuan fruit with any medicinal herb that increases lifespan. It is simply impossible!” Ye Xiwen continued, “If you give me the Tianyuan fruit, then I can give you a Longevity Dan after refining it!”

Wang Jingtian thought for a moment. Even he didn’t know how things would work out and the probability of an exchange was very little because the medicinal herbs that could increase lifespan were very rare in the world. Moreover, he only had one Tianyuan fruit; and if he gave it to Ye Xiwen, he would lose that one as well. But perhaps, it was the only chance he would get, and if he missed this opportunity, he might not get another!

Wang Jingtian thought a lot and finally had to bite the bullet. He said: “Well, I believe you, but I hope you will not let me down!”

“Trust me, you will not be disappointed!” Ye Xiwen said in a delightful manner.

Ye Xiwen along with Wang Jingtian moved to the tavern and Wang Jingtian handed over the Tianyuan fruit to him. Ye Xiwen then immediately began his alchemy to concoct Longevity Dan, while Wang Jingtian stood guard outside. Both of them wanted to get the Longevity Dan, so Wang Jingtian was also keeping a close eye on him lest he escaped.

Ye Xiwen did not stop Wang Jingtian from monitoring him nor did he mind it. He had never thought of deceiving Wang Jingtian anyway.

After getting the Tianyuan fruit, Ye Xiwen had immediately begun to refine Longevity Dan. Wang Jingtian, in the meanwhile, had made a protective barrier outside the door in order to protect him.

Ye Xiwen took out a huge alchemy furnace from the Tianyuan mirror. He sat down and put his Zhen Yuan to use in order to ignite the furnace, and started the calcination process.

Ye Xiwen blindly added a lot of herbs into the furnace according to the recipe.

Ye Xiwen’s face turned expressionless, and he kept staring at the alchemy furnace. He was constantly controlling the size and duration of the fire in order to understand the mysteries of

alchemy. To do so, even the special space in his mind was constantly helping him in learning all sorts of mysteries of the alchemy.

In no time, three days had passed. Waiting outside, Wang Jingtian was getting anxious. Although he too knew that the alchemical process to concoct Longevity Dan was not easy, he still couldn't help being anxious. He certainly knew that Ye Xiwen was inside and had not escaped; otherwise he would have gone inside the room.

“Boom!” An explosion took place and suddenly a medicinal fragrance spread out in the surroundings. And though it wasn't a big explosion, Wang Jingtian still heard it outside.

“Creak!” Soon, Ye Xiwen opened the door and came out.

“Mr. Ye, what happened?” Wang Jingtian asked in a somewhat nervous tone.

“It was successful! As promised, here is your Longevity Dan!” Ye Xiwen stretched out his palm and showed a Longevity Dan to him.

“This is Longevity Dan...” Wang Jingtian looked with abjection, but he could clearly see that this was indeed an extraordinary Longevity Dan. “This Longevity Dan is the best quality product and can increase the lifespan by up to a hundred years!”

Wang Jingtian looked incredibly at Ye Xiwen. He could not

believe that Ye Xiwen had given him a Longevity Dan which could increase the lifespan by up to a hundred years. According to him, the best result a Longevity Dan could give was increase the lifespan by ten years, and even if it could have added five years, he still would have accepted that happily. But, a lifespan increase of hundred years was very rare, even beyond Wang Jingtian's imagination.

“Thank you, Mr. Ye. You are very generous and great, and I am deeply grateful to you!” Wang Jingtian said emotionally, “To be honest with you, this Longevity Dan is going to be used by an important elder of my clan in order to increase his lifespan, so that my clan does not decline in the future.”

Ye Xiwen nodded. He had already figured that out from Wang Jingtian's age, since he was not even 100 years old so why would he be so desperate about increasing his own lifespan. There could only be one possibility behind his desperation: there must be an elder in his clan who had reached the end of his lifespan and was in a desperate need to increase his lifespan as soon as possible.

To Wang Jingtian, Ye Xiwen might have seemed like an extremely generous person who had given him a Longevity Dan which could increase one's lifespan by a hundred years, but the reality was that Ye Xiwen had refined a total of thirty six Longevity Dans; not to mention that each and every one of them could increase lifespan by a hundred years. In fact, if he had possessed better ingredients, then he might have been able to refine special Longevity Dans, which could actually increase lifespan by a thousand years.

# Chapter 324: Half-Step Legendary Fifth Stage

---

Ye Xiwen had perfectly followed the steps for concocting pills with the help of the mysterious space. Therefore, as long as he had sufficient ingredients, he could easily refine that so-called Divine Longevity Dan, which could increase lifespan by a thousand years.

Moreover, as a result of his nearly perfect technique, Ye Xiwen had refined thirty-six Longevity Dans. For most people, it would be simply impossible to match his level.

Ye Xiwen had burned a total of a [hundred thousand Ling Dans](#) in order to perfectly carry out the alchemic process of concocting pills. It was absolutely impossible for other masters to pay such a price by burning this big an amount of Ling Dans at once, mainly because they would not have gotten an opportunity like this, only a capable individual like Ye Xiwen could.

At the rate with which Ye Xwien was burning Ling Dans, even the amount of Ling Dans which he had obtained recently wouldn't suffice to match his consumption rate. Fortunately, he wasn't going to follow the [Way of Dan](#), so he did not need to grasp all sorts of methods to prepare Dans. Even if he had the need to grasp some methods, he was capable enough to afford the consumption rate.

However, if Ye Xiwen wanted to embark on the Way of Dan, then the associated consumption rate would definitely drive him crazy.

Even the most experienced alchemists could refine only 12

Longevity Dans on an average, and for that they were considered extraordinary.

It was impossible to refine 36 Longevity Dans like Ye Xiwen did, and that too in one go.

Wang Jingtian profusely thanked Ye Xiwen and left after obtaining a Longevity Dan. Ye Xiwen also didn't engage him any further and let him go.

However, as soon as Wang Jingtian had left, Ye Xiwen immediately began the closed door training, so that he could consume those [Longevity Dans](#).

Not to mention, each of the Longevity Dans could increase one's lifespan by a hundred years, and Ye Xiwen had thirty five of them; together, these many Longevity Dans were more than sufficient for him.

However, even though these lifespan increasing drugs and medicinal herbs were of fine quality, they could increase one's lifespan, at most, by only 50%. In other words, regardless of how many Longevity Dans he would swallow, his lifespan could increase up to 750 years, at the very most. Even if some legendary individual possessed the lifespan of a millennium, then too [his lifespan could only increase by 500 years](#).

A person's lifespan could increase naturally if he could have a breakthrough from one realm to the other. Otherwise, they would have to rely on these kinds of foreign objects for increasing

lifespan and that too only by 50% of their total lifespan. For the past millions of years, no one had been able to break this rule; the so-called 'dead line'.

If more than half of one's lifespan had already expired and one still had not managed to have a breakthrough to the next realm, then nothing could really be done.

Of course, [half-lifespan was different for different realms](#).

In addition to that, these Longevity Dans were very expensive, and to refine such kind of Longevity Dans with the help of very sparsely found ingredients was something extremely rare. They were so scarce that it was impossible for experts to have enough Longevity Dans to fully increase their lifespan by 50%. In fact, the most an ordinary person could obtain was a Longevity Dan which could add merely 5 years to his lifespan.

However, Ye Xiwen was not like others. He did not want to increase his lifespan. He merely wanted to replenish his life essence which he had exhausted, and besides, there were no other restrictions on him. He had just used up his life essence to a critical degree, but in reality he was only about 20 years old.

However, Ye Xiwen didn't have a long term supply of Longevity Dans. And though in the long run, [Phoenix Regeneration technique](#) would not only become his biggest ally, but also become an important factor towards restricting his development.

Therefore, although there were thirty five Longevity Dans



currently in his possession, he must save them for the future.

Ye Xiwen sat on the bed with his legs crossed, and the [Tianyuan mirror](#) began circling above his head. It put layer upon layer of curtains of light in order to give protection to Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen swallowed one Longevity Dan, and it turned into a clear stream of energy as it started circulating throughout his body. Even though Ye Xiwen's body had aged, the very moment he swallowed the Longevity Dan it began to restore his youth. Soon, a massive amount of efficacies were absorbed by him and were transformed into life essence.

Very soon, Ye Xiwen had completely absorbed the Longevity Dan. Consequently, he appeared a lot younger than before.

Thus, Ye Xiwen, without stopping for a moment, went on to swallow the second, third, and fourth Longevity Dan. After he had consumed the fourth Longevity Dan, his countenance was completely transformed. Now, his appearance once again had changed to that of a twenty-year-old guy from that of a middle-aged man. He once again looked like the same carefree and uninhibited young genius that he was before.

“I can finally try to have a breakthrough into the half-step legendary fifth stage!” Ye Xiwen sighed and said. He had been at the half-step legendary fourth stage for quite some time now, and because of the lack of life essence, he had been unable to have a breakthrough.

Now that his life essence was finally replenished, he could try to have a breakthrough.

And since he must have a breakthrough, he would have to face the heavenly tribulation. However, he chose not to do it in the city, for it might alarm the City Lord.

Ye Xiwen, therefore, flew out of the city for hundreds of miles, and stopped in a valley.

Finally, over the valley in the sky, he released his imposing aura in an absolutely unrestrained manner.

“Bang!” A thunderous sound reverberated and many layers of thick clouds began to appear in the sky from a distant place, building up above Ye Xiwen’s head.

Ye Xiwen looked serious and did not dare to underestimate this heavenly tribulation.

Finally, the heavenly tribulation was ready to descend upon Ye Xiwen. But this time, it was not an ordinary heavenly tribulation. On the contrary, there were pure lightning and thunder weapons, including blades, swords, spears and halberds. Almost eighteen kinds of weapons which were condensed out of lightning rushed straight down towards Ye Xiwen like a heavy rain of weapons, bombarding his body.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

These weapons bombarded Ye Xiwen’s body, but only a puff of bluish-black smoke came out of his body, as if it had caught fire.

The attack of these weapons caused countless wounds on Ye Xiwen’s body; but his Phoenix regeneration technique soon started healing his wounds. In any case, these small cuts weren’t an issue at all.

“Crash-bang!” More weapons started appearing in the sky and, thus, the intensity of weapons raining down on him increased drastically; but there was no way to shake Ye Xiwen’s willpower.

It seemed the heavenly tribulation did not have any method to seize Ye Xiwen. But this time, the lightning in the sky no longer condensed into weapons; it instead condensed into demon beasts which began to launch long-ranged raid towards him from all sides, causing the entire sky to tremble in the process.

Ye Xiwen simply sneered, but did not run away. Instead, he advanced like a golden lightning and finally rushed towards the group of lightning demon beasts.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen clenched his fist and flourished it directly towards the lightning beast and smashed it. The lightning beast

immediately turned into the purest form of lightning energy which was then absorbed by Ye Xiwen, thereby making his 'gilded tyrant form' even more formidable.

Just then, another lightning beast took advantage of this opportunity and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. And in an attempt to bite his arms, it opened its bloody mouth which appeared just like a sacrificial bowl.

Ye Xiwen immediately shoved his fist forward towards his target.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's fist passed through the mouth of the lightning beast and smashed its head. The head of the lightning beast immediately exploded, and it turned into lightning energy which was absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen flourished his palm successively to kill those lightning beasts. As a result, they immediately transformed into lightning energy which was absorbed by him.

"Roar!" Soon a loud roar of a beast emerged from the clouds. While Ye Xiwen was busy killing the other lightning beasts, a strange and terrifying beast appeared in the sky. Crouching in the sky, it looked just like a small mountain; it also resembled the king of ten thousand beasts. It stared at Ye Xiwen from above, and

immediately a killing intention as well as a cold aura swept out everywhere.

As a result of that loud roar, the entire sky seemed to be crumbling down.

After watching Ye Xiwen killing the last lightning beast, the lightning beast king finally made a move. Like a vast ocean, a formidable breath rushed towards Ye Xiwen. Its mountain-like body advanced and made a long-ranged raid towards him. It appeared as if the entire sky was cracking into pieces and the entire universe was trembling in general.

Ye Xiwen's golden divine clothes fluttered as he shot his palm forward. This was a peerless attack; and a murderous intention surged out and it seemed as if the horizon itself was shattered due to the impact.

“Bang!” That huge lightning demon beast king immediately tore apart Ye Xiwen's big hand that was made up of qi. The lightning beast roared as if to swallow the entire country. And, as a result of this, even the horizon started to sway fiercely.

In the blink of an eye, that huge lightning beast king arrived in front of Ye Xiwen and howled, spraying out a fishy smelling wind from its mouth. It seemed as if the entire sky would be severed any time now!

“Bang!” A terrible collision took place, and it appeared as if the space itself would explode and collapse!

Ye Xiwen's hands directly tore apart the thighs of the lightning beast king. Although it didn't give rise to a bloody scene, it was still an abnormally intense battle.

Ye Xiwen took advantage of this opportunity and pursued the lightning beast king. Both his hands turned into dragon claws and went forward to grab the head of the lightning beast king.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen and the lightning beast king launched their attacks on each other. This lightning beast king was truly extraordinary and an ordinary master would have met his death if he had encountered this beast. However, it was facing the ‘gilded tyrant form’ of Ye Xiwen and, therefore, it was becoming very difficult for it to injure him with its attacks.

However, on the other hand, Ye Xiwen's every attack was seriously injuring the lightning beast king.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen's last strike finally rumbled and killed the lightning beast king at last.

The heavenly tribulation finally dispersed, and an enormous energy was released out of his body.

Finally, he had set foot on the [half-step legendary fifth stage](#), and his combat power had also broken through from the level of ‘half-step legendary Small Complete’ to reach the level of ‘half-step legendary sixth stage’.

Ye Xiwen looked towards northwest, where the True Martial University was located. After a very long time, it had finally started recruiting new students.

.....

Ling Dan: Also known as Spirit Dan. It is a type of elixir that contains highly concentrated spirit energy inside of it.

Way of Dan: Ye Xiwen isn’t going to follow the Way of Dan which can also be called as the Way of Alchemy. This means that he won’t be investing all his time and money into concocting all sorts of Dans. However, if he ever needs to grasp a new alchemical method to concoct a particular type of Dan, he should be able to afford the consumption of Spirit Dans, which are necessary to fuel the mysterious space while Ye Xiwen comprehends the alchemical method.

Longevity Dan: Its literal translation would be ‘Adding Life Dan’. There are all sorts of Longevity Dans, depending on the quality of ingredients used to concoct them. A Divine Longevity Dan can increase one’s lifespan by 1000 years. The ones concocted by Ye Xiwen can each increase one’s lifespan by 100 years.

For an expert with a lifespan of 1000, no matter how many Longevity Dans he consumes, his lifespan can at most go up to 1500 years.

Half-life span for legendary realm is '250 years'. Half-life span for Sage realm is '500 years'

Phoenix Regeneration Technique: This technique is also known as 'Heavenly Phoenix Regeneration Technique'. It burns the practitioner's life essence to regenerate his wounds, and the imminent lack of life essence hinders the breakthrough.

Tianyuan mirror: It can also be called 'Heavenly Source Mirror'. It releases curtains of light which envelop Ye Xiwen from all sides, forming a protection screen all around him.

Half-step legendary Small Complete is a level sandwiched between Half-step legendary fifth peak and Half-step legendary sixth stage. When an expert reached Small Complete level, it basically means he is midway within the realm.

Half-step legendary fifth stage < Half-step legendary fifth peak < Half-step legendary Small Complete < Half-step legendary sixth stage



# Chapter 325: Ying Xin City

---

This ancient road had once again seethed with excitement after being isolated for hundred years as countless young geniuses had set foot on this road to enter True Martial University. At present however, one could see that this road had started to quiet-down steadily since the university had already opened its gates for new disciples.

Ye Xiwen would certainly win the top spot when it came to leaving the most profound impression on everyone simply because many top masters had already crossed this road; he however, was at the top of the last batch of disciples. In fact, he had already killed many formidable masters in order to successfully cross the whole way; spilling blood everywhere in the process.

Along with the ringing sound of the bell, True Martial University began to accept new disciples. Everyone knew that these geniuses would by default become the disciples of True Martial University if they had managed to survive till now. However, if they weren't able to pass the grand assessment, it would be equivalent to bringing about their own destruction.

Ye Xiwen, at this time, was boasting a haughty appearance in front of everyone. Moreover, no one dared to mess with him, even if they envied him for having the Ancient God Scripture.

True Martial University was located among the mountains in the central part of the Southern region. Several spiritual arteries overlapped each other in the campus, and one could see the clouds and mist curling up to form a purple canopy; making this place

appear like the fairyland.

Located in the surroundings of the enormous True Martial Mountain Range was a city, rising steeply from the level ground and revolving all around the entire mountain range. One couldn't guess the real size of this settlement, but the combined land area of this city and the True Martial Mountain Range was almost comparable to that of a small country. Not to mention that this territory didn't belong to any country, rather it had belonged to True Martial University since the day of its establishment.

Moreover, once in every hundred years, this huge city would bustle with excitement as it welcomed the new students into the city. That was why it was called [Ying Xin City](#) of True Martial University. Previously, even though the Yi Yuan School had also welcomed new disciples by assigning them mountain peaks, but there was an unimaginable difference between the orientations performed by these two institutions.

This was an extraordinarily huge city spread all across the ravine which was brimming with a terrifying, formidable breath.

“No one actually knows when this city was first established. However, countless geniuses have come out from the True Martial University over the years. Naturally, they all must have started their journey from here only!” Ye Xiwen said as he sighed.

The Ying Xin City's wall was very huge, and extended up to several hundred feet or more. Moreover, it stretched up to an unknown number of miles. Not to mention, this city was not like a common dynasty-city since it didn't have an army of its own.

Instead, it was constantly patrolled by the disciples of True Martial University.

Ye Xiwen noticed some young experts hugging the wall in one particular portion to prevent themselves from falling down; they seemed quite miserable in that state.

At this time, some strong figures were standing at the entrance gate. Each of them was a master of half-step legendary third stage or more. In addition, some of them were exuding the dreadful aura of ominous beasts.

Ye Xiwen saw that dozens of such tyrannical masters were standing here. Though, he couldn't figure out what were they waiting for. . .

These people appeared to be in their twenties and thirties, and looked very young. They must be the experts of the younger generation, who had come to enter True Martial University.

None of them appeared to be weak.

Ye Xiwen had maintained a very low profile so he could mix into the crowd comprised of young experts; more and more people were joining this ever increasing crowd.

“When will they open the gate? So slow, ah!” an expert of the younger generation spoke impatiently. “I am going to smash that gate open!”

“You can go ahead if you are looking to die, but do not think of taking us with you!” a young expert standing next to that young disciple sneered and said.

“Is there something I haven’t paid attention to? How come they haven’t opened the gates yet?” a warrior asked to clarify his doubts.

“Yes! The Ying Xin City gate would open only in the evenings for welcoming the new disciples this year. Therefore, people who arrive before, or after, will have to wait until its time. As it stands, we will just have to wait since there are four hours to go before the sun sets!” that young expert explained.

“Is there no other way to get in? Why should we wait like this for one full day?” a man asked in a discontented tone.

“This is exactly the so-called ‘killing one’s prestige with a stick’. We are all considered as ‘god’s favored ones’; the ‘proud young masters’ who have emerged from various empires, and have risen above others in the process of distinguishing ourselves. It is inevitable that some of us are going to be domineering and quite difficult to deal with. Therefore, the True Martial University is using this harsh and unreasonable treatment to kill our acute spirit now itself. Didn’t you notice those guys hanging from the city wall? Those idiots were caught by the senior disciples of Law Enforcement Hall, and were suspended from the wall!” a disciple sneered and explained.

“Yeah, it’s important not to do anything silly here. There is one way to go inside, and that is by directly breaking through the main gate. The main gate has an array of 108 wooden puppets; if you are capable of crashing your way through that, then you can go in directly!” that disciple explained in a somewhat envious manner. “However, even the experts of half-step legendary fifth stage are not capable enough to break through that array. Perhaps only the experts of half-step small complete level can manage to go inside like that. However, it seems like there is no such expert among us, or they would have already blown up those wooden puppets to go inside!”

Ye Xiwen smiled lightly, for he found this assessment a little mean. It basically meant that one could be arrogant if they had the required strength to do so. If one didn’t have the strength, then they must be humble, and should behave properly at all times.

“Ye Xiwen, since there is already a way to go inside, we must breach our way in!” Ye Mo said. “This is also a test of one’s heart and determination. This is not just the test of one’s strength, but also a test of one’s inner conscience. If one doesn’t possess unequalled conviction, then one might not be able to continue following the path of martial arts practice anymore!”

“Yes!” Ye Xiwen nodded. It was also a test of one’s own inner conscience and determination. Therefore, he must keep advancing while crashing his way through the obstacles.

Ye Xiwen slowly walked towards the main gate.

He heard a loud shout at this time. “Then let me try! Could there

be any such array which can stop me from rushing inside?”

A man, riding a beast, emerged from the crowd.

He was a tall and young man, with dark complexion and frivolous eyebrows. A killing intent was overflowing from his eyes. He seemed to possess an invincible self-confidence, and was looking disdainfully from the corner of his eyes at the moment.

He was sitting on a powerful and exceptional divine tiger that was more than twenty feet tall. Its entire body was emitting bright rays of light, and its four powerful claws appeared quite vigorous and effective. When brandished, any one of its claws could tear open the space.

A good deal of formidable and imposing aura was discharged all of a sudden.

The young man stimulated that divine tiger into moving towards the main gate. Ye Xiwen happened to be in his way too. However, the young man didn't stop, and instead increased his pace. The divine tiger suddenly rushed towards Ye Xiwen with an intention to kill him.

Everyone's gaze turned towards Ye Xiwen as they cried out in alarm. This person had the best of misfortunes . . . could it be that he would be knocked down, and killed immediately?

Ye Xiwen didn't feel anything as he allowed that young man and

his tiger to collide with himself.

“Bang!” that man and his tiger released a divine beam together, and caused strong air waves to sweep across the surroundings; as if to engulf everything.

Everyone held their breaths. That tiger had an excessively rampant and domineering man on its back. Before coming to the Ying Xin City, he had planned to never give his opponent a way to survive. An opponent must be killed at any cost; this kind of temperament was extremely overbearing.

As smoke and dust dispersed, a surprising scene appeared in front of everyone. Although in their opinion, Ye Xiwen should have been knocked down and killed by this attack . . . the reality however, was entirely different. He certainly didn't die; instead, he used just one hand to push aside that divine tiger's forehead. This dreadful attack had been blocked by Ye Xiwen without resorting to any unnecessary movements.

“You are courting death!” that young man immediately became furious. The divine tiger he was sitting-on, was also unable to control its anger, which was evident from that electric look that flashed in its eyes. Its front claw almost turned into an electric light as it advanced forward in order to grab Ye Xiwen.

That electric light looked just like a blade as it advanced forward; as if it would cleave Ye Xiwen into two halves from the middle.

No one was able to properly catch a glimpse of the vigorous

movement made by that divine tiger's claw. They were all amazed in their hearts, and thought that this young man was really too strong. Not to mention that the divine tiger he was sitting on was a demon beast of half-step legendary fourth stage, or higher, and was certainly far stronger than these people.

This time, that young man, who was in the way, would most likely die. It was such a pity that an outstanding genius like him had finally reached Ying Xin City after surviving through all the hardships and massacres, only to be killed like this outside the main gate.

In a moment, rays of golden light flashed, and on contrary to everyone's expectations, Ye Xiwen wasn't split into two halves; instead the divine tiger's claw was directly chopped down by his blade.

That divine tiger screamed endlessly. Ye Xiwen's complexion didn't change, even by a bit, as he shot his palm, without showing any trace sympathy, which then impacted upon the forehead of that divine tiger.

"Bang!" that divine tiger's head was directly blasted by the explosive might of Ye Xiwen's attack.

"Even a divine tiger of half-step legendary fourth stage couldn't block a single move of Ye Xiwen's. Just what kind of backing does this man boast?!"

Everyone was stunned. A formidable demon beast of half-step



legendary fourth stage had actually been killed by Ye Xiwen, and that too in just one move! Had they been there in his place, they would perhaps been in a far more miserable state.

Ye Xiwen's attack was so strong, that it had directly exploded that divine tiger's head. Then his palm attack advanced further, and towards that young man, only to crash into his body as well.

“Bang!” that youngster was sent flying by the terrifying force contained in Ye Xiwen's palm attack; in fact, it left a huge hand imprint on his chest, while his bones were shattered due to the impact.

He spouted out a mouthful of blood, while his body was sent flying.

Just one palm attack had killed a despotic tiger, and severely injured an arrogant man. However, it was not clear whether the young man was dead or just severely injured.

“Who dares to be impudent in the Ying Xin City?” a furious shout reverberated from the horizon, followed by a frightening ‘Heavenly Sword Qi’ directly falling towards Ye Xiwen. If this attack was not blocked in time, it could actually kill him.

Yíng Xīn means to welcome new guests; to receive new students [in context].

## Chapter 326: What Is This Rule?

---

“Who is being so vicious? Ye Xiwen, escape quickly or this attack will kill you!” Ye Mo shouted promptly.

Ye Xiwen snorted as a cold look appeared on his face. His hands emitted rays of golden light, and tore apart that ‘Heavenly Sword Qi’.

“Who is this coward that attacks me from the shadows?” Ye Xiwen asked coldly, while his gaze was tightly fixed above the city wall.

Above the city wall, stood several disciples with the True Martial University’s emblem embroidered on their chests. They were releasing a murderous aura while looking towards Ye Xiwen, with rays of cold light flashing in their eyes.

“It was me, do you have any complaints?” Those disciples directly flew down from the top of the city wall. They were headed by a young man clad in a cyan robe. He looked very calm and confident, and had fairly handsome facial features. There was a divine look in his eyes. His oblique eyebrows stretched all the way to his temples, making him appear rather majestic.

“Do you want to die?” Ye Xiwen retorted coldly. Just then, a murderous aura suddenly surged towards him. Judging from that murderous aura, he could tell that the Heavenly Sword Qi from a moment ago wasn’t just a warning shot; instead, this one was shot with the intention to kill him.

“Ye Xiwen, you really are like the way rumors portray you - arrogant and despotic. Do you think that this place is some countryside like your southeastern region? You dare to threaten us Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples! This is far more serious than a first-grade crime.” the cyan-robed young man spoke in a cold voice.

Ye Xiwen gawked for a moment since he had never thought that this person actually knew him. Although it didn’t seem like that initially, the attack from a moment ago had actually been premeditated a long time ago. So, who could he possibly be... Ye Xiwen had recently offended a lot of people, but this man was deliberately waiting for him here; it seemed as if the enmity he held within his heart wasn’t little.

Ye Xiwen had killed too many people by now, and a lot of them had close relatives. However, he simply did not know who this person might’ve been related to.

“If you want to live, then you better leave; don’t try to provoke me!” Ye Xiwen stated coldly as he simply ignored that so-called law enforcement disciple.

Many of the masters, standing in the background, were dumbstruck upon hearing this. It was hard to believe that Ye Xiwen would’ve actually dared to speak in this manner. Although the people who had come here were well-known geniuses, these law enforcement disciples were no less. None of them were easy to deal with. They too had arrived here in the same manner, not long ago. The “present” of these law enforcement disciples was going to

be the “future” of the new ones. If one would say that these geniuses had assembled like ants on the ancient road, then their reputation would basically become a joke after joining True Martial University. Here, they wouldn’t be considered anything more than mediocre.

Warriors did not dare to be dissolute, regardless of whether their temperament was peaceful or irascible. Not just because there were as many experts in True Martial University as clouds in the sky, but also because those experts were extremely strong. The might of True Martial University’s experts was not a very big deterrence for the new disciples. The newcomers knew that if they were to practice for a few hundred years, then their own achievements wouldn’t be lacking. However, they had been restrained by the fear of those countless tyrannical seniors, and had ended up becoming indifferent. In short, they had silently restrained their temperaments.

How could they be so overbearing and daring, like Ye Xiwen, and compete with Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples? Though they didn’t really know how the True Martial University was partitioned on an administration level... but an organization like the Law Enforcement Hall could appoint several forces under their banner with authority-enough to provide penalty, and also ‘iron and blood’. These forces were in charge of pedestrians’ discipline within the city.

“I’m warning you! You better behave, and let us capture you. You will follow me to the Law Enforcement Hall to receive punishment. Don’t forget that True Martial University is located here!” that young man spoke coldly.

Right at that moment, one after another, many other law enforcement disciples released their terrifying aura, which tightly shrouded Ye Xiwen from all sides.

The bystanders suddenly started trembling with fear even though they were considered geniuses in their own merit. The overall might of these law enforcement disciples was too terrifying; far more tyrannical than their own. A series of vigorous and imposing auras swept across the surroundings; even the weakest being at a profound degree of half-step legendary fifth stage. In fact, majority of these auras were at Half-step Legendary's Small Complete realm.

However, the young head-disciple had the cultivation level of legendary sixth stage. Moreover, he wasn't just an ordinary expert of legendary sixth stage... he was at its peak.

None of the new disciples would dare to take the initiative of stepping forward when faced with this kind of lineup; even if there were some geniuses of half-step legendary realm hidden among them. The overall might of the opposite side was far beyond their reach.

Everyone could feel their hearts trembling. Was this the true might of this University? They still had such strength... even though they seemed like ordinary disciples of Law Enforcement Hall.

Since that guy was an expert of the legendary realm, it seemed like he must have been unable to have a breakthrough within the half-step legendary realm. However, no one would laugh at people

like him. The road of half-step legendary realm was difficult to tread on. Only a few could manage to persist till the very last stage. [There weren't many who could obtain instant success](#). Before long, they would start to get anxious; not knowing where to advance to, or how long they should wait. In the end, they would make the decision to have a breakthrough to the legendary realm.

“Ye Xiwen? That’s Ye Xiwen, right? He is so strong. No wonder that guy who tried to pass through the gate earlier... couldn’t stand up to him!” spoke a disciple.

It could be said that Ye Xiwen had started walking on this ancient road towards the end. His pace could also be regarded as very slow in comparison. Not to mention that he hung at the end of the last batch of disciples. However, his fame wasn’t less. In fact, he could be regarded as an ominous — yet illustrious — figure of the younger generation. After all, not everyone could survive after being hunted by almost all the forces of the Great Ming and the Great Qin Empire. Moreover, he had continued to grow stronger all this while, and had slaughtered several of his pursuers.

Ye Xiwen’s fame had been thoroughly established after a few months of such ‘slaughtering’. Even though he was hanging at the end of the last batch, his glory had forged ahead at an incredible speed; even faster than his progress-speed.

A lot of masters had died at his hands on the three ancient roads located within the borders of the Great Ming Empire and Great Qin Dynasty. The most famed among them were the third, the fourth, and the fifth god. They used to be well-known young talents, and no one had thought that they would ultimately die at the hands of

Ye Xiwen.

“They say Ye Xiwen has a page of Ancient God Scriptures... but I don’t know whether that’s true or false!”

“Do you want to die? If not, you should give up on the idea of taking him on. Didn’t you see what happened to that man a while ago? If you want to die, go die! Don’t implicate us!”

“Hehe, these law enforcement disciples are certainly being unfriendly. They just want to test Ye Xiwen to see whether he really deserves his reputation. We will finally get to see some action!”

“Why should I go with you? If you’re a disciple of Law Enforcement Hall, you should speak out the rules one by one!” Ye Xiwen replied indifferently.

“Humph! You dare to cause trouble in Ying Xin City by disregarding the government rules!” that young man spoke coldly.

“Being a newcomer, I am not aware of these so-called government rules you talk about. Moreover, that the place where I am standing right now... isn’t within the bounds of Ying Xin City. The city is on the other side of the gate!” Ye Xiwen replied in a cold voice.

“Stop your nonsense!” a disciple shouted in a somewhat impatient manner, and immediately began to advance towards Ye

Xiwen. A sinister smile spread on his face as a divine beam appeared in his hand. It seemed as if he would crush Ye Xiwen's bones with his bare hands.

“You are overreaching yourself!” Ye Xiwen's speed was even quicker as he shot his palm towards the incoming attack. Perhaps that disciple would've never thought that Ye Xiwen would actually dare to retaliate against him — a disciple of Law Enforcement Hall. Immediately, an explosion took place.

“Boom!”

“Crunch!” There was a loud crunching sound. That disciple's arm was broken in the explosion, and blood splashed out from it.

Ye Xiwen took a step forward, instantly causing the space beneath his feet to collapse. He arrived in front of that disciple in the blink of an eye, and threw a kick.

“Stop!” The head-disciple roared the moment he saw that.

However, Ye Xiwen couldn't possibly care. His kick landed on that disciple's chest, and instantly shattered his sternum. His body turned upside down, and was sent flying into the sky.

“You are quite courageous!” That head-disciple became furious. Ye Xiwen had crippled one of his subordinates in front of his eyes. This was nothing less than a slap in his face.



Ye Xiwen sneered, “Your courage is ‘fatter’ than mine. You first dared to launch a deadly sneak-attack on a new disciple before his enrollment, and then you blame him for breaking the rules?”

After saying that, Ye Xiwen turned around to face those ‘outstanding’ geniuses and said, “Everyone, we all are peerless geniuses of our respective regions, and have come here from far-off countries after facing countless hardships along the way! But for what? Is it not to excel and become successful? We are heroes and not stray dogs. You just heard that these people knew me, and deliberately come looking for trouble-still.

“They had planned to intercept and kill me in front of such a huge crowd of new disciples at the main gate of Ying Xin City. I don’t know the rules of the True Martial University, but I can say for sure that there isn’t a rule that allows people like them to bully newcomers. How can such people hold the position of Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples? If we enter True Martial University and things remain like this, would there be even a hair of safety and security left to protect us? Do they have the right to be so rampant because they joined the university before us...?”

“We demand an explanation! How did they become law enforcement disciples!?”

The disciples were just observing from the sidelines. This matter was of no concern to them. They were just enjoying themselves while watching an entertaining scene. They felt that Yi Xiwen was completely against the rules after hearing what he had said just now.

So what? This had nothing to do with them. In fact, the party in question was actually creating trouble for Ye Xiwen, and some of the new disciples were just taking joy in Ye Xiwen's misfortune. After all, if Ye Xiwen were to get killed, then it would only mean one less rival in the future.

However, Ye Xiwen's assertion had changed the situation entirely. If these seniors could dare to intercept Ye Xiwen so arrogantly outside the university, then there was a possibility that they themselves might face a similar fate someday.

As rookies about to join True Martial University, they lacked unity and strength of a group. Who would guarantee their safety if a senior blatantly attacked them for no reason?

They were accustomed to living in a world where strength was revered. But it was not as if they couldn't question the legitimacy of some rules!

One can choose to have a 'breakthrough' directly from any stage of 'half-step legendary realm' to the corresponding stage of 'legendary realm' whenever they feel like [A leap of 9-10 stages in one breakthrough]. This is because continuing to have breakthroughs within the 'half-step legendary realm' become almost impossible at later stages and only super-geniuses can proceed to higher stages of 'half-step legendary realm'.

# Chapter 327: Law Enforcement Disciples Slaughtered

---

Ye Xiwen's words had aroused a sense of urgency in everybody!

Indeed, these people were considered the finest of geniuses in their respective regions. Their cultivation level was sufficient to run amuck their natives. However, True Martial University was the best institution of the Southern region. Over here, [they would find their cultivation levels lying at the bottom](#). They would get to join the University... but only as inner disciples, outer disciples, and so on.

As a result, it would be impossible for the new disciples to be domineering from the beginning. Anyway, these outstanding geniuses weren't stupid. They were smart enough to know the facts. Such as — one could only turn to rules for protection if one's strength was weaker.

However, they would find themselves in a pickle if someone were to intentionally trample these rules. This would only mean that the formidable senior disciples could intentionally look for reasons, and could kill their weaker junior disciples. Then, who would ensure their safety?

Ye Xiwen had as many enemies as hair on an ox; simply too many to count. However, the other new disciples had their fair-share of foes. Everyone had killed and offended many people on their way to True Martial University. Of course, none of them had kept a count of enemies they might have made in the process.

This matter wasn't just Ye Xiwen's personal concern, for it was related to their safety as well. They would most likely be killed sooner or later if they couldn't abolish this rule. Hence, if they didn't come to his aid now, then who would support them later?

Everyone understood the importance of the interdependence between two neighboring states when facing a common enemy.

In just a matter of few breaths, everyone had decided to stand together with Ye Xiwen. As a result, the public sentiment soon swayed in his favor.

“That's right; we demand an explanation! What kind of a rule is this? Which government sets up an absurd rule that allows powerful seniors to attack its new disciples whenever they feel like? If that is the case, then we aren't some ordinary individuals either! You can't weed us out whenever you want.”

“Right! We want an explanation; or there will inevitably come a day when no one will know how we died!”

“We won't let it pass that easily. We will not let-go of this matter until we get an explanation!”

The uproar at the city's gate attracted the attention of the disciples who were presently patrolling above the city's wall.

They all gazed at the commotion; one after another.

“Isn’t that Yan Wu Fang? What’s he doing down there with the newcomers?”

“I don’t know, but it seems like he has gained perks from someone in return for making things difficult for Ye Xiwen!”

“Hehe, this is going to be fun. Didn’t you see earlier how Ye Xiwen was intending to break through the barrier? He is definitely not a merciful guy. This is certainly going to be very interesting, ha ha ha!”

“Indeed, most of these newcomers are rebellious; let alone Ye Xiwen. ...I guess we’ve all heard of his outstanding performance on the ancient road. Gee, he is not the type to stay idle and take the beating. Plus, these law enforcement disciples are the most rude and unreasonable bunch. It seems that the clash between these two groups is certainly going to be entertaining!”

The law enforcement disciples’ faces turned ugly after the public sentiment shifted against them — head-disciple Yan Wu Fang’s being the worst. Initially, they had thought that it would be very easy to find a reason which could allow them to butcher Ye Xiwen. However, they hadn’t imagined that Ye Xiwen would instigate a feeling of dissatisfaction within this crowd of new disciples. As the matter had developed, Ye Xiwen had been able to gain the public sentiment in his favor using just a few words.

“You’ve got a sharp tongue Ye Xiwen. We are not here for the others. We just want ‘you’ to accompany us to the Law

Enforcement Hall so you can receive a punishment for injuring a fellow disciple at the main gate of Ying Xin City.” Yan Wu Fang tightly clenched his teeth, while his razor-sharp gaze was directed towards Ye Xiwen. He was furious because Ye Xiwen had compelled him to give an explanation.

However, his excuse was far from convincing for the new disciples. They were not speaking-up for Ye Xiwen; but for ensuring their own safety in the future. Were their lives really so worthless that anyone could kill them on a whim?

This explanation did not silence them; on the contrary, it made several of them angrier.

“Ye Xiwen, first you committed a heinous crime by injuring a disciple of the sect you’re about to join. And now you’re actually daring to resist the arrest?! You are truly reprehensible!” Yan Wu Fang spoke in a cold voice as his complexion paled. He was attentively watching Ye Xiwen.

“Don’t you consider attempting to kill a new disciple a heinous crime? Is that the way Law Enforcement Hall operates around here?” Ye Xiwen sneered and asked.

“Shut up! Don’t you dare think you can willfully slander the name of Law Enforcement Hall; got it? Be prepared to die today!” Those law enforcement hall disciples couldn’t help it, and rushed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him. They joined hands, and called forth ‘the net of justice’. It seemed as if this net was blotting out the sky — covering the earth. In fact, it seemed as if the entire world had been brought under one umbrella. So long as someone was

entrapped in this net... making an escape was impossible. This was an important device used by the Law Enforcement Hall to capture the disciples who had committed crimes. This unusual divine tool was called ‘[Dragnet](#)’.

Ye Xiwen snorted coldly. His hands emitted golden rays of light as he advanced towards that inescapable net.

“Bang!” The dragnet was grabbed by Ye Xiwen.

A burst of divine arrays appeared inside the net, and began exploding one after another. However, Ye Xiwen remained unscathed since these explosions only triggered ripples on his golden body.

“Rip!” a massive sound of something being torn reverberated as Ye Xiwen ripped the dragnet was apart.

Ye Xiwen’s body was extremely overbearing; to the extent that the dragnet had been simply torn apart by his bare hands.

Everyone was incomparably shocked! ...especially those law enforcement disciples. The dragnet had never failed to capture its target; let alone getting ripped apart with bare hands. This Ye Xiwen was way too fierce!

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen snorted coldly. A surge of golden energy rushed out of his golden body, and transformed into ten thousand Swordqi. It then directly slaughtered those law enforcement

disciples in one swoop. They screamed pitifully before transforming into blood fog.

“You dare to kill the Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples?!” Yan Wu Fang was already enraged to the peak. He had never thought that such a situation could arise since he was confident of killing Ye Xiwen. However, the outcome had been the complete reverse. These disciples would never have thought they would get killed instead; that too before laying a single finger on Ye Xiwen.

Yan Wu Fang had been under the impression that they would murder Ye Xiwen without any problems, and no one would find out about it since the dead cannot testify. Also, who would bother to speak-up for a dead man? However, he never expected that Ye Xiwen would turn out to be so ruthless.

Yan Wu Fang released the terrifying energy of half-step legendary sixth stage. This energy soon spread in all directions.

“Ye Xiwen, do you realize what you have done today? Let me arrest you without a fight; I might still leave your corpse intact, and may even not implicate your family!” Yan Wu Fang announced.

“So you’re thinking of implicating my family as well, ah?” A murderous intent could be seen exploding in Ye Xiwen’s eyes. It soon spread out in the surroundings. Anyone who could contemplate such a thing... would be inviting the wrath of the Emperor.



This matter had already made him extremely angry. It was obvious that the opposing party had specifically showed up to get rid of him; in fact, they were even willing to go as far as involving his family. As it stood, Yan Wu Fang had effectively attempted to blackmail Ye Xiwen into subjugation. However, it was impossible for Ye Xiwen to capitulate without a fight.

“Well, well, well, aren’t you a splendid law enforcement disciple!” Ye Xiwen laughed. He hadn’t expected Yan Wu Fang to be so arrogant.

“Humph!” Yan Wu Fang sneered. He didn’t say anything, and directly swept out a terrifying Sword-light. It seemed like a silver chain as it instantly advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen roared, while his hands began to radiate waves of golden light. These waves condensed to form a terrifying beam of divine energy. Immediately after that, the incoming Sword-light was torn to shreds by Ye Xiwen’s divine beam.

“Ye Xiwen, today you have dared to go against the law! You’ve also killed the disciples of Law Enforcement hall! No one can save you now. You can give up on the idea of joining the True Martial University since you’re about to die!” Yan Wu Fang shouted.

“I probably won’t get myself enrolled if the True Martial University shelters a generation of snakes, insects, rats, and ants like you-and-your-buddies!” Ye Xiwen sneered and replied. He was likely to depart in case the True Martial University decided against giving them a formal explanation. There were more than just one-or-two enemies lurking in the university; simply waiting for his

arrival. Hence, he obviously wouldn't join unless his safety was guaranteed since it would tantamount to throwing his life away.

“Humph!” Yan Wu Fang’s expression turned even uglier after being insulted like that. A formidable aura swept out of his body, and spread into the surroundings. It seemed as if it would engulf everything. Being a law enforcement disciple, Yan Wu Fang was certainly strong. An unusual terror swept out of his body as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

Yan Wu Fang went all out, and issued a magnificent Sword-light. Suddenly, it seemed as if the entire sky had been beset with stars. His body emitted countless rays of starlight, which instantly blotted out the sky as they aggressively lunged towards Ye Xiwen.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

It could be said that Ye Xiwen’s palm strength was simply infinite. The golden divinities boiled within Yi Xiwen’s body as those star lights were directly slapped-to-smithereens by his palm. The attacks from both sides were equally terrifying. If this battle had taken place elsewhere, the surrounding space would have exploded and broken into pieces. However, Ye Xiwen could feel that this expanse had been solidified to an unprecedented extent. So much so, that even a battle between two legendary level experts couldn’t break it.

Even so, the aftermath of their clashes caused the air to vaporize. One could imagine the unconquerable terror of witnessing this battle up-close.

Everyone was dumbfounded as they watched this battle — the new and senior disciples alike. They hadn't anticipated that this battle would get this far; they were finding it difficult to believe this.

Moreover, something happened, which left them panic-stricken — it hadn't taken long for Ye Xiwen to gain the upper-hand. Ye Xiwen had thoroughly suppressed Yan Wu Fang's sword attack. So much so, that the incoming Sword-light had been rendered ineffective about 10 feet away from his body. In fact, it wasn't even able to explode as a result of the suppression. Everyone could see that Ye Xiwen had already attained a huge advantage in the fight.

Yan Wu Fang was then smacked around by Ye Xiwen... several times. He spat a mouthful of blood, while his complexion turned deathly pale.

Outer disciple < Inner disciple < Core disciple < True disciple < Legendary disciple < Sage disciple

'Dragnet' or 'inescapable net' is a system of coordinated measures for apprehending criminals or other individuals

## Chapter 328: Gate-Crashes Into The City

---

Ye Xiwen's blank expression turned ice-cold. The killing intent could be seen in his eyes. Yan Wu Fang had crossed all the limits by threatening Ye Xiwen's family. This was something he simply could not tolerate.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen invoked the Hanshan seal(1), and summoned a huge mountain which fell from the sky. There was scope for Yan Wu Fang to resist the attack. ‘Bang!’ All the bones within his body appeared to have been completely smashed by this attack.

“How is this possible? Yan Wu Fang had no power to fight back? Who in the world is this Ye Xiwen?”

“Looks like a tenacious fellow who very much wants to join the government office.”

“These new disciples are quite fierce. They are not willing to bear even the slightest bit of grievances when they feel wronged. Their determination is higher than the sky. They are rebellious, and certainly cannot be tamed easily!”

“Hehe, this is not just about feeling wronged. If I were to come across this matter, then I would have also wanted to get hold of that Yan Wu Fang; I too would've wanted to slaughter him. However, I wouldn't dare to such a thing right before the main gate of Ying Xin City. It can be said that Ye Xiwen's courage knows no bounds!”

“Such assassination attempts happen every time the new disciples arrive; but the tables were turned this time. Those assassins died miserable deaths at the hands of their target. Well, all I can say is — only the elites-among-the-elites are able to survive till the end!”

“Ye Xiwen, you’ll regret if you kill me!” Yan Wu Fang shouted as he stared coldly at Ye Xiwen. There was actually a hint of panic in his eyes since he hadn’t expected for things to turn out this way. His ego had been shattered by Ye Xiwen. Moreover, he no longer had the strength to fight back. Yang Wu Fang had joined the university about a century ago, but the disparity between their strength levels was already quite huge. Not to mention, this gap was only going to widen in the future; until there would be no scope for comparison whatsoever.

Such a person could become a huge threat to him once grown-up. Yan Wu Fang’s gaze somewhat flickered, and it seemed as if some schemes and tricks were revolving through his mind.

Ye Xiwen looked coldly at him. He did not know what Yan Wu Fang was secretly planning, but he knew that Yan Wu Fang was up to no good. With an awe-inspiring killing intention, Ye Xiwen said, “It’s too bad that you won’t be around to see me regret!”

Ye Xiwen’s killing intention surged up in a flash. At this time, Yan Wu Fang was worried since he had finally recalled that Ye Xiwen was a killing machine. His fellow law enforcement disciples had already been slaughtered by Ye Xiwen. It also seemed as if Ye Xiwen had already given up on the idea of entering True Martial University; then why would he hesitate from killing one more...?

Law Enforcement Hall's disciples were usually very arrogant and domineering in nature. In fact, they didn't even get along well with the other disciples. It was no wonder that — even when the other disciples were aware that Yan Wu Tian was in danger, they didn't come down from above-the-city-wall to save him.

“Ye Xiwen; Ye Xiwen... stop. Please let me go. I promise I will never come back to trouble you again. I will also give you big rewards and benefits!” At this time, Yan Wu Fang was finally afraid.

“Do you really think that I will let you go?!” Ye Xiwen said lightly as his big golden hand flourished forward. He then grabbed Yan Wu Fang's neck, “Go to hell, and regret your decision there!”

“Stop!” At this time, an old-and-hoarse voice sounded-out from the middle of Ying Xin City. An old figure suddenly came out from the void. He had wrinkles on his face, and was dressed in black clothes.

“It's the City Lord!”

“How come the City Lord himself has moved into action?”

“This incident has made a huge noise, and even the Ying Xin City's Lord has been informed about it. I didn't expect that the mysterious City Lord would arrive at the scene himself. He must have realized that this matter would go out of control.”

Ye Xiwen, regardless of the present situation, immediately shot his palm towards Yan Wu Fang, and killed him; as if he simply hadn't heard the words of Ying Xin City's Lord.

“Ha!” The Old City Lord sighed, “You are too reckless!”

Ye Xiwen seemed wary of that old City Lord, and asked, “Don't tell that you are here to intercede in his favor?”

The Old City Lord shook his head and said, “He is not worthy of my arbitration. However, it is such a pity; because you were such a fine young successor!”

The Old City Lord had a look of pity on his face.

Ye Xiwen suddenly felt relieved after hearing that this Old City Lord, who had an unfathomable cultivation, was not here for backing Yan Wu Fang. Since this old man was extremely terrifying, Ye Xiwen had no choice but to maintain utmost vigilance.

“You possess a magnificent spirit. But you are way too reckless!” The Old City Lord said, “Sometimes, it is not a bad thing to exercise forbearance, and take a step back!”

“You also saw the situation clearly; didn't you? I was willing to step back, but they had put a sword to my neck. I would have died, had I not fought back!” Ye Xiwen said.

“However, there is no doubt that you will offend groups of people in the university if you continue to carry such attitude; especially the people of Law Enforcement Hall!”

The Old Man’s words had left many disciples dumbstruck since they were concerned about this matter. It could be seen the he and Ye Xiwen had never met before, but he still said such words of praise for Ye Xiwen. This indicated that the Old City Lord was very optimistic about Ye Xiwen’s future. That must be the reason why he was having such a deep conversation with a stranger like Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen felt somewhat grateful in his heart. Who would go out of their way to praise a stranger? This also made Ye Xiwen to put down his hostility.

“If True Martial University is all about such stuff... I would just leave as early as possible since I haven’t yet joined it!” Ye Xiwen said indifferently. He seemed quite tough and aloof in his stance.

“Ah! Forget about it. I am not handling this matter anyway; but sooner or later, the people of Law Enforcement Hall will come looking for you!” The old man saw Ye Xiwen as a lofty and unyielding character. He didn’t say much since he knew that Ye Xiwen’s anger was not directed at him.

“Thank you for warning me, Sir!” Ye Xiwen said as he cupped his hands in obeisance.



“Good, but you must keep-in-mind that you cannot dispose of someone inside Ying Xin City. Otherwise, you will be punished according to the government’s rules!” The old man said indifferently.

“It’s a given. But what if it was in self-defense?” Ye Xiwen asked since he was not usually the one to provoke others. He had certainly killed many masters on the way; but mostly in self-defense. He rarely took the initiative to stir up trouble.

“That will naturally have nothing to do with you!” said the Old City Lord, “Whoever stirs up the trouble shall be held responsible for it!”

“Thanks a lot for reminding me, Sir!” Ye Xiwen said as he cupped his hands in obeisance again.

“You must keep on striving, okay? Your innate talented is extraordinary. Your future prospects will certainly be boundless if you manage to walk till the very end of the way-of-martial-arts!” The Old City Lord finished speaking. Then, his figure immediately disappeared in the void. This wasn’t just fast speed, but genuine flash-step.

Ye Xiwen hadn’t even stepped inside the Ying Xin City, but had still attracted the attention of so many people. Not to mention that he had also stirred up the entire crowd of new disciples.

He had dared to kill the law enforcement disciples at the main gate. Although the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall were

wrongful in their approach, but Ye Xiwen's actions were still overly courageous.

Ye Xiwen hadn't yet entered the city, but his fame had already spread throughout it. The disciples who had been patrolling above the city wall had already spread the news throughout the city.

Moreover, the news also contained information about Ye Xiwen being praised by the mysterious City Lord, for having boundless future prospects.

Ye Xiwen's reputation had suddenly risen up.

“Ye Xiwen, go break through the array!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen nodded. After passing through this matter, he had become famous in the entire city, and had also attracted the attention of a lot of masters. Naturally, keeping a low-profile had no significance anymore.

Ye Xiwen moved towards the city gate, and those new disciples also followed after him; one after another. At this time, they didn't have any other choice except going inside along with Ye Xiwen. They obviously didn't wish to wait until the next day.

As soon as Ye Xiwen entered through the gate, the entire scene around him suddenly changed. It seemed as if everything between the heaven and earth had disappeared.

Ye Xiwen realized that he had stepped into an array.

“Whoosh!” A puppet suddenly appeared before Ye Xiwen. Although it had a simply structure, it was exuding a terrifying aura towards him. It unexpectedly started to use proper fist technique to fire punches at him. Each of its punches was arousing the Spiritqi(2), and directing it towards Ye Xiwen.

This puppet had the strength of half-step legendary fifth stage!

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen attacked with his palm, and a sound similar to a dragon’s howl reverberated. Finally, his palm pounded on that puppet’s wooden body.

Ye Xiwen suddenly found-out that he was unable to crush that puppet into powder like he had initially expected; its body was merely broken into pieces. This puppet’s toughness had gone far beyond his imagination.

“These puppets are made of special wood. They are even harder than the ordinary metal and stone!” Ye Mo said.

The martial heritage of True Martial University was simply hard to imagine. They had actually used this level of treasure as stepping stones to test the strength of its disciples. There was always a way for two or three individuals to be able to cross over to the other side. However, it was hard to imagine how many of these puppets had been prepared for testing the strength of so many disciples who had walked on the ancient road before.

“I see!” Ye Xiwen nodded. It was truly so, but he wasn’t slow in changing his tactics either. He immediately covered his hands with golden divinities, and then shot his palm towards a wooden puppet.

“Bang!” That puppet was instantly destroyed by Ye Xiwen.

It would take time to explain the scene, but-in-fact, Ye Xiwen was moving extremely fast. None of the puppets who had jumped-out in front of Ye Xiwen were any closer to being his opponents. He was emitting waves of golden divinities which were simply like an irresistible force sweeping away all those puppets. Regardless of their numbers, these puppets could not do anything to stop Ye Xiwen, and were smashed into pieces by him.

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen lowered the emission of golden waves when he finally smashed the last puppet, and finally entered the city.

“Is that Ye Xiwen? He sure is eager to be first, ah. Those puppets of half-step legendary fifth stage simply didn’t have the strength to fight back... His body is also very strong; strong enough to tear even gold and iron into pieces with bare hands. I have never come across such tyrannical body before. Other people have also passed this barrier before. But they’ve had to rely on various technique and magical powers to dash through the array, before crossing over to the other side. Ye Xiwen is the only one who was able to sweep away those puppets with his bare hands!”

“Such a strong and capable disciple has arrived in this group of youngsters! Perhaps it is really going to be very lively around here now!”

“They are all quite strong and capable. But I must say that there are a few people with special physical constitution. I heard there’s a guy who has a Titan’s body... but I really cannot say if the toughness of his body can be compared with Ye Xiwen’s!”

### Notes:

1. Hanshan Seal: Also referred to as ‘Shaking Mountain Seal’. Ye Xiwen had obtained this secret heritage from the tomb keeper. Whenever this seal is invoked, a huge mountain made up purely of energy appears in the sky. Then at Ye Xiwen’s command, this mountain falls down upon its target.

2. Spiritqi: Also referred to as ‘Lingqi’ is actually the spirit energy present in the atmosphere.

# Chapter 329: Extraordinary Physique

---

“We can’t be sure. After all, this is the True Martial University, and not the influence of some secluded regional territory. These geniuses aren’t worth mentioning around here even if they used to be famous earlier!”

“Hehe, these new disciples look lively to me!”

“Well, they must hurry up and go inside quickly. Tomorrow will be the last day for this term’s enrollment for new disciples!”

Ye Xiwen directly entered the city. The Ying Xin City was the only city to welcome the new disciples. No one knew the exact age of this city, or how much it had expanded over the time. It was large enough to accommodate 2-3 million people easily; at any particular time.

However, at present, the warriors were arriving one-after-another from various ancient roads to join the university. They added up to no less than hundreds-of-thousands of people; plus those who had been selected earlier. All these added up to a total of over-a-million people. In addition, there were a lot of senior disciples who lived here all-year-round. On the whole, the Ying Xin City looked somewhat crowded.

Ye Xiwen looked for a guest house to stop over. In the city, all such inns were basically owned by some old disciples. They used truth-level outer disciples as waiters and attendants in the inn. Most of these truth level disciples were usually at fifth or sixth

stage. These disciples were the descendants of older disciples, who couldn't help, but married inside the True Martial University. After several generations, these descendants wandered about destitute; they were basically stranded outside. In the end, they ended up becoming 'Recorded Name' disciples of True Martial University. In reality, the general population inside the True Martial University was no different.

Ye Xiwen had originally intended on finding Qi Feifan and the other fellow disciples from Yi Yuan School. However, he later heard that they had already chosen an inheritance, and had left for different places one year after their arrival in the university.

Nowadays, a number of books on general knowledge of True Martial University were being sold everywhere inside the city.

Naturally, Ye Xiwen also bought a book, and finally developed an understanding of the entire foundation of True Martial University after reading it.

There was an endless stretch of sierra in the center of the True Martial University. Magnificent mountain peaks continuously rose one-after-another. No one knew how many mountains had come together to form this mountain range. Every mountain had a mountain peak, and each peak represented an inheritance. After all said and done, no one knew how many inheritances actually existed in the university. In fact, no one really knew when this university was established. However, there had always been people who would step-up to represent a peak's inheritance ever-after its establishment.

A majority of people could choose different inheritances according to their preferences in the beginning itself; apart from a few exceptions. Naturally, different inheritances had different strength level requirements.

The mere names of the strong inheritances could make people's scalps go numbs. However, fortunately everyone was a successful martial arts practitioner. Hence, one could figure out the exact strength level of an inheritance with just a sweep of soul search. And based on the assessment, one could make a choice.

There were huge differences between each of the natural heritages associated with these various inheritances.

Each of these inheritances had their individual secret heritage. Not to mention that there were large difference between these secret heritages.

Some of these inheritances were very strong, while others were inferior. That is because some inheritances had been left behind by the powerhouses of past generations. ...some of them had been left behind by Sage level powerhouses; such inheritances were considered the weakest. In fact, more than 70% of inheritances were of this kind. In addition, a part of these inheritances had been left behind by Great Sage level powerhouses. Such inheritances were considered relatively stronger than the others.

However, the genuinely strong inheritances were the ones which had been left-behind by the powerhouses who were even above the Great Sage level. These inheritances naturally had countless people rushing in to join; almost as if these disciples were on a wild goose



chase.

However, the strongest among all the inheritances were the so-called 'Top 100 Inheritances'. That's because they were set up at the time of the University's establishment. No one knew how many powerhouses had emerged from these 'Top 100 Inheritances' over the last innumerable years. Hence, only they could be considered as the strongest of inheritances.

Over the past years, more than 70% of the powerhouses had emerged from these 'Top 100 Inheritances'.

However, these Top 100 Inheritances were also the ones that every disciple yearned for. These Top 100 Inheritances were surely very powerful, but their selection criterion was quite stringent as well. Unless a truth level disciple did not fall in the category of peerless monstrous geniuses... they simply weren't allowed to join any of the Top 100 Inheritances.

The minimum requirement was half-step legendary realm; that too after properly checking the talent of the disciple. An ordinary disciple was expected to at least have the cultivation of half-step legendary's third or fourth stage in order to enter these inheritances. In fact, some of the tyrannical inheritances in the group of Top 100 Inheritances only accepted disciples of half-step legendary's sixth stage or higher.

Disciples of Half-step legendary fifth stage or higher, and under the age of 50 were small in numbers. However, disciples of this level above the age of 50 were not small in numbers. In fact, every 3 out of 4 adults were at this level.

Ye Xiwen looked for a window seat to settle down inside the liveliest hall of the inn. He stared blankly towards the distant street, and was soon lost in his own thoughts.

“The martial heritage of True Martial University is really profound. It’s simply far beyond my imagination. Comparing it with Yi Yuan School... is simply like distinguishing between cloud and mud!” Ye Xiwen couldn’t help but sigh with emotion.

Even the pedestrians on the streets were experts of truth realm or higher. Naturally, the experts of Xiantian realm and Houtian realm were not allowed to pass through the city’s gate.

The name-and-fame of these geniuses didn’t hold any value here. They were nothing more than a joke. Everything needed to be started from the scratch after arriving here. One needed to put both the hands at work, and strive to become successful again.

Originally, Ye Xiwen had thought that the first thing he would do after arriving at the True Martial University — was to find Qi Feifan and the other from his school. Now, it seemed as if it was similar to finding a needle in a haystack. Moreover, they had already chosen their favorite inheritances, and had dispersed to their respective places. Therefore, finding them was easier said than done.

And so he must wait till later to nurture himself, and make personal contacts to find their whereabouts. Although the True Martial University was an educational institution... but it was

more like a small country in reality.

In fact, Ye Xiwen was quite glad that he chose to come to True Martial University. Otherwise, he would have been similar to a frog at the bottom of the well, thinking that the world was only as big as its well.

"Well, you wouldn't have found the means to gain such experiences for a lifetime if you had continued to stay in the southeast region!" Ye Mo said with a nod.

"These two days... the last group of new disciples has also arrived!"

"Did you all see what happened yesterday? That person called Ye Xiwen broke his way into the city through the main gate. His has cultivated deeply!"

"He at least has the cultivation of a half-step legendary's Small Complete Realm(1). He will probably become a core disciple after joining in!"

"Yes! If he goes to some small inheritance... he will be treated as a True disciple(2) who has come to train!"

"Yes! Those of us who are nothing but the disciples of Complete Truth realm(3)... we would be treated as outer disciples; even if we were to join a small inheritance!"

“That is not bad you know. We have the advantage since our age is not over 50 years yet. Otherwise, the truth level disciples can only exist as ‘Registered Name’ disciples. Not to mention that Registered Name disciples are equivalent to servants in the university!”

“But we would still have an illustrious reputation outside... even if we are considered as servants in True Martial University. Even the ordinary experts of legendary realm wouldn’t dare to gesticulate while talking to us!”

Having the age of less than 50 years and still being able to reach Complete Truth realm... if these experts would be considered extraordinary if they were in the ten countries of southeast region. However, here, they could only be reduced to the rank of ‘Registered Name’ disciples, and yet they still were secretly delighted.

Ye Xiwen secretly pondered that even these so-called geniuses did not mention their qualifications in this top university of the southern region. In fact, only a few people dared to refer to themselves as geniuses. In reality, they all had become ordinary people.

“This time’s fiercest and most powerful new disciples are those few ones with special physique. However, this is also very rare!”

“What do you mean by special physique? How come I never heard of that?”

“These extraordinary physiques are very rare; almost very difficult to find. Even I don’t know exactly... but some new disciples with special fierce physiques have arrived sweeping all the way from the ancient road. They are completely unstoppable, and there are rumors that they will be chosen as True disciples... or even pro-disciples in the university!”

“Are you talking about that guy with the Titan’s body? I was present on the scene, and saw him with my own eyes. The city gate had collapsed upon nothing more than just a strike of his palm, while those puppets had been smashed to pieces. He had made a complete mess to pass through the gate!”

“In addition, that one with phoenix body had used a sea of fire to burn those wooden puppets, which couldn’t even resist, and were directly reduced to ashes!”

“So fierce! Good gracious, we have so many ferocious characters joining the university... how we will mix them. I just wanted to come to True Martial University to flex my muscles. And here I am, almost reduced to the rank of a mere odd-jobs disciple. The comparison between us and them is simply like distinguishing between mud and cloud!”

“There is nothing to be discouraged about. Although those people with extraordinary physiques are ferocious... they are very few in numbers. The majority of new disciples are ordinary experts. In the past few days, the masters who have arrived are all ordinary masters, and they have run amuck throughout their journey. These ordinary experts are also not inferior to those people!”

“What are these special physiques? Do you know about them?” Ye Xiwen asked Ye Mo in a low voice.

Ye Xiwen showed a bit of interest toward those people with extraordinary physiques. Were these extraordinary physiques really so ferocious?

“I certainly do know about it. In common terms, it can be described as mutation. Every race has a certain mutation, and it is actually quite common. For example, some people are innately stronger than others since the day they are born. But, this kind of mutation has small scope. On the other hand, the mutation of those extraordinary physiques is substantial, and on a deeper level!” Ye Mo further explained, “For example, those with the mutation of a titan’s body, or our Devil World’s famous Great Asura Body and so on. However, these people are often quite ferocious in nature!

“The so-called martial practice generally depends on two innate factors; first is ‘natural talent’ and the second factor is ‘intelligence’. A person who isn’t intelligent cannot possibly comprehend anything. This is the general definition of a genius. The talent is deep-rooted in the very bones of these geniuses. Some people can naturally bridge their hundred arteries, and directly pass from the Houtian realm to the Xiantian realm. Some people can naturally practice fire attribute power technique law at a very fast speed. From this comparison, one can see that the former type is very common, but the latter type is quite rare. And those with special physiques belong to the latter. However, if someone belongs to both the types... then that will be truly terrifying! Then they might become strong by unimaginable proportions; going far beyond common people’s imagination!”

Notes:

Small Complete Realm: This is a level that lies between Fifth Stage and Six Stage. It basically means that the expert is halfway through the realm.

True disciple = It's just a rank within the university. It has nothing to do with the cultivation level of Truth realm.

Outer disciples<Inner disciples<Core disciple<True disciples

Complete Truth Realm: This is a cultivation level that lies between Truth Ninth peak and half-step legendary realm.

Truth Ninth Stage<Truth Ninth Peak<Complete Truth Realm<Half-step Legendary realm.

# Chapter 330: The Hidden Star Peak

---

Ye Xiwen was amazed. There were two factors which defined the meaning of a genius. In fact, one factor was enough for an expert to stand out among his peers. Moreover, an expert who possessed both the factors had not yet emerged. If such an expert were to make an appearance, then they would be sure to become an overnight celebrity.

“Some mutations occur because of the flow of the blood of other races in one’s body. For example, a person with a heavenly phoenix body must have the phoenix’s blood running within the body!” Ye Mo said. “This kind of person is very difficult to deal with when he appears. However, you need not worry as your ‘gilded tyrant form’ is not bad. If you practice it to the pinnacle level, then it will be sufficient to help you fight them. You may even surpass the very founder of this strange technique!”

Ye Xiwen nodded. His ‘gilded tyrant form’ was indeed exceptional. Once he had crossed the first layer of the ‘gilded tyrant form’, he had almost perfected this technique himself. Even then, he didn’t dare to claim credit for it. This was because for the successful practice of his ‘gilded tyrant form’, at least half the credit had to be attributed to the first layer of ‘tyrant body technique’. As they say, no matter how tall a building is, if its foundation isn’t solid, then it would be nothing more than a shabby building built on soybean dregs.

Ye Xiwen had merely patched the existing power technique. He hadn’t really tried to create a power technique of his own.



However, thanks to the ‘gilded tyrant form’, Ye Xiwen had never fallen into a disadvantageous situation when it came to his body’s toughness, except when he had to fight much stronger opponents. Otherwise, he would’ve often had an upper hand in the fights, thanks to his formidable gilded body.

However, the emergence of these special physiques had made Ye Xiwen feel somewhat excited. Earlier, he hadn’t known about the existence of people with special physiques. He only knew that the ‘Great Asura body’ was considered to be the strongest body type in the Devil World. He used to think that sooner or later, he would have to fight the devil with the ‘Great Asura Body. However, he had never thought that he would soon get an opportunity to fight people who had special physiques.

“Although those people have extraordinary physiques and are quite hard to deal with, it can be said that they are walking on a rather narrow road. If they cannot find an authentic road to follow, with an appropriate power technique to assist them along the way, then their so-called special physiques will go to waste. Moreover, they might even end up being inferior to us!”

“Indeed, indeed. Even among those experts whose names can move the entire world, these people with special physiques are very few in numbers. In fact, the majority of them are ordinary people like us!”

The others agreed one by one to what had just been said. Even after knowing how powerful the people with special physiques could be, they still didn’t want to give in to their awe-inspiring might.

Ye Xiwen nodded. Although the people with special physiques were fierce, they were very few in numbers, possibly one in millions.

"No matter what, we are still going to sign up in the university. If we can pass the assessment, we will be able to progress as martial artists by using those big inheritances to our advantage!"

"Those big inheritances are good, but I am afraid that if we enter them, we will have to start from the bottom level. In that case, will there really be any difference between us and those 'Registered Name' disciples? It is better to join the small inheritances. I agree that they have been left behind by the experts of the Sage realm. However, we will at least get to cultivate for the rest of our lives, until we enter the Sage realm. Once that happens, we may even be regarded as the elite crop!"

Everyone had their own opinions. Ye Xiwen also felt somewhat dizzy after seeing so many inheritances. Each inheritance had its own 'background' of considerable degree. In fact, it could be said that the backgrounds of most of these inheritances were far above Yi Yuan School's.

Days passed one by one until one month had already passed in the blink of an eye. Most people had already found the inheritances that suited them.

Only Ye Xiwen had not been able to find one. He had come across many suitable inheritances, but as soon as they would find out his

identity, they immediately rejected him. Although his reputation among these new disciples was not the most dazzling one, it was still quite good. Except Ye Xiwen, almost all the new disciples who had burst through the city gate to enter it had been selected by tyrannical inheritances.

Over time, Ye Xiwen also became thoroughly famous as someone with excellent aptitude, who was being shunned by the major inheritances.

Slowly some rumors and slanders began to circulate among the new disciples.

“That Ye Xiwen is indeed unfortunate. Among the new disciples, he is easily among the top hundred incredible ones. In the past, he used to be regarded as a treasured individual, but now he is nothing more than a weed that nobody wants!”

“This is not so because he has offended the members of the Law Enforcement Hall, but rather because he killed a law enforcement disciple. That disciple was not really important, but by killing him, Ye Xiwen has invoked the wrath of the Law Enforcement Hall. How will people dare to accept him now?”

“Yes! The small inheritances cannot afford to offend Law Enforcement Hall and the big inheritances don’t wish to offend them for just one individual. It is quite unfortunate for a talent like him. It is said that in his journey he has killed many arrogant masters all the way. He certainly wouldn’t have thought that his fate would be to end up like this!”

“However, the fact is that the members of Law Enforcement Hall are wrong. These people intercepted a new disciple like Ye Xiwen at the Ying Xin City gate in order to kill him. If he had died an untimely death, then shouldn't one ask them for an explanation? How is that not unreasonable of them?”

“Humph! These Law Enforcement Hall's members have always been oppressive and tyrannical. They wield the laws of True Martial University. Those who obey the laws will prosper and those who try to go against them will die. An ordinary person cannot dare to annoy them, or they would forever be on bad terms with the Law Enforcement Hall. This time they didn't act against Ye Xiwen because Ying Xin City's Lord acted as his guarantor, or the Law Enforcement Hall would have captured and executed him on the spot! However, the members of the Law Enforcement Hall have still managed to make it impossible for Ye Xiwen to join any inheritances. I must say that their management power is quite amazing. If things go on like this, Ye Xiwen would sadly have no choice but to leave!”

“Excuse me, Young Disciple Ye, but you do not meet the criteria on which we are recruiting new disciples!”

Precious jade and stones were used to pave the main mountain road. The dense fog was emitting a faint light and together with the spiritual energy, it made the entire mountain range seem like paradise on earth.

Ye Xiwen walked up the stone steps and then down. His countenance showed indifference. One simply couldn't tell that he

had been rejected once again. The people in the surroundings were looking strangely at him, as they couldn't tell whether he was happy or sad. Their gazes didn't affect his mood either.

“These people are simply lower than dogs. This True Martial University is no big deal!” Ye Mo said indignantly. He favored Ye Xiwen and had also selected Ye Xiwen to become the next Devil. However, even a small inheritance was not willing to take him in. This was a matter of extraordinary shame and humiliation for Ye Mo.

Ye Xiwen didn't say anything in response. When he had been rejected for the first time, he had felt anger. At present, he was just calm and indifferent. This month had been enough for him to think a lot of things through. The Law Enforcement Hall truly had great influence inside True Martial University. The true extent of their power was hard to imagine. No wonder Ying Xin City's Lord had such a sorry look on his face.

However, if given the opportunity, he would choose the same path once again. He would change nothing. If he started flinching at the first sight of a small bit of difficulty, then his path would never improve.

Experts faced many difficulties on their way. They had to firmly hold on to their beliefs in order to overcome all the obstacles on the way and move forward with conviction.

Ye Xiwen descended from the mountain peak and moved on to another. In contrast to the mountain peak from a while ago, which had a jade pavement and magical energy floating in the air, this

mountain peak looked fairly mediocre. The road going uphill was neither renovated nor maintained. One could see that weeds had piled up on the road all the way to the hilltop. This was because no one bothered that the entire road was submerged in weeds all year round. No disciples could be seen flying around in the sky here, unlike other peaks. All these things were indicated that this peak had already declined.

“Ye Xiwen is climbing the Hidden Star Peak!”

Seeing Ye Xiwen set foot on this ancient peak, a lot of people became suddenly concerned about this unusual turn of events.

“Hidden Star Peak. Are you talking about the Hidden Star Peak which has been hanging at the end of the Top 100 Inheritances for countless years?”

“Yes, I am talking about that Hidden Star Peak! But, I have heard that the Hidden Star Peak used to be extremely rich and powerful once. However, the experts of the Hidden Star Peak later put together their main forces and fought a hard war with foreign beings. The war resulted in the demise of all the experts. This triggered the decline of Hidden Star Peak. The Hidden Star Scriptures were also lost after the war. Without the Hidden Star Scriptures, the Hidden Star Peak naturally declined with time. For thousands of years, it has managed to barely hang at the end of the Top 100 Inheritances. Although it is still counted in the Top 100 Inheritances, perhaps its background is no more than that of an ordinary inheritance!”

“In addition, the temperament of all the disciples on this peak is

eccentric. It's not advisable to provoke them!"

"But I think that this trip of Ye Xiwen will also go in vain. The Law Enforcement Hall has already announced that whoever recruits Ye Xiwen shall be offending them in the process. The Hidden Star Peak declined countless years ago, and is unlikely to offend the Law Enforcement Hall for the sake of Ye Xiwen! "

As far as these comments were concerned, Ye Xiwen had turned a deaf ear to them long ago. Earlier, he had read through the information booklet and learnt about the Hidden Star Peak as well as its location. If the Hidden Star Peak didn't possess such a glorious history, then he would never have shown any interest in it.

Ye Xiwen was naturally proud. He carried several exceptional inheritances which had secretly been transmitted to him. Every one of them was sufficient to turn into a peak level inheritance in its own. The ordinary inheritances couldn't attract his attention at all. The Hidden Star Peak was his final stop. If he failed to get accepted here as well, then he would choose to leave True Martial University. Not to mention that those small inheritances would most likely also choose not to offend the Law Enforcement Hall.

Ye Xiwen followed along a dirt road to go uphill through a meadow. This road was not paved with jades or precious stones. He could tell that nobody had taken care of this road in a very long time. It was not hard to tell that there weren't many disciples in the Hidden Star Peak. From the looks of it, he noticed that this peak didn't even have odd-jobs for disciples for maintenance.

Almost everywhere along the sides of the road, one could clearly see the ruins of magnificent houses, which had apparently belonged to the disciples of the Hidden Star Peak during its golden age.

According to the provisions of the True Martial University, besides the members of a particular inheritance, only a few of the elite disciples were allowed to live on the main peak. A majority of the disciples were supposed to live in the huge city surrounded by True Martial Mountain Range. Within the city, many inheritances had their own designated areas where their disciples used to practice.

However, the Hidden Star Peak was left with only two or three disciples and even they did not wish to live on the main peak. They had no choice but to live in the city.



# Chapter 331: Comprehension Of Principle

---

Ye Xiwen was walking up the peak step by step. One couldn't refrain from flying inside the True Martial University, because one's legs would break if one tried to walk to travel inside the huge university. However, this was the only time when it was considered necessary to walk with absolute sincerity in one's heart.

Ye Xiwen ascended in light steps, and when he reached the top, a young man suddenly came to stand in front of him. He was roughly over 20 years of age. His eyebrows were straight and slanted upwards. His gaze was as sharp as a sword and his eyes resembled stars. He was tall and handsome. The heroic spirit thrived upon this person, as was visible from his facial features. He was clad in a white robe and appeared quite carefree and at ease.

“Are you Ye Xiwen?” the man asked.

“Yes,” Ye Xiwen nodded.

“Come with me!” the man didn't say any words of rejection. This made Ye Xiwen feel relaxed, and he heaved a sigh of relief.

“I am Bai Jian Song. I am the third disciple of this generation of Hidden Star Peak. Now, you are also a disciple of our Hidden Star Peak. There are two more disciples who had arrived earlier than you,” Bai Jian Song said.

“Nice to meet you, Third brother,” Ye Xiwen cupped his hands in

greetings and asked in astonishment, “Isn’t there any need of assessment?”

“What kind of assessment? We only have a few people. If we were to take an assessment, there would be nobody left. Out of so many people who join the True Martial University, where will the inferior talent go? Many peerless geniuses come out of small regions and the ones with good aptitude are chosen among the top picks!” Bai Jian Song didn’t hide anything. He was not worried that Ye Xiwen would be scared away.

Who in the entire True Martial University didn’t know about the current situation of Hidden Star Peak? It could be said that there was nothing good to hide in the first place. Long ago, a large number of disciples used to arrive at the Hidden Star Peak every term.

The reason was quite simple. Although Hidden Star Peak could be said to have declined many years ago, its heritage was ‘Hidden Star Scriptures’, after all. It was considered the finest power technique of True Martial University. So much so that once upon a time, someone had become an invincible character after practicing the Hidden Star Scripture, and was ranked among one of the best of True Martial University. During its strong time, the Hidden Star Peak was ranked one among the Top 10 Great Inheritances and was known to have wealthy and illustrious big shots. However, a lot of experts died in that war, which laid the seeds of its decline at a very fast speed.

Originally however, only a few people had practiced this top-notch power technique. Those people collectively died and as a

result, the Hidden Star Scripture was severed from the inheritance.

However, the Hidden Star scripture still had a chance of reappearing, because it was believed that the Hidden Star Peak had a 'Star Gazing Cliff' on its top. One could actually see the traces of an almighty martial principle, left behind since ancient times on this cliff. It was said that the founder of the Hidden Star Peak had obtained enormous inspiration from these traces. Afterwards, he had formed the Hidden Star Scripture.

The existence of this star cliff was an indication that some people still had the opportunity to comprehend the Hidden Star Scripture. As a result, a lot of people used to arrive on this peak, only to leave in disappointment in the end.

Then slowly everyone lost their interest in the Hidden Star Peak, because the other prominent peaks didn't exactly have inferior power techniques in comparison to the Hidden Star Scripture. Moreover, there was no guarantee that after thousands of years of dormancy, they would be able to readily comprehend it one day. So why would they want to join the Hidden Star Peak just for the Hidden Star Scripture?

As a result, each generation of the Hidden Star Peak only had 2-3 disciples. In the most miserable times, the peak would only have one disciple as their sole descendant.

Ye Xiwen looked at the third brother Bai Jian Song. His aura was restrained, yet unfathomably profound. A transcendental aura was overflowing from his body in the surroundings.

Ye Xiwen's pupils suddenly contracted. This kind of aura was not of the sage realm, but was actually of the half-step sage realm. With this kind of cultivation, he could become a powerful figure in a small inheritance. Although the Hidden Star Peak was known to have declined many years ago, it was clearly much stronger than his imagination.

The opposite party was merely two realms ahead of him but his cultivation had already reached such a tyrannical point. This was simply hard to imagine. (1)

“Third brother, I have offended the people of Law Enforcement Hall. I am afraid that it will also bring some trouble to you,” Ye Xiwen decided to tell the truth.

“If we are not afraid of them, then what are you afraid of? Law Enforcement Hall, humph, for all those years, they have been too arrogant and have overstepped their bounds. They have enslaved many of university's disciples to devote their lives to them. Their fate is indeed dark!” Bai Jian Song said. “Since you have joined the Hidden Star Peak, you have become a disciple of this peak. If the Law Enforcement Hall's members dare to come here looking for you, they will definitely be courting death!”

Bai Jian Song opened his mouth and faintly released a tyrannical aura in the surroundings. He had an invincible self-confidence. Ye Xiwen speculated that this third brother perhaps was not an ordinary person.

“Since you have joined us, I must tell you the rules of the Hidden Star Peak. Our rules are quite simple. You are not allowed to deceive the teachers and you are not allowed to injure the disciples of the same peak. Apart from this, we will not mind anything you do!” Bai Jian Song explained. “Presently, the Hidden Star Peak has six disciples including you. If you count the master, we are seven people altogether.”

Ye Xiwen smiled wryly. The Hidden Star Peak did really have only a few disciples. They were so small in number that altogether there were only seven people. Basically, it could only be considered a mini martial art sect.

“The Eldest brother was the first one to arrive on this peak. He has been following master since childhood. The second to join was a female disciple. She is our Second Sister called Liu Yan Lan. She is current undergoing closed-door training. Since the Eldest Brother and master are not present, and Second Sister is busy training, thus all the matters of the Hidden Star Peak are being handled by me now. Under me is your Four Brother Yang Wen Jun and your Fifth Sister Deng Shui Xin. They arrived before you.”

Bai Jian Song gave the complete introduction of the peak and as expected, there were not too many people. It was a bit pitiful.

Ye Xiwen followed Bai Jian Song and both of them quickly arrived at the crest of the Hidden Star Peak. Two individuals were already waiting there.

One of them was clad in a colorful robe and was a bit taller than Ye Xiwen. He had thick eyebrows and big eyes, and there was a

smile on his square face.

Beside him was a young woman of almost 20 years of age. She was clad in a green long dress and her skin was fairer than snow. Her pointed chin and her small curved eyebrows were complimenting her beauty. Her big watery eyes made her look extremely cute and charming.

Ye Xiwen understood that they must be the fourth and the fifth disciples Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin.

“Third brother, is he our new young disciple? Very good! I am not the youngest one so you cannot order me to do anything!” Deng Shui Xin had a tender gruff smile on her small face. She looked somewhat excited.

“You talk as though we order you around all the time,” Yang Wen Jun said, somewhat helplessly.

“It is nice to meet you, Fourth Brother and Fifth Sister,” Ye Xiwen said as he cupped his hands in greetings. He saw that they were not bad at heart, and he therefore formed good opinions about them.

The cultivation of his two fellow disciples was not shallow either. They must have been at the peak of legendary’s ninth stage, and soon would step into the half-step sage realm. Then their cultivation would become extremely tyrannical.

“Well, you will have plenty of time to talk later. Now at first, I am going to find the ‘Star Gazing Cliff’ with the Sixth Brother!” Bai Jian Song said, interrupting Ye Xiwen’s train of thoughts.

With Bai Jian Song leading the way, Ye Xiwen proceeded towards the sacred land of the Hidden Star Peak where the ‘Star Gazing Cliff’ was located. The entire Hidden Star Peak once used to thrive because of this cliff.

The ‘Star Gazing Cliff’ looked similar to any other ordinary cliff. However, Bai Jian Song said, “We cannot see any clues during the day time. We will have to wait till the evening. I am sure that this Star Gazing Cliff will change at that time!”

Just when the evening was nearing, the curtain of night fell to completely cover the earth. A burst of stars’ power illuminated in the sky and was unexpectedly absorbed by the face of the cliff. At this time, the face of the Star Gazing Cliff began to change slowly before Ye Xiwen’s eyes. It gradually began to look different from before. The silhouette of a person began to sway, and it appeared as if an expert was practicing some kind of peerless martial arts.

Also, it seemed as if someone was chanting the sutras to explain the world’s most exceptional mysteries. Ye Xiwen gradually became lost in thoughts, and his mysterious space began to operate crazily. Ye Xiwen immediately began to break down the ‘truth and reasoning behind the evolution’, which was being projected upon the face of the Star Gazing Cliff.

Bai Jian Song was standing nearby and actually saw Ye Xiwen falling into a meditative state, as if trying to comprehend the

essentials. He was surprised. One must know that the Star Gazing Cliff had been standing erect over here for god knows how many years. It was hard to tell till when it would remain like this. However even after so many years, the comprehension of the Hidden Star Scripture from the Star Gazing Cliff had always been a part of the legends. Most people perceived this cliff as a piece of mountain that shone in the night and nothing more. The Hidden Star Peak was considered as a broken inheritance because besides the first generation's founder, no one had been able to comprehend the Hidden Star Scripture from the Star Gazing Cliff.

The Hidden Star Peak had remained in decline for so many years. But finally, the peak's master had arrived. He had slowly started restoring a portion of the Hidden Star Scripture little by little. However, even after all these years of effort, the Hidden Star Peak only showed a little improvement. The Eldest disciple was also able to comprehend a part of the Hidden Star Scripture with the help of the Star Gazing Cliff. These two men had tried their best to restore the Hidden Star Scripture. They would mutually verify with each other and join the broken parts of their own comprehension. They believed that the day was not very far when the Hidden Star Scripture would be completely restored.

Now it turned out that the Sixth disciple of the Hidden Star Peak was capable of comprehending the traces of martial arts on the Star Gazing Cliff. Could it be that the heavens had decided to return the glory to the Hidden Star Peak after innumerable years?

Bai Jian Song could not control the excitement on his face after he saw this. How many geniuses had been able to comprehend the Star Gazing Cliff before? Was this an indication that something big was about to happen?



[I didn't expect that Ye Xiwen would have this kind of talent. Hidden Star Peak has picked him up for quite a cheap price.]

Bai Jian Song immediately sat down cross-legged near Ye Xiwen. He laid out a protective barrier so that no one would disturb Ye Xiwen while he comprehended. This kind of an opportunity to comprehend principles was rare. In fact, most people would never get this type of an opportunity in their lifetime. It was entirely dependent on one's stroke of luck.

However, Bai Jian Song was not aware of the existence of the mysterious space in Ye Xiwen's mind. Thanks to the existence of the mysterious space, Ye Xiwen could continue to comprehend unceasingly.

As far as Ye Xiwen was concerned, his mysterious space was just helping him in comprehending principles. This was not a huge mystical matter for him.

As long as there were sufficient Spirit Dans (2), there would be no problem at all.

At this time, stars were forming and exploding one by one inside Ye Xiwen's mind. It was just like the Big Bang of the universe; an unceasing cycle of life and death.

During the birth and death of these stars, Ye Xiwen's comprehension of the star power continued to increase slowly.

Ye Xiwen is in half-step legendary realm. The third disciple is in half-step sage realm. Ye Xiwen needs to jump two realms to reach the third disciple's level.

Ling Dan = Spirit Dan

# Chapter 332: Observing Person Scripture

---

Stars were taking birth and exploding at the same time. It seemed as if Ye Xiwen had placed himself in a huge universe where he appeared so tiny.

Ye Xiwen was so tiny in this huge universe, that he was like a grain of dust particle drifting with the flow, while the stars seemed to be exploding on his sides.

It seemed as if something had exploded inside Ye Xiwen's mind. He was having some sort of enlightenment, and the mysterious space was operating crazily.

The loud sound of chanting scriptures almost perturbed the soul and consciousness of Ye Xiwen. However, he kept reading aloud patiently in his mind.

For an ordinary person, it was impossible to maintain this deep-seated state of enlightenment for so long. This kind of state simply could not be sustained.

The sound of chanting scriptures was quite fuzzy. One had to listen carefully many times in order to have only a vague understanding. This was also the reason why the Hidden Star Peak's master and the eldest disciple had been enlightened before. However, they didn't know any way to confirm that what they had heard was correct or not. In order to find out the correct version of the scripture, they had to mutually verify and proofread the outcomes of each other's comprehensions.

However, Ye Xiwen was different. He could be in the perfect state of enlightenment for a long time. As long as there was enough chance for him to stick to doing it, the mysterious space could unceasingly analyze those traces of martial arts for him.

At this time, certainly, the consumption of the spirit energy (1) had also reached an astonishing level. Almost every second, he had to consume ten Spirit Dans. At this consumption rate, even the amount of Spirit Dans that he possessed would not have lasted for too long.

Considering Ye Xiwen's cultivation, the Hidden Star Scripture was extremely profound. He didn't have the means to comprehend most of it. Presently, he was feeling quite agitated. The unknown silhouette of the almighty senior had been constantly repeating the same scriptures over and over again in front of him.

It was not clear or completely remembered since how long Ye Xiwen had been listening to the same scriptures over and over again. He also realized that it was perhaps the complete version of the Hidden Star Scripture. Moreover, it was comparable to the complete version which had been comprehended and practiced by the founder of the Hidden Star Peak.

Ye Xiwen was not aware of what exactly lay in the original Hidden Star Scripture that had been handed down in the very beginning, but he also knew that apart from him, no one else could stay under this high-intensity epiphany for such a long time.

Although Ye Xiwen had a feeling that that fuzzy figure was chanting scriptures for him, it was nothing but a futile attempt. The recited text was full of vague concepts and even remembering one sentence would be considered pretty well. In addition to this, there were many ambiguous spots in it.

Ye Xiwen didn't know how many times he had listened to the scriptures and how many times the mysterious space had analyzed them. Only after that, he dared to be certain that he had heard the final version.

As for the comprehension of the Hidden Star Scripture, Ye Xiwen finally came up with a preliminary concept. This Hidden Star Scripture must be an extraordinary power technique left behind by an almighty being which utilized the great cycle of the world and the universe to draw the power of the universe. Then, it would use the power of the universe to temper and refine oneself every day and every night. It was an unusually extraordinary practice. If practiced to the deepest level, with just a gesture of one's hand, one could break the universe or cause the stars to explode. It was so very terrifying.

Certainly, this was the complete version of the Hidden Star Scripture, otherwise it would be impossible to practice it to such an extent.

While Ye Xiwen was continuously listening to the Hidden Star Scripture and getting clearer insights, on the outside the power of the stars had begun to gradually shine upon Ye Xiwen's body from the night sky. It had spread out a layer of silvery white cloth on his body.

With Ye Xiwen's comprehension of the Hidden Star Scripture nearing completion, the power of the stars in the sky was rising crazily and was frantically illuminating his body. His body had absorbed the starlight which had slowly taken the shape of a gigantic storm.

The power of the stars had condensed to form a storm.

Bai Jian Song was startled as he saw this strange form of Ye Xiwen. He couldn't understand what had just happened to produce such a loud noise. He quickly laid out a huge enchantment barrier to cover Ye Xiwen from all sides, not allowing the strange form from divulging.

Immediately, he felt a burst of ecstasy because he could see that Ye Xiwen had clearly comprehended the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. It was only possible to draw out the power of the stars which was crazily illuminating upon him after one had practiced the Hidden Star Scripture,.

Since Ye Xiwen had comprehended the Hidden Star Scripture, he was hoping that now it would be possible to restore its full version with his help.

He didn't know that Ye Xiwen had not only comprehended the Hidden Star Scripture, but also that his comprehension had been more complete and esoteric than that of the founder of the Hidden Star Peak.

Bai Jian Song remained silent and didn't dare to disturb the comprehension process of Ye Xiwen. However, he was very delighted.

For Ye Xiwen, the Hidden Star Scripture had an enormous reference value. However, this was not the road that he must take.

The Hidden Star Scripture would help him in accumulating experience to the utmost. It could allow him to borrow the strength of the heavens to run amuck. He could be fearless and exceptional, but his limitless path of hegemony was in conflict with it.

Because the road on which Ye Xiwen was walking, required his body to be strong until he could break all the shackles - to achieve the supreme existence.

In other words, the Hidden Star Scripture would follow the path of primordial spirit method, whereas Ye Xiwen used corporeal body method. These two methods were entire different.

Although the Hidden Star Scripture also had a method to temper one's body using the power of the stars, it was in the final phase of the primordial spirit method.

For other people, perhaps it could be said that they didn't have any relation with this method because they could not come in contact with a matter of this level. However, for Ye Xiwen, it was only a matter of choice.

Although Ye Mo was only a spirit, he had followed his master for far too long and knew a lot of things. Most of these things would be considered extremely mysterious for others, but it was casual for Ye Mo to know all this.

Under Ye Mo's influence, Ye Xiwen had come to know about a lot of things which were simply unknown to other people.

In the distant past, there used to be a powerful group of cultivators. They used primordial spirit method to realize the heavenly law. Ultimately, they placed their own primordial spirit above the heavenly law in order to achieve immortality. However, they had vanished a long time ago, and at least were considered rare in Zhen Wu Jie (2). They were replaced by the rising martial experts, who walked on a completely different road.

Those cultivators saw the entire universe as one circle. Moreover, they integrated themselves with the heavenly law to become a part of it. What they practiced was a completely different method. The martial warriors used another method in which they viewed their own corporeal body as a small circle to become a small universe themselves.

Although the complete version of the Hidden Star Scripture was extremely powerful, it was an entirely different path for Ye Xiwen.

It was a path that Ye Xiwen could not choose.

“Ye Xiwen, this is a superb opportunity. You are in this rare state of enlightenment!” Ye Mo said. “If you don't want to practice the



Hidden Star Scripture, then I suggest you take the advantage of this opportunity to create your own power technique!”

Ye Xiwen knew what Ye Mo was trying to say. In fact, Ye Xiwen had been practicing the ‘Bright Jade technique’ from the beginning until now. It certainly was not the original version of the ‘Bright Jade Technique’. Rather, he had been constantly strengthening it for such a long time that it had already changed beyond recognition. Ye Xiwen regarded the ‘Bright Jade Technique’ as a valued, fair and honest technique in his arsenal. No matter which power technique he practiced, all of them were incorporated inside the orbit of the ‘Bright Jade Technique’. Although Ye Xiwen had learnt several secret techniques, including those belonging to non-human races as well, he could wander freely without any inconvenience, thanks to the tolerant nature of the ‘Bright Jade Technique’. (3)

Ye Xiwen had practiced a lot of power techniques which were incomparably overbearing. If not for the harmonious nature of the ‘Bright Jade Technique’, it would have been difficult for him to manage his injuries. This was the reason why even though he had obtained a lot of opportunities to practice even more formidable power techniques, he hadn’t budged from his choice.

However, the ‘Bright Jade Technique’ was too low a starting point. It was merely a Xiantian level power technique. When the starting point itself was too low, even strengthening it further wouldn’t work well. In fact, he had slowly become unable to keep up with Ye Xiwen’s pace. He had finally become aware that the ‘Bright Jade Technique’ was merely a water jar; no matter how much effort was put to strengthen it, it could never become an ocean.

It had been dragging down the pace of his progress. It was time to change it for good.

In the outside world, the day had already received the first glimmer of light. The starlight had also gradually dissipated in the sky. The power of the stars which had assembled frantically had also disseminated gradually.

However, Ye Xiwen's strange form actually hadn't reduced even a bit. On the contrary, it changed once again. Originally, only the power of the stars was being absorbed by him. However, right now, a cosmic aura was overflowing from his body. He was no longer absorbing the power of the stars. On the contrary, his body was actually emitting out the power of the stars.

Ye Xiwen's body started emitting more and more powerful rays of light. His entire body began to appear like a huge star that was emitting endless rays of light, as if illuminating the entire universe.

Ye Xiwen's imposing aura surged up and finally reached the peak. At this time, the protective barrier which had been laid out by Bai Jian Song somewhat trembled, and Ye Xiwen suddenly opened his eyes.

“Finally, it's complete! ‘Observing Person Scripture’ First Layer!”  
(4)

Inside Ye Xiwen's Dantian, a small dazzling Sun was floating

calmly and was illuminating his entire Dantian.

Ling Dan = Spirit Dan

Ling qi = Spirit energy

Zhen Wu Jie is the name of the continent this story is currently based in.

Bright Jade Technique a.k.a 'Ming Yu Technique' was the first power technique practiced by Ye Xiwen. Please check the first few chapters to learn more about it.

The reason why Ye Xiwen named it as 'Observing Person Scripture' is explained in the next chapter.

# Chapter 333: The Heavenly Tribulation Is Called Forth

---

Originally, Ye Xiwen's Dantian had been pitch-black. However, now it was radiating more sunshine than the sun itself and illuminating his entire Dantian. It seemed as if the rays of light had given birth to the primal chaos inside his Dantian.

If Ye Xiwen's Dantian had been a universe, then this sun would be the center of it. It would also be at the origin point of that universe.

The 'Observing Person Scripture' was Ye Xiwen's own creation '. The 'Observing Person Scripture' observed one's own human body as the supreme universe. (1)

For a long time now, a saying existed among the experts that the human body was like a small universe. However, nobody really tempered their body to form a small universe.

However, Ye Xiwen dared to do so at once. After comprehending the Hidden Star Scripture, he came up with a crazy idea to give frantic rise to his understanding of the entire universe. He thought of establishing a universe within his body by tempering his corporeal body, considering it a small universe. This really was a crazy idea.

However, when Ye Xiwen's deduction of the 'Observing Person Scripture' had been completed after an entire night, he finally detonated his Dantian. Just like the massive explosion during the

Big Bang of the universe, a rift had been torn open in his Dantian along with the creation of a scorching sun.

The small universe within Ye Xiwen's body was actually the starting point. Later, along with the 'Observing Person Scripture', he would have a continuous improvement and unceasing breakthroughs. The small universe within his body would also become more and more perfect and transform into a galaxy, nebula, and universe and finally, it would evolve into a True Universe. The 'Observing Person Scripture' might also become a stunning ancient scripture later on.

However, the 'Observing Person Scripture' was still in its embryonic stage right now. Everything about it was still unknown. The theory of Ye Xiwen's body turning into a small universe and his own comprehension of the 'Hidden Star Scripture' had finally come together to form his own thing.

The 'Hidden Star Scripture' had many things which were worthy enough to be used as references by Ye Xiwen. In addition, the method of drawing power of 'the Heaven and Earth' to temper as well as refine one's own corporeal body was also worthy of being used as a reference. The power of these stars could also be accumulated for the nourishment of his 'gilded tyrant form'.

Although Ye Xiwen could not walk on this path, he could still use many of these things as a reference.

It could be said that Ye Xiwen had benefitted a lot this time. This was the first time he had fully confirmed the path he had to take. Although it had been quite difficult to determine this direction, he

would certainly overcome all the obstacles to forge ahead.

Ye Xiwen opened his eyes and found Bai Jian Song looking at him, seeming pleasantly surprised. Bai Jian Song said, “Sixth Brother, you were comprehending the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’, weren’t you?”

Ye Xiwen nodded, not trying to hide anything. His real secret was not the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’; rather it was the ‘Observing Person Scripture’. Although the ‘Observing Person Scripture’ had not been completed yet, he was confident that he would continue to improve it. The ancient sages had created earth shattering Ancient God’s Scriptures in the past, and now he could too.

“Great! Now we have three people on the Hidden Star Peak who can comprehend the Hidden Star Scripture. That day is not far when the Hidden Star Scripture will be completely restored!” Bai Jian Song received Ye Xiwen’s affirmative. He was pleasantly surprised. Earlier, from generation to generation, some people had managed to comprehend the Hidden Star Scripture little by little. They had amended it gradually, which had ultimately led to the prosperity of the Hidden Star Peak.

The Hidden Star Scripture was a great fundamental principle of the Hidden Star Peak. Because it had gone missing, the peak had been hanging at the end of the Top 100 Inheritances for such a long time. Now it was only known as a small inheritance with only a few disciples.

“I have already sent the message to inform Master and the Eldest Brother,” Bai Jian Song said.

After hearing Bai Jian Song's explanation, Ye Xiwen came to know that the Hidden Star Peak's Master and the Eldest disciple had gone to the foreign battlefield, where their predecessors had been nearly wiped out in a war. They had hoped to find clues regarding the Hidden Star Scripture that those predecessors might have left behind. In fact, this step had also been taken by the Hidden Star Peak's Masters of the previous generations. However, there had been only a little progress so far.

"Sixth brother, by mutually verifying your version of the Hidden Star Scripture with ours, the restoration of the Hidden Star Scripture will advance quickly!" Bai Jian Song said.

Ye Xiwen saw that Bai Jian Song was wholeheartedly devoted towards the Hidden Star Peak. The smile on his face was not artificial, and Ye Xiwen immediately began to admire him in his heart.

"The Eldest Brother should be back after the completion of your 'Newcomer's Trial Big Competition'(3)!" Bai Jian Song said.

"Newcomer's Trial Big Competition?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Yes, that's right!" Bai Jian Song said seriously, "The 'Newcomer's Trial Big Competition' is very important for every peak because the performance of the new disciples decides the amount of resources every peak will get. The more brilliantly you perform, the more resources we will get!"

“Hehe, this time we have picked up a great deal at quite a cheap price. We will make good use of your innate talent, which is absolutely sufficient to place you among the top hundred disciples. If they don’t have innate talent like yours, then it’s their loss!” Bai Jian Song said, smiling mischievously.

“In fact, since only less than a month is left for the competition to start, you must also begin preparations. Also, beware of the young brats of the Law Enforcement Hall. They must be plotting against you!” Bai Jian Song said. “Judging by their disposition and how they seek revenge even for the slightest grievance, they will certainly come for you!”

“Understood,” Ye Xiwen nodded. It was needless to say that if the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall tried to create trouble for him, he would also not stay silent.

“This ‘Newcomer’s Trial Big Competition’ will take place in the foreign territory. The foreign territory is a place located outside the bounds of this world. The foreign territory has many foreign beings which are all rampant and many of them have tried to invade our Zhen Wu Jie (2). In the trials, you must eliminate the strange beasts that try to approach you,” Bai Jian Song said, and then added, “Certainly, there will be no extremely tyrannical beasts, or you will not be able to deal with them!”

“This time over a million new disciples will participate in the competition. Moreover, the disciples of the half-step legendary third stage or higher will also be present among them,” Bai Jian Song said and then continued, “I have heard that this time many tyrannical youngsters with extraordinary physiques are



participating as well. They are already at the half-step legendary eighth or ninth stage. These people are really monstrous and the university must focus on the training of such disciples.”

Ye Xiwen was surprised when he heard this. It could be said that the experts of the half-stage legendary's eighth and ninth stage already possessed the peak strength of the legendary realm. These experts were considered to be a terrifying presence, and were strong enough to run amuck in the southern region.

Ye Xiwen had not expected to find such experts among his peers. He was really dumbstruck. Presently, he was at the half-stage legendry's fifth stage and his combat strength was comparable to the half-strength legendry's sixth stage.

The young generation was full of talented individuals in hiding, especially people with extraordinary physiques. Therefore, the emergence of these monstrous disciples (4) was not really an issue.

“Your innate talent is pretty good. I can already tell that you will have boundless future prospects. You shall never be treated as a stepping stone by these monstrous disciples (4)!” Bai Jian Song praised Ye Xiwen repeatedly.

Presently, the Hidden Star Peak's Master and the Eldest disciple were in the foreign territory and the Second Sister was undergoing closed door training. So, only Bai Jian Song could bear the responsibility of warning Ye Xiwen about these things.

Suddenly, a dignified look appeared in Ye Xiwen's eyes, and black

clouds began to gather up in the distant sky.

Ye Xiwen was about to cross the Heavenly Tribulation!

“Crap! Do you really want to cross the Heavenly Tribulation?” Bai Jian Song saw the black clouds assembling in the distance. However, he didn’t know how the Heavenly Tribulation had suddenly arrived for Ye Xiwen.

Yesterday, Ye Xiwen had showed no signs of facing the Heavenly Tribulation. This was the indication that he must have obtained enormous benefits from last night’s comprehension.

No wonder he was about to face the Heavenly Tribulation and that too right after the end of his state of enlightenment.

Bai Jian Song sighed with emotion. Venturing into a deep state of enlightenment certainly had enormous benefits. Unfortunately, most people rarely got the chance to experience such a state of enlightenment in their entire lives.

Ye Xiwen stood up and was about to fly out of the campus of True Martial University. He didn’t want to cross the Heavenly Tribulation here. However, Bai Jian Song stopped him and said, “You can stay here to cross the Heavenly Tribulation, as it doesn’t matter. You don’t have to worry about crossing the Heavenly Tribulation here inside True Martial University. You can cross it here on our Hidden Star Peak.”

Ye Xiwen was convinced that he really wasn't in the Yi Yuan School anymore. In the Yi Yuan School, the entire school would get alarmed if one tried to cross the Heavenly Tribulation. However, it didn't matter at all in the True Martial University. There were over a million new disciples, and many more senior disciples. It could even be said that people kept crossing the Heavenly Tribulation almost all the time.

Ye Xiwen wanted to find a safe place because he was afraid to disturb other people. Although Bai Jian Song was here to lay out the protective barrier which would safeguard him, if the word went out about this then it would attract people's attention and might compromise his safety.

However, now he didn't have the time to think anymore, because the Heavenly Tribulation had already begun.

The Heavenly Tribulation began to pour down thunder and lightning weapons. Sword, spear, double-edged sword, halberd - a total of 18 kinds of thunder and lightning weapons condensed and rushed down towards Ye Xiwen. It appeared as if he was under a heavy rain of weapons, which finally crashed upon his body.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

Bai Jian Song, who was beside Ye Xiwen, coldly snorted and laid out a protective barrier in a flash, thereby preventing the soul searches (5) of the other peaks from probing. Ye Xiwen's Heavenly Tribulation made him gasp in amazement. This was a strange Heavenly Tribulation. It was not like an ordinary Heavenly Tribulation, and was quite terrifying. It could be said that an average person wouldn't be able to survive this tribulation, and wouldn't even dare to think about crossing it.

Notes:

One must observe one's own body in order to observe the universe. Hence the name of the principle is 'Observing Person Scripture'.

Zhen Wu Jie a.k.a 'True Martial World' is the name of the world in which this novel's story is based.

Newcomer's Trial Big Competition: This is a trial as well as a competition. It's a trial because new disciples have to face foreign beings and survive. It's a competition because the winners will take back rewards to their peaks.

Literal translation for these monster disciples would be 'evildoers'

Soul search or 'soul perception' or 'soul idea' is a method like soul sensing. Experts can use soul search technique to sense a variety of things from afar. They can sense each other, or they can converse with each other using this technique.

# Chapter 334: The Half-Step Legendary Small Complete Realm

---

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

The weapons finally crashed on Ye Xiwen's body and exploded. However, not much damage was caused. It looked as if his body was on fire as a puff of black smoke emitted from it.

Ye Xiwen not only looked fearless as he faced the 'Heavenly Tribulation', but also operated the newly formed 'Observing Person Scripture'. He absorbed the thunder and lightning weapons in a flash. This was the first time the absorbed energies had not been used in refining his 'gilded tyrant form'.

Rather, the entire energy had been absorbed into the chaotic universe inside Ye Xiwen's dantian. Immediately, lightning flashes burst inside his dantian. They seemed to resemble the creation scene of the universe. The original chaotic environment inside his dantian had transformed enormously. The space inside his dantian became even bigger due to the lightning.

Ye Xiwen was trying to make use of this 'tribulation thunder' to set up his own universe. At present, it could only be regarded as a dantian, and not really a universe. However, he firmly believed

that sooner or later he would be able to set up his own.

Following the increase in the absorption of the ‘tribulation thunder’, the space within Ye Xiwen’s dantian became even bigger. His ‘Observing Person Scripture’ also became better. The essence of the ‘Observing Person Scripture’ was to create a small universe within the human body. The power of the ‘Heavenly Tribulation’ accelerated this process.

“Crap! What is this strange practice method of using the ‘tribulation thunder’?” Bai Jian Song was left dumbstruck as he watched Ye Xiwen absorbing the ‘tribulation thunder’. This was no ordinary energy; it was the ‘tribulation thunder’ — the strongest and most violent positive energy in the world. Even if he could successfully absorb these energies, his meridians would be destroyed. It was both beneficial as well as harmful.

However, Ye Xiwen could actually absorb these energies because his body was tougher than anyone could’ve imagined.

“I can tell that he does not have a special physique. Could it be possible that he has practiced an outstanding power technique?” Bai Jian Song made obscure speculations. However, Ye Xiwen was a disciple of the Hidden Star Peak. The more powerful he became, the happier Bai Jian Song would be.

Crash! Bang! The rain of the ‘tribulation thunder’ became more condensed in the sky, but still they couldn’t budge Ye Xiwen. Contrary to expectation, he became even more powerful by absorbing the energy in this ‘tribulation thunder’.

In the sky, the lightning didn't condense to form weapons. Instead, it gave birth to terrifying demons. These beasts began to rush towards Ye Xiwen.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

The sky emitted an earth-shaking sound as the golden shadows of the lightning demon beasts appeared midair.

One after another, these lightning beasts opened their mouths wide like sacrificial bowls,<sup>(1)</sup> and advanced towards Ye Xiwen. Their long-range raid began to shake the entire horizon.

Ye Xiwen maintained a dignified look. This time, the 'Heavenly Tribulation' had taken a qualitative leap and had become horribly powerful.

This 'Heavenly Tribulation' was to cross over to the half-step legendary's 'Small Complete Realm'. The half-step legendary realm had three major tribulations that one must cross – at the time of making the breakthrough into the 'Small Complete Realm', the 'Full Complete Realm', and the half-step sage realm.

If it had happened earlier, perhaps even Ye Xiwen wouldn't have been able to deal with this kind of a 'Heavenly Tribulation'. However, since he had already created the 'Observing Person Scripture' by then, his understanding of the different types of secret skills had improved.

Although the 'Bright Jade Technique' was fair and moderate, Ye Xiwen had still created different kinds of secret skills to use this technique in a better way. These skills came in quite handy. However, now that he had created the 'Observing Person Scripture', he was finally able to wield these skills freely since it was his own power technique.

Ye Xiwen immediately transformed into a stream of light since he was faced with an army of infinite lightning beasts. He then advanced towards them. It was hard to tell, but perhaps they were several thousand, ten thousand or even more in number. All of them had a ferocious look on their faces. The leader of the lightning beasts let out a roar which shook the heaven and the earth. It seemed as if he could conquer the world.

The leader's imposing aura shook the sky, whereas the electric flashes made it difficult for the people to look at it.

The lightning beasts were greatly provoked when they saw that Ye Xiwen had not backed down and was rather rushing towards them. They roared over and over, and advanced to kill him.

In spite of their grotesque looks, the lightning beasts were still using fine martial arts. Moreover, their martial arts techniques were exquisite, and had an endless might.



Ye Xiwen roared loudly, and shot his palm forward. A big golden divine hand rose against the wind, and got increasingly bigger. It grabbed dozens of lightning beasts. The lightning beasts were crushed and transformed into the purest of the thunder energies; energies even purer than the ones contained in the raining weapons. These energies were entirely absorbed by Ye Xiwen. As a result, his dantian expanded a little more.

Along with the primal chaos, (2) the ‘tribulation thunder’ exploded again and again inside his dantian. This gave rise to a huge chemical reaction.

The transformation took place little by little.

Ye Xiwen didn’t hesitate. He shot his fist and superbly displayed the ‘Coiling Dragon Palm’. Although he hadn’t deduced all its moves, he had already reached the peak of the ones he had.

Like a dense rain cloud, Ye Xiwen’s palm shadow went forward and slapped the lightning beasts in quick succession and dispersed them everywhere. There simply was no way to hurt Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen slaughtered his way around the excessively outrageous army of the lightning beasts. All of them were at the half-step legendary’s ‘Small Complete realm’. In addition, some of them were the dreadful beasts of the half-step legendary sixth stage.

Although they were attacking Ye Xiwen with all their strength, they were unable to affront his ‘gilded tyrant form’. Nothing could

be done to hurt him. Even if some of the beasts of the half-step legendary sixth stage were able to injure him, his phoenix regeneration technique would immediately begin to heal his wounds.

Ye Xiwen's palm attack easily smashed several lightning beasts in a single blow, and then completely absorbed their energies. After that, his strength increased further.

The more he fought, the fiercer he became.

The scene could easily have frightened any witnessing outsider. For most people, the 'Heavenly Tribulation' was the biggest threat. The problem was the fact that it was very dangerous. Many people couldn't even cross an ordinary one, whereas this was a strange 'Heavenly Tribulation'. Such a strange 'Heavenly Tribulation' was very difficult to cross because all its lightning beasts were at the half-step legendary's 'Small Complete realm'. Those who wanted to cross the 'Heavenly Tribulation' of the 'Small Complete Realm' would have to face these lightning beasts, which was simply impossible.

Unquestionably, crushing the lightning beasts with such ease was unthinkable. Although he was at the half-step legendary fifth stage, his combat strength was enough to sweep away the beasts of the half-step legendary sixth stage. His strength was comparable to the combined might of hundreds of individuals of the half-step legendary's 'Small Complete realm'.

Only Ye Xiwen could cross this kind of a 'Heavenly Tribulation'.

The other two disciples on the Hidden Star Peak, namely Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin, ran over to watch. They couldn't possibly miss such a huge battle. Bai Jian Song had prevented the Soul Searches of the experts of other peaks from entering this one using a protective barrier. Even then, how could they not have noticed such a big event?

The entire Hidden Star Peak could feel the incomparable pressure of this terrifying 'Heavenly Tribulation'.

"This is a strange 'Heavenly Tribulation'. We definitely don't have any other person like him on our Hidden Star Peak!" exclaimed Deng Shui Xin, with her beautiful eyes wide open. She could not believe it because she was a simple-minded disciple.

"This world of evildoers (3) is too much to take. Ordinary people like us should not confuse our heads in a bid to apprehend it!" Yang Wen Jun couldn't believe it either. They hadn't seen such a genius crossing a 'Heavenly Tribulation'. They had seen people who had been called geniuses before, but their 'Heavenly Tribulation' had never been as strange as his.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

Ye Xiwen didn't even know how many lightning beasts he had blown off. He was only absorbing their energies and was focusing on the task of setting up the primal chaos within his dantian.

As the 'Observing Person Scripture' was operating inside his body, his comprehension of the same was also rising step by step.

Ye Xiwen regained his calm after slaughtering numerous lightning beasts in the sky. Although the lightning beasts had suffered huge damages, they still didn't retreat. Instead, they advanced towards him with all their strength.

Bang! When the last lightning beast was smashed by Ye Xiwen's palm attack, the tribulation clouds began to slowly fade away.

As soon as the 'Heavenly Tribulation' ended, Ye Xiwen made the breakthrough and reached the half-step legendary's small complete realm.

Ye Xiwen then sat down cross-legged to examine the primal chaos inside his dantian. Finally, a small planet had formed, and had begun to revolve around the sun which was emitting endless rays of light.

Every rotation spurred incomparable terrifying power.

Ye Xiwen heaved a sigh of relief because he had finally entered the half-step legendary's small complete realm. His combat power had improved, and now it could sweep away even an expert of the

half-step legendary seventh stage. In fact, he could even compete against the weak experts of the half-step legendary eighth stage.

The 'Heavenly Tribulation' for entering the half-step legendary's 'Small Complete realm' was one of the three tribulations which were the toughest to cross. Ye Xiwen compared this to the previous one, and started to feel that it simply couldn't be done. It was like distinguishing between cloud and mud.

Because he had created the 'Observing Person Scripture,' and had crossed this type of a 'Heavenly Tribulation', it could even be said that Ye Xiwen could easily cross 10-20 more such.

Now that he had conveniently grasped it, he could feel the tyrannical power flowing inside his body.

Idiom - bloody mouth wide open like a sacrificial bowl

Primal Chaos: formless mass before creation in Chinese mythology

Evildoer: It is a term used to refer to peerless geniuses, who are very few in numbers and possess unimaginable powers that are hard to understand for ordinary experts.

An alternate term for this is 'monster'.

# Chapter 335: Foreign Battlefield

---

For the next two weeks, Ye Xiwen underwent closed-door training. He needed to consolidate his cultivation as he had just made the breakthrough into the half-step legendary's 'Small Complete realm'. He also needed some time to adapt so that he could thoroughly exhibit his newly gained strength.

This morning, the sunlight spread through the earth, tearing down the curtain of night. Ye Xiwen was ready to start his preparation for the upcoming trial.

He immediately got up to push open the gate of his small courtyard. At this time, Bai Jian Song, Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin were also ready.

Since the last two weeks, Ye Xiwen's relationship with them had sincerely improved. He was completely integrated into the Hidden Star Peak. The Hidden Star Peak didn't have many inhabitants. However, all of them were united. He really liked this kind of atmosphere. He didn't like a place where people fight and scheme against each other(1) all the time.

"Young Brother, you must strive for our Hidden Star Peak," Deng Shui Xin said, waving her small fist.

"Relax. The Sixth Brother is definitely better than both of you," said Bai Jian Song, looking towards Ye Xiwen.

He added, "Come on, let's go,"

Under Bai Jian Song's leadership, Ye Xiwen descended from the Hidden Star Peak. He arrived at a spacious and empty valley located nearby. At this time, the valley was densely packed with over a thousand of new disciples. This time, they were going to proceed towards the foreign territory.

They had gathered to go to the foreign territory. One-third of these disciples constituted the main forces of the 'Broken Moon Peak'. The 'Broken Moon Peak' was one of the Top 100 Inheritances. The rest of the new disciples belonged to various other inheritances.

Similarly, all other inheritances which were part of the Top 100 Inheritances had their own teams of new disciples. But, Ye Xiwen was without any companion. The 'Broken Moon Peak' had a mighty team of more than 300 people. This team gave off a completely different feeling in comparison to others.

If a person who entered True Martial University was a genius according to the Yi Yuan School's standard, then the people who entered the Top 100 Inheritances were elites among elites. In fact, these people were considered elites even according to the True Martial University's standard.

They were glowing with health and were full of pride.

Undoubtedly, the new disciples of other peaks were nothing in comparison to the new disciples of the 'Broken Moon Peak'.

As soon as everyone assembled, the elder of the 'Broken Moon Peak' opened the Transmission Array. He wanted to send these disciples to the foreign battlefield. Among all the nearby inheritances, only the 'Broken Moon Peak' had the Transmission Array for sending the disciples to the foreign battlefield.

In a blink of an eye, everyone was sent to the foreign battlefield. This territory had a vast starry sky gazing downwards. Although it was hard to see in this fuzzy environment, this continent looked huge in comparison to Zhen Wu Jie (2). It was vast to the extent that one's gaze could not reach its edge.

The foreign battlefield was like a huge continent. No one was aware of its length and breadth. It might have extended to hundreds of thousands of miles. The influential forces of Zhen Wu Jie had resisted the invasion of many foreign forces in this foreign battlefield.

Everyone had become aware that this was not the most intense battle front. If this was, then it would be impossible for the new disciples to survive.

Ye Xiwen looked as far as he could and noticed that it was a completely desolate land. The environment here was not a vacuum as he had imagined. On the contrary, it actually had a slight presence of the spirit energy (3). Although the environment here was quite harsh, it was not impossible to survive.

This spirit energy was very violent. When it blew against one's face, it seemed as if it was scrapping the face like a steel knife. In fact, some of the weaker new disciples had their meridians cut



after absorbing this spirit energy.

Everyone was dumbstruck. This foreign battlefield was more dangerous than they had thought. The new disciples, who were considered treasures in other places, had no importance at all in True Martial University. They were feeling as worthless as a mustard plant.

The foreign battlefield lived up to its reputation.

The elder of the 'Broken Moon Peak' lightly said, "Well, this is the foreign battlefield. Although it is not the front line, there are many foreign beasts that live here. Our 'Broken Peak Moon' has a city nearby called the 'Broken Moon City'. You can temporarily take shelter there. In the future, you can move out of the city and kill those strange beasts. I believe that before you came here, your seniors must have told you that more the number of beasts you kill, the better result you will get. More resources will be inclined towards your inheritance. All of you are smart and great talents from different regions. You must understand that in order to strive forward, you must rely on your own hands to fight. If you want to succeed, you can only rely on yourself. There are secret heritages that were left behind by many sages here. Whether you can rise or not, that totally depends on you!"

Everyone got excited and stood up. They were able to stand here because all of them were outstanding talents. They didn't come from a supercilious generation. The many heritages which were left behind by the sages could help them in rising beyond their countless peers. Hence, everyone rolled up their sleeves and geared up for the battle.

The elder of the 'Broken Moon Peak' didn't say anything and led them towards the 'Broken Moon City'.

Although that city could accommodate one million people, at this time it appeared relatively empty.

After bringing everyone, the elder of the 'Broken Moon Peak' turned around and flew back.

-----

The dim light of the night shrouded the earth. The spirit energy began to sweep across; a hundred times more violently than the daytime. In this situation, there was no chance for an average person to survive. Let alone an average person, it was difficult even for a truth level master to walk in this wilderness. Even the legendary or the half-step legendary's masters could be greatly affected by this.

From afar, the intermittent roars of strange beasts' reverberated. It was quite terrifying. These were not just the frantic roars of strange beasts, but also the furious roars of Yin spirits(4).

This foreign battlefield was the first battle front to resist the invasion of foreign forces. Only God knows how many powerhouses had fallen here; many of them had turned into Yin spirits. They were undead creatures who haunted this place. They were very dangerous.

If there were no such city, then it would have been impossible for these new disciples to survive in this foreign battlefield.

Ye Xiwen sat cross-legged in a room inside a small courtyard. The entire city was very big. At present, there were only over a thousand new disciples inside. So, it seemed that everyone could have their own small courtyard.

The spirit energy in the foreign battlefield was hundred times more violent than in Zhen Wu Jie.

Even if Ye Xiwen were to absorb this spirit energy with his 'gilded tyrant form', he would feel quite uncomfortable inside his meridians. Needless to say, the process of absorption would be very difficult for other people.

However, the advantage was also obvious. Here, the long-term practice could incessantly increase the strength of one's body little by little.

Nevertheless, this pain was nothing more than a tickle for Ye Xiwen.

The night in the foreign battlefield was very long and unendurable. The environment of this battlefield was quite harsh. Most of these God's cherished ones had clearly understood that in this foreign battlefield, they were extremely weak and vulnerable.

“If I will practice here, perhaps I will again have a breakthrough very soon!” Ye Xiwen said while looking towards the strange moonlight outside the window. He also heard the roaring sound of the tyrannical strange beasts.

At this time, Ye Mo appeared and said, “However, it is also very dangerous here. The strange beasts in this foreign territory are a huge threat, similar to any other place. These strange beasts are so tyrannical that they have stars as food to survive in this universe!”

Ye Xiwen nodded and left the room. He trod under the moonlight for a while, and then flew out of the city. Although the environment was quite intense, it was not a problem for his ‘gilded tyrant form’.

Ye Xiwen flew over a hundred miles away from the city. But, suddenly he ran into trouble. Large quantities of Yin Feng (5) blew slantingly and condensed into evil spirits. They were probably the strange beasts that lived here. They could also be the worthy predecessors of True Martial University. The predecessors of True Martial University had died here and the remnants of their resentment had turned into evil spirits. The leader of those evil spirits suddenly let out a strange cry.

“Jie Jie, this is such an excellent human specimen! If we devour his energy and blood, then we can condense our own bodies. Then, we will be able to detach ourselves from this ghostly appearance!”  
(6)

Accompanied by baneful laughter, an evil spirit condensed its ghostly form. It looked like an ancient general, clad in the scaled

armor. His spear was suppressing the sky itself. Unexpectedly, he turned out to be a master of half-step legendary's 'Small Complete realm'.

Behind him, many other evil spirits also condensed their forms. Their appearance seemingly changed to the likes of soldiers. The most inferior amongst them was a master of 'Complete Truth realm'. Whereas, there were many tyrannical ghosts of legendary realm as well.

"Jie Jie, hand over your body to me!" The evil spirit general laughed cruelly. He rushed towards Ye Xiwen, simultaneously thrusting his spear forward. Before arriving in front of Ye Xiwen, it seemed as if the spear had pierced the stars and cracked up the space.

These evil spirits would be considered inferior to Ye Xiwen, even before he had crossed the strange 'Heavenly Tribulation'. Unquestionably, dealing with them was nothing more than a piece of cake for him.

Ye Xiwen extended his big hand and grabbed the spear. Once it fell into his grip, the spear couldn't move.

"Bang!" The spear was crushed by Ye Xiwen, causing it to explode. The evil spirit general was also blown off by Ye Xiwen's fist attack.

The evil spirit general transformed into a group of energy, which was then absorbed by Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen had used the Tianyuan

mirror (7) to transform and absorb the energy.

As far as the evil spirit soldiers were concerned, they simply weren't Ye Xiwen's opponents. He immediately grabbed them with his big hand and pinched them to explode.

“This foreign battlefield is really very dangerous. Even these evil spirits aren't ordinary!”

(To be continued).

Idiom – Fight and Scheme against each other

Zhen Wu Jie: Also known as True Martial World is the name of the continent this story is based in.

Spirit Energy = Lingqi

Yin Spirit: The Yin part of this term signifies the negative principle of the Yin-Yang theory.

The raw for chill wind is 'Yin Feng' which can also mean 'evil wind'

JieJie: Evil laughter

Tianyuan Mirror: Heavenly Source Mirror

# Chapter 336: Strange Beasts Invade

---

After killing the entire night, Ye Xiwen finally returned to the “Broken Moon City” with the break of dawn. Everyone had just woken up. The waves of astral wind had blown very violently at night therefore no one had dared to go out of the city. They could only hide inside the city, and wait for dawn. The wind blew feebly in the morning. Hence, even the truth level experts could move about freely.

Ye Xiwen mixed into the crowd of people, and they all moved out of the city. However, a terrifying sound reverberated before they could disperse for hunting. This distant sound made everyone tremble with fear. This vibrating sound was similar to the sound of ten thousand stampeding horses which could cause even the earth to tremble.

Taking a broad view ahead, a large group of countless grotesque-looking strange beasts appeared in their line of sight. They were rushing toward them.

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

... ..

“What’s going on? ...the ground is shaking...”

“Strange beasts... these are the roars of strange beasts!”

“For the ground to shake like this... how many strange beasts are there?”

“That’s a lot of powerful aura; possibly of the Xiantian realm. How can so many of these strange beasts assemble like this?”

“Strange beast insurrection! It’s the strange beast insurrection!”

There were people who understood what was happening, and hence, didn’t panic; Ye Xiwen was one of them. Bai Jian Song had told him about various things before they had arrived here. This insurrection of strange beasts was their first trial in the foreign battlefield. However, this was not a battle front. This place didn’t have any formidable strange beasts because the experts of True Martial University had already fixed a time to get rid of them in advance. However, it didn’t mean that there was no danger. In fact, there were beasts of truth realm, half-step legendary realm and legendary realm all over the place. Occasionally, even the beasts of half-step sage realm could also appear.

This place was usually desolate. However, these strange beasts



would gather in large numbers every time after the arrival of new disciples. It was not certain as to how many years this fight between the human race and these strange beasts had been going on for... However, one thing was certain — these beasts were very sensitive towards human aura. The dawn had just broken, and these strange beasts had already assembled.

“Retreat! Let’s return to the city!” no one knew who shouted this, but everyone directly flew back to the city.

Everyone returned to the city wall to prepare for the imminent battle. Meanwhile, those strange beasts were still rushing towards them like endless sea waves... as if blotting out the sky and covering the earth.

The long-range raid of these strange beasts shattered the space as they rushed towards the people on the city wall to kill them.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen shot his palm and it transformed into a huge dragon claw. A huge strange beast that was as big as an elephant had its skull crushed by the dragon claw. That strange beast was six feet tall and was different from the commonly seen demon beast.

These strange beasts lived in the void of the universe, and weren’t the same as other living beings. They were in all sorts of grotesque shapes.

The strange beast’s essence and blood was instantly absorbed into Ye Xiwen’s body with the help of the Tianyuan mirror (1). Its

inner stone (2) was instantly crushed by Ye Xiwen, and the energy from the stone was completely absorbed by him as well.

Ye Xiwen was pleasantly surprised to find that the universe within his Dantian had grown a bit larger. Although, the growth was very little and was quite hard to sense, however... he could still feel it.

The bodies of these strange beasts had the power of stars. These strange beasts lived in the universal space where one could feel the power of the stars irradiating anywhere, and at any time. Over time, the blood of these strange beasts had also gotten to contain the star power.

This star power had made their flesh exceptionally tyrannical. Their body was even tougher than that of demon beasts. Naturally, these strange beasts were more terrifying. However, most of these strange beasts didn't possess a high intelligence quotient. In fact they didn't even possess the wisdom that their demon beast counterparts did.

However, the star power was just a thing of nourishment for Ye Xiwen. He could use it to temper and refine his corporeal body and also to expand the universe within his Dantian. Each and every trace of star power could wash and nourish his universe — reinforcing it even more.

However, it would take a lot of time if he would only absorb the star power from the illumination of the twinkling stars in the sky; probably hundreds or even thousands of years for his universe to grow to maturity.

Ye Mo had told him about another method of exploding a star and taking out its nucleus. This nucleus was the core source of the star power. However, Ye Xiwen didn't even think about his idea because there was no possibility of implementing this method.

However, these strange beasts gave Ye Xiwen a much easier option.

Ye Xiwen immediately rushed down from the city wall. His body was brimming with golden divinities as he went forward like a huge surging tide, and swept towards those innumerable strange beasts.

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

These strange beasts of truth level or half-step legendary level simply could not block Ye Xiwen's attack. They were instantaneously annihilated by him. Afterward, he absorbed their bodies-whole.

People on the city wall witnessed Ye Xiwen's aggressive performance, and were left somewhat stunned. Many of them didn't even know that it was Ye Xiwen.

However, Ye Xiwen performance was quite stunning, and these beasts were basically far from being his opponents.

However, some people were stimulated into action while everyone else was attentively watching his performance. They too rushed down from the city wall to fight these strange beasts. However, some of them were torn to pieces in a short while. Some managed to persist for a while, but soon exhausted their strength and were eaten by those strange beasts.

It turned out that it was radically impossible for an average person to do the things that Ye Xiwen could; simply because he was way too strong.

On the tall wall, a pair of ice-cold eyes was keeping a close eye on Ye Xiwen as he decisively killed the strange beasts. There flashed a beam of cold light in that pair of icy eyes.

Within a few breaths, Ye Xiwen easily rushed through the group of numerous strange beasts. It could be considered that other people were worried that they had to fight with a group of strange beasts. However, Ye Xiwen was fearless. These strange beasts didn't have any means to injure his tyrannical body. Not to mention that his 'phoenix regeneration technique' would instantly heal his wounds even if they were hurt him.

Ye Xiwen's physical strength was so plentiful that there was no possibility of consuming his life force in a way that might endanger his life.

The golden divinities surged within his body as he opened his devil wings and flew forward at an extremely fast speed. This place didn't have an enemy of his match.

“Who is this man? He dared to burst into the army of strange beasts... Is he insane?”

“Isn't this person that same Ye Xiwen whose name had made a buzz everywhere? Has he not entered the Hidden Star Peak? I never thought that he would be able to join True Martial University so smoothly after insulting the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall!”

“But he is really strong. At least dozens of strange beasts have died at his hands in such a short time. He is worth of his fierce and illustrious reputation!”

The fight had reached to an intense level. Over ten thousand Houtian level strange beasts had surrounded the entrance. When looking from afar, one could see silhouettes of these strange beasts everywhere. Each of these beasts appeared to be in frenzy. Their eyes were blood-shot and they appeared to be fierce and brutal.

Hundreds of legendary realm beasts released out their terrifying auras from among these densely packed strange beasts. They stirred together to form a pillar of energy which directly agitated the clouds and formed a huge swirl. The mighty coercion of these strange beasts blotted out the sky, and covered the earth.

The fight between the humans and these strange beasts had a

reached a superheated stage near the city wall. White and red pieces of broken limbs were scattered on the ground. It was hard to distinguish whether those limbs belonged to humans or the strange beasts.

The number of human elites was comparatively less than those densely packed numerous strange beasts.

“Ha!” Suddenly, a loud cry reverberated from the side of human experts. The sword energy was swept towards those strange beasts with the mighty slash. The space collapsed in a flash. The beasts that came in contact of the sword energy screamed as they turned into blood fog. This sword attack had directly cleared up a batch of strange beasts.

However, the total number of these strange beasts was massive. Some strange beasts grouped together to replace that annihilated batch almost immediately. The half-step legendary realm human experts began to send out their mystical powers in quick succession. However, even that could not sway the defense line of these truth level and half-step legendary level strange beasts.

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

After issuing such mighty roars, the strange beasts of legendary

realm suddenly rushed towards the entrance. Although these were only several hundred strange beasts, their advance made the earth to tremble. The imposing aura of these strange beasts was far more formidable as compared to that the strange beasts of truth level and half-step legendary level.

The defense line of the human race was already in imminent danger. It was on the verge of collapse due to the long-range raid of those several hundred legendary level strange beasts.

These strange beasts of legendary level were extremely fast, and in a flash, one of them arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. Its eyes were blood-shot and its body was covered with eighteen legs. Just like lightning, it used its claw to grab Ye Xiwen.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen didn’t hesitate to respond, and immediately shot his palm.

“Bang!” The claw of that beast exploded in a flash, and turned to blood fog.

“Roar!” That strange beast screamed as blood started dripping out from the spot where its limb had turned into blood fog.

However, this strange beast didn’t stop. It opened its big mouth to bite Ye Xiwen to death.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen snorted as his fist blasted forward and directly punched through its big mouth. The head of this strange

beast exploded as it died on the spot.

It could be assumed that crashing into such group of strange beasts was equivalent to courting death for others. However, this was not the case for Ye Xiwen since his strength was simply too formidable.

It was impossible for these strange beasts to consume him... thanks to his 'gilded tyrant form' in coordination with his 'phoenix generation technique'.

Tianyuan Mirror: Heavenly Source Mirror

Neihe: Also known as inner stone. It's an item that is similar to Neidan (inner core) which is found inside demon beasts.



## Chapter 337: Sneak Attack

---

These strange beasts were certainly powerful because of their tyrannical bodies. But Ye Xiwen also had a tyrannical body. In this respect, it was a neck to neck collision. In short, the ordinary strange beasts of legendry realm were not his opponents.

“Puff!” A huge column of fire was ejected out from the mouth of a strange beast of half-step legendary third stage, and it went lasing towards Ye Xiwen. He felt the heat of that flame blowing against his own face.

Ye Xiwen shot his palm, and it rose up against the wind. His palm grabbed that column of fire and instantly extinguished it. The strength of his palm attack didn’t reduce one bit as it advanced and banged upon the body of that beast.

“Bang!” The body of that huge legendary level beast instantaneously flew upside down. It severely collided with a group of several legendary level beasts, and then fell heavily to the ground and died. However, those other beasts which had gotten hit also fell to the ground and died.

Ye Xiwen looked just like a raging war-beast. He was on a killing spree. So much so, that he could be regarded as a roller crushing those beasts. Wherever he went, casualties on the beasts’ side followed. He was simply unstoppable.

Ye Xiwen went all the way down killing those strange beasts. His body became more and more powerful, while the universe within

his Dantian expanded. In addition, his aura also became increasingly formidable.

Those experts who saw him fight had no choice but to agree that his strength was indeed excessively tyrannical.

“That Ye Xiwen is killing his way forward like nothing. Does he think that he can penetrate the army formation of these strange beasts?”

Some people felt incredible watching Ye Xiwen penetrating through the army formation of strange beasts by killing them. They didn't know what he was up to.

At this time, an ominous aura swept across the entire battlefield, as if blotting out the sky and covering the earth. It belonged to a strange beast of legendary eighth stage. Its vindictive aura sent chills down everyone's spine.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen's eyes flashed. These strange beasts possessed star power; stronger a beast, more the star power it would have. In fact, this relation was directly proportional in nature. He would definitely move a step further if he could kill this strange beast of legendary eighth stage. In fact, he would be able to condense a new planet, Venus, within his body.

Yes. Ye Xiwen was going to construct a solar system inside his universe. The universe had so many celestial bodies, but he was familiar with the solar system only. Therefore, he wanted to create it first. Presently, he had molded only the sun and Mercury in the

entire solar system. Continuing on like this, he would certainly mold Venus now.

After the completion of Venus, the next ones would be Earth and Mars. This was the so-called 'inner solar system'. He was absolutely confident that he would be able to break through the shackles of the legendary realm in one fell swoop once the creation of the entire solar system was complete. At that time, his moves would have the strength of the universe, while his tyrannical strength would reach an even more dreadful extent.

Taking a broad view ahead, one could see the huge figure of a monster with many scales on its body. Its six feet were touching the ground; it appeared like a small hill. It was running towards them while causing the entire ground to tremble.

Its entire body was covered with scales, and it relied on a pair of weird-looking thin wings to lighten its weight.

The experts at the top of the city wall saw this strange beast arriving, and their complexions turned pale. The terrifying vigor of this strange beast overflowed everywhere; it was simply frightening.

Who was going to stop this strange beast? It should be said that there was no one here who could stop this strange beast.

Half-step legendary eighth stage, it was a terrifying synonym for these new disciples.

And, now such a creature had appeared among these strange beasts. It could be said that it was a disaster for these new disciples.

Ye Xiwen looked dignified, and didn't show any signs of retreat. At present, he was at half-step legendry's small complete realm, and could compete with some weak creatures of half-step legendary eighth stage... at most.

However, the word 'weak' and this strange beast obviously had no relation. In fact, it would be considered the most tyrannical existence even among the beasts of half-step legendary eighth stage.

A sword intention came out from Ye Xiwen's hand. It then rose into the sky and emitted intermittent waves of coercion in all directions.

It seemed as if Ye Xiwen had discovered his prey. Ye Xiwen had noticed that four of its legs were well-grounded the moment that strange beast had started rushing. He figured that the remaining two were claws, just a bear's. Like a lightning, it rushed towards Ye Xiwen to grab him.

The long howl of this strange beast tore through the nine heavens. It didn't seem like a living being at all, rather like a dead creature that had appeared from hell. It was very scary.

In that split second, it swatted its claws which broke the space into pieces. That pair of thin wings finally drove its body forward and it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen at a lightning pace. Those thin

wings were setting off waves of strong winds, sweeping its ominous aura in all directions.

“Clang!” The sword intention instantaneously spewed out from Ye Xiwen’s hand and got mixed with the golden divinities. Then it soared into the sky and instantaneously advanced towards that strange beast.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s sword intention slashed on that strange beast’s scales. However, it only made a scratch on the scales, and failed to break them. The clash released sparks in all directions; it sounded similar to a collision between iron and gold.

“Bang!”

The entire space had undergone a tremendous collapse as a result of a man attacking a beast. Both of their killing intentions had almost pierced the space.

Ye Xiwen retreated a few steps during that terrifying collision. His complexion had also slightly discolored. The body of this strange beast was too horrifying. He was actually unable to neutralize it... even with his ‘gilded tyrant form’. The fact was that not only was he one whole ‘realm’ below that strange beast, the body of this strange beast was ridiculously tough.

Even if another person of half-step legendary eighth stage would be placed in Ye Xiwen’s shoes, it would be difficult for them to avoid injuries.

The terrifying power of that strange beast shook Ye Xiwen's hands and caused them to turn numb. However, the same enormous power was shifted into his universe and immediately disappeared without a trace, just like a raindrop on barren land. Even such enormous power was unable to affect the operation of his universe.

“Roar!” That strange beast faced upwards and roared loudly. Its ominous power was monstrous and dreadful. It brandished its claws. It seemed as if it could grab the space itself and cause it to crack. It rushed straight towards Ye Xiwen. Although it was only one strange beast, its ominous power was simply matchless.

Ye Xiwen was glowing with vigor. His eyes were radiating glory. The golden divinities surged beneath his feet and he instantly rushed forward carrying sword intention in his hand.

“Bang!”

The collision between both the sides once again shattered the space. This time, Ye Xiwen's sword intention struck that strange beast's chest and opened a terrible wound.

This left that strange beast in immense pain, and it roared immediately.

However, Ye Xiwen wasn't in a good condition either. That strange beast had opened five big and bloody wounds on his chest.

Ye Xiwen began to gape in pain. He almost couldn't stand properly. If it were an ordinary person in place of him, then that claw would have definitely split them into two halves.

“Does he want to die?” At this time, a lot of people looked worried while looking at Ye Xiwen. Many didn't know him, but still were worried for him. This was because they were counting of him as their last hope.

This wasn't the end; just the beginning.

Ye Xiwen didn't admit defeat. Although his face had contorted in agony, the 'phoenix regeneration technique' was done repairing his wounds soon.

Ye Xiwen's sword energy(2) was released in all directions. He shouted loudly, “Die!”

Ye Xiwen once again rushed towards that strange beast.

“Bang!” The sword intention he was carrying overflowed through the sky.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

They had already fought over a hundred rounds. Blood was dripping from their bodies, and not enough meat was remaining on it. However, Ye Xiwen had maintained himself at his peak physical condition throughout. Although his entire body was covered in blood, not a single wound was there on it. However, that strange beast was panting and seemed to have been beaten out of its breath. Ye Xiwen had pushed it in a completely disadvantageous position.

That strange beast didn't have the 'phoenix regeneration technique' like Ye Xiwen. There was no way for it to repair its wounds, or to restore its tyrannical strength in such a short period of time after being wounded. However, Ye Xiwen's 'gilded tyrant form' was extremely tyrannical. He just used his own body to blast open wounds in its body.

Perhaps, each of these wounds was not extremely fatal on its own, but there were simply too many; enough to be life-threatening.

This was the first time that Ye Xiwen had fought with a beast of half-step legendary eighth stage. He was sure that he would've died countless times if he didn't have 'phoenix regeneration technique'. This strange beast had caused severe wounds on his body. No other person could have survived till now. It was only possible for Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen had finally cornered that strange beast.



There were cuts and bruises all over his body, while blood was continuously gushing out of the wounds. It had finally slowed down and was slowly revealing its weaknesses.

“Now, die!” Ye Xiwen shouted loudly. The sword intention from his hand swept out and dashed across the sky.

“Puchi!” The sword intention instantly dashed through a wound located on its head. A mix of red blood and white brain matter spattered everywhere.

“Bang!” The huge stature of that strange beast collapsed, and shook the entire ground.

Everyone noticed that Ye Xiwen had beheaded that strange beast. The fact that he was able to kill that strange beast had stunned them. They had a sudden illusion of managing to have a narrow escape. If not for Ye Xiwen, they all would have most likely been massacred in the city.

Ye Xiwen finally heaved a sigh of relief as he saw the scene of desolation in the aftermath of this disaster. He was about to take away the corpse of that strange beast, when suddenly a strong sense of crisis leaped up in his heart and a chill ran from the soles of his feet to his brain.

A cold beam instantly appeared out of nowhere, and quietly shattered the space. In the blink of an eye, it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. It was an extremely magnificent, yet dreadful beam of light.

Notes:

Jian qi = Sword qi = Sword energy

# Chapter 338: Ling Yi Feng Slaughtered

---

A cold beam instantly appeared out of nowhere, and quietly shattered the space. Then, it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen in the blink of an eye. It was an extremely magnificent yet dreadful beam of light.

That cold beam was extremely frightening and almost made a cut in Ye Xiwen's throat. This was an astonishing killer move.

The timing was near-perfect. Ye Xiwen had just slaughtered that strange beast and had finally gotten a chance to relax. It was the best time to launch a sneak attack on him.

However, how could Ye Xiwen ever take things lightly? He responded instinctively and shot a big hand. His hand appeared just like a golden sun in the sky.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen brandished his palm into the void and a figure instantaneously fell. The bones of his chest broke and blood splashed out. His body was sent flying upside down.

Ye Xiwen wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. That sneak attack could've succeeded in beheading him since he was off-guard when it was launched at him.

Ye Xiwen saw that a young man clad in a magnificent robe was lying on the ground. He had curled up in pain while his face had turned pale. He also kept spitting blood.

The emblem of Law Enforcement Hall was embroidered on his robe.

“Damn it, he is from Law Enforcement Hall!” Ye Xiwen saw the emblem on that man’s robe and cursed.

These Law Enforcement disciples were really haunting Ye Xiwen like ghosts. He had been wondering why they hadn’t been causing him any trouble all this time. But now it seemed like they had been waiting for him here.

They were too sinister. They made their move just when Ye Xiwen killed that strange beast.

The people on top of the city wall hadn’t recovered from this sudden turn of events. They had seen how Ye Xiwen had killed that strange beast with great difficulty, and had then been ambushed by someone.

Although they were very far from the scene, they all had profound skills. They didn’t find it hard to make sense of the current situation. They immediately understood that someone had tried to assassinate Ye Xiwen.

“This is a disciple of Law Enforcement Hall!”

Suddenly many people recognized him after looking at the emblem of Law Enforcement Hall. The reputation of Law

Enforcement Hall in True martial University was illustrious. There was no one who didn't know about them; even these new disciples knew about Law Enforcement Hall though they had just joined.

Law Enforcement Hall had magnificent glory. They were in charge of law and discipline inside True Martial University.

“The enmity between the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall and Ye Xiwen seems quite deep. They were hidden till now, but have finally moved into action!”

Some people were unclear and puzzled as to when Ye Xiwen had offended these Law Enforcement disciples.

“Don't you know that there was a buzz in the entire city some time ago? A new disciple had killed several disciples of Law Enforcement Hall; don't you remember?”

“Oh, so this is ‘that matter’ and is he ‘that Ye Xiwen’! He's the one who had broken through the city gate to enter, right? No wonder he is so powerful. A total of hundred disciples had burst their way through the city gate along with him. Seriously, he is a respectable genius!”

That sneak attack could have killed Ye Xiwen, and this made him angry. He walked coldly and kicked that disciple's body.

That disciple was sent flying like a sandbag after Ye Xiwen kicked him. He severely collided with the city wall, and came to a halt

before finally falling down.

“Stop!” Someone yelled from the top of the city wall. The speaker was a young man who appeared approximately 20 years old, and was clad in a brown robe. His eyebrows were like sword, and his eyes were like stars. He appeared very handsome and made large strides as he walked over.

“Who are you? Why are you interfering in other people’s business?” Ye Xiwen asked coldly.

“He is a disciple of our ‘Broken Moon Peak’. Therefore, I must interfere regardless of anything!” that young man coldly replied.

Above the city wall, several people recognized this young man.

“That man is Ling Yi Feng. He is the leader of the new disciples of ‘Broken Moon Peak’. I have heard that this person is an outstanding young genius, and was considered as one of the top ten experts on the ancient road. He is quite ferocious!”

“Yes, ah, he entered as a core disciple and will soon become a true disciple!”

The Law Enforcement Hall was a huge organization inside True Martial University. However, their disciples had actually come from various peaks.

“Do you really want to interfere in this trivial matter?” Ye Xiwen

coldly asked.

“He is a disciple of our ‘Broken Moon Peak’!” Ling Yi Feng looked coldly towards Ye Xiwen. The killing intent could be seen in his eyes. He had heard about Ye Xiwen. In fact, more than hundred disciples had broken through the city gate. And all information about these disciples had already circulated throughout True Martial University. Ye Xiwen was no exception.

“I am dealing with your Broken Moon Peak’s disciple because he was going to kill me. It is that simple.” Ye Xiwen coldly said. His logic was quite simple. Whoever tried to kill him — he would kill that person in return.

Ye Xiwen sneered and suddenly rushed forward. It seemed as if he was treading on a burst of waves to trample that disciple.

“Stop!” Ling Yi Feng saw that Ye Xiwen had completely ignored him. And so, he immediately fired a punch. The terrifying ‘fist energy’ surged forward. It gave rise to a ‘fist wind’ that ferociously rushed forth to pound Ye Xiwen’s back.

After perceiving the fierce ‘fist wind’ coming from behind, Ye Xiwen’s eyes flickered with a killing intent. This ‘fist wind’ was extremely terrifying. Perhaps, Ling Yi Feng’s strength had already reached above half-step legendary seventh stage.

How could there be such a great disciple in Law Enforcement Hall? Were the disciples of ‘Broken Moon Peak’ so amazing? However, it didn’t matter whether he was a disciple of ‘Broken

moon Peak' or not — he was trying to kill Ye Xiwen!

Ye Xiwen felt the fierce 'fist wind' behind his body, but he didn't stop. On the contrary, he ferociously rushed towards that disciple of 'Broken Moon Peak' at an even faster speed.

“You are courting death!” Ye Xiwen's action had thoroughly enraged Ling Yi Feng. He saw the manner in which Ye Xiwen had looked down on him. This made him very angry. He shouted loudly and his Real Elemental Energy<sup>(1)</sup> swept towards Ye Xiwen to blast him to death.

Anger flourished inside Ye Xiwen's heart, and he maliciously trampled that disciple.

“Bang!” That disciple of Law Enforcement Hall who was lying on the ground was instantly trampled to death.

Ling Yi Feng saw Ye Xiwen killing that Law Enforcement disciple, and his complexion turned ashen. He was considered as a genius ever since he had started cultivating as a young disciple. Even if the geniuses on this ancient road were countless like clouds, he was still considered extraordinary. No one ever dared to go against him. But now, a disciple of his own peak had been killed in front of his eyes.

This was intolerable.

“You have brought about your own destruction!” Ling Yi Feng



roared repeatedly.

The ‘fist wind’ had already crashed into Ye Xiwen’s body.

A strong power boiled all over Ye Xiwen’s body. Though Ling Yi Feng was arrogant, his strength of half-step legendary seventh stage was no joke.

Ye Xiwen draped a layer of divine clothing over his shoulder, and his figure immediately condensed a golden sword behind him to chop off that ‘fist wind’.

Ye Xiwen had completely transformed to assume his golden avatar. He then looked coldly towards Ling Yi Feng.

“How did these two bump into each other? Geez, Ling Yi Feng failed in rescuing that disciple of ‘Broken Moon Peak’!”

“‘Broken Moon Peak’ is quite overbearing. We saw a moment ago how that disciple of ‘Broken Moon Peak’ tried to assassinate Ye Xiwen and Ling Yi Feng didn’t say anything. Instead he actually showed his desire to take that disciple back home. This is making me angry!”

“Hush, hush, can’t you see there are so many disciples of ‘Broken Moon Peak’ here? They may expel you from the city if you offend them. In the worst case scenario, they might even kill you right now!”

“These big inheritances are not always fair... especially those Top 100 Inheritances. They don’t even treat us as fellow disciples!”

“They are way too tyrannical!”

“You have killed a disciple of ‘Broken Moon Peak’, and that makes you our enemy. You have courted death!” Ling Yi Feng said angrily.

Ye Xiwen didn’t say anything. He just brandished his long blade which emitted bright rays of light. It appeared as if the existing light in this world had suddenly vanished, and only this blade’s radiance had remained.

Ling Yi Feng’s complexion changed drastically, and became abnormally solemn. His Real Elemental Energy surged-up and he operated his secret technique. He instantly fired his fist which shattered the space as it rushed towards the incoming blade attack of Ye Xiwen’s.

Ling Yi Feng strength wasn’t equal to that strange beast’s from a while ago. However, he still couldn’t be considered as a lesser threat. This was because that strange beast used its tyrannical body to its advantage in close combat, which was also Ye Xiwen’s strong point. Though Ling Yi Feng didn’t have such a tough body, his martial art was quite exquisite. That was why he was the biggest threat.

“Bang!”

The ‘blade energy’(2) and the ‘fist energy’ collided in the void, and the terrifying force set-off dreadful storm waves. Ye Xiwen’s ‘blade energy’ directly chopped through Ling Yi Feng’s ‘fist energy’, and then crashed into his body almost instantaneously.

“Puchi!” A bloody wound was cut open on Ling Yi Feng’s chest, and blood gushed out of it. His tall body finally collapsed on the ground.

One move had decided the outcome of this battle.

Everyone was stunned. They had assumed that it would be a ferocious battle between two equally matched opponents. However, they had never imagined that a single move of Ye Xiwen’s would decide this battle once and for all.

Ling Yi Feng had never imagined that he would fail to stop even a single move of Ye Xiwen’s, and would end up being defeated like this.

He didn’t lose because he was weak. He lost because Ye Xiwen was way too strong. After creating ‘Observing Person Scripture’, Ye Xiwen’s combat power had increased by leaps and bounds. An expert of half-step legendary seventh stage was simply not his opponent.

Ye Xiwen looked at Ling Yi Feng’s fallen figure. He knew that he could not stay in ‘Broken Moon City’ any longer. However, he didn’t have any regrets. If given another opportunity — he would do the same again.

The other party had blundered by regarding him as a pushover. However, they never knew that he could be so decisive.

1. Zhen Yuan = Real Elemental Energy

2. Blade energy = Bladeqi

# Chapter 339: Cultivate To Forge Ahead Vigorously

---

The news of Ye Xiwen slaughtering a Law Enforcement disciple and Ling Yi Feng had shaken the entire Broken Moon City. The news had spread as quickly as forest fire. The news spread even more quickly especially since those people were resolute and had high aspirations.

It had immediately made the new Law Enforcement disciples furious. These new disciples had recently joined True Martial University. However, some of them had already been recruited by Law Enforcement Hall since they had great future potential. Therefore, there were many new Law Enforcement disciples among these disciples who had come to this foreign battlefield.

Ye Xiwen had killed a Law Enforcement disciple in front of everyone... once again. This was very embarrassing for them.

However, everyone had seen that the Law Enforcement disciple had attacked Ye Xiwen first. Therefore, Ye Xiwen's slaughter of that disciple was only normal. Hence, he would only get minor punishments even if the news were to reach the ears of higher authorities. And this certainly didn't conform to Law Enforcement Hall's way of thinking.

The Law Enforcement Hall's leader of new disciples, Luo Yi Hang, moved into action at this juncture. He issued a warrant to hunt and kill Ye Xiwen. But this 'chase and kill' warrant could not be released in public. However, Luo Yi Hang was not only the captain of Law Enforcement disciples — he was also the chief

disciple of 'Hundred Treasures Peak'; the 'Hundred Treasures Peak' was one of the 'Top 10' Inheritances.

These 'Top 10' Inheritances were considered as big shots in True Martial University. Any among these inheritances would be regarded as supreme influence in the Southern region.

To enter one of these inheritances, and become the chief disciple was not an easy thing. One could imagine Luo Yi Hang's strength, and the authority he held.

The 'chase and kill' warrant was issued in secrecy. However, there was no difference between an official order and the one that came from Luo Yi Hang's mouth.

In addition to Law Enforcement Hall, the 'Broken Moon Peak' had also semi-overtly issued a 'chase and kill' warrant against Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen had killed two disciples of 'Broken Moon Peak'; this included their fourth ranked disciple, Ling Yi Feng.

It was a matter of extraordinary shame and humiliation for the 'Broken Moon Peak'. Ye Xiwen was merely a disciple of the 'Hidden Star Peak'. That being said, Ye Xiwen was also a chief disciple. However, how someone could be considered as a true chief disciple if there was no other disciple on the peak?

Ling Yi Feng was the fourth ranked disciple of the 'Broken Moon Peak'. This meant that there were three stronger disciples above him. But he alone was below 50 years of age amongst the top four. However, a lot of masters on that peak were above 50 years of age.

These masters might not be as talented as him. However, their cultivation time was far more than his; even extending up to decades or more than a century in some cases. There were numerous such masters on this peak.

The experts below the age of 50 were placed in the rear because of the relationship between their age and strength since it was a relatively safer area. However, the experts who were above 50 years old were placed close to the battle front. This was the spot where genuine powerhouses strived for their place.

All the top experts of this term's younger generation had arrived at this place.

Ye Xiwen knew about the 'chase and kill' warrants. But he didn't care. The most important thing for him was to enhance his own strength now. Only those whose strength was tyrannical enough would be able to survive in this trial. This was the only way to rise above others.

The curtain of night descended, and waves of chilly winds started blowing. It could be said that this cold winds could easily blow away a truth level expert. Such was the terror of the foreign battlefield Ye Xiwen was in.

Ye Xiwen trod through the astral wind unaffected, as if it was not blowing at all. He arrived on top of a mountain. The star power was illuminating this summit and was relatively rich.

A shadow appeared on top of the summit amidst the chilly winds.

It had sensed Ye Xiwen's aura. It was a ferocious strange beast. It had three pairs of wings, and it appeared just like a human. Its head was quite big, and it had four limbs. Its entire body was withered. Its eyes were as red as a pair of lanterns. They were partly visible in that chilly wind, and appeared very frightening.

This territory belonged to this strange beast. It was an extremely dreadful strange beast. It was at legendary seventh stage; at the very least. It was the overlord of the surrounding area.

Suddenly, that strange beast howled. It caused burst of sound waves which shook the space. The space began to fluctuate as crazily as the surface of boiling water. This strange beast had six wings on its back. They had almost dried-up, leaving only the bones behind. It suddenly fluttered its wings, and its figure rushed towards Ye Xiwen like a black light.

It shot its palms, which pressed down the space itself and disintegrated the air. A terrifying palm attack was launched towards Ye Xiwen.

That pair of bone claws tore the space, and set-off monstrous waves of wind. It started blowing Ye Xiwen's clothes. This resulted in a fluttering sound.

Ye Xiwen saw the incoming attack, but simply didn't care. He directly swept out his palm. A huge golden dragon roared, and instantly tore that dreadful imposing aura. Then, it maliciously collided into that pair of claws.



“Crunch!” the sound of a fracturing bone resounded. This sound could horrify anyone. That pair of bone claws had been broken by Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen’s figure appeared like golden lightning as he trod across the empty sky, and instantaneously appeared in front of that strange beast. He brandished his palm, and crushed its body. Its flesh and blood were completely absorbed by Heavenly Source mirror (1).

The ‘inner stone’ of that strange beast also fell into Ye Xiwen’s hands.

However, Ye Xiwen didn’t stop. All sorts of strange beasts and evil spirits were lurking in this area since it was flourishing with chill winds. They were large in numbers, and could all become Ye Xiwen’s prey.

The sound produced when Ye Xiwen slaughtered that strange beast had alarmed the other strange beasts. There were over a hundred strange beasts of legendary sixth-seventh stage. There were no names to identify their species. However, they were very ferocious in nature and frightened everyone.

“Now give me your inner stones!” Ye Xiwen laughed out loud as he flew forward. It seemed as if his golden divinities would topple the mountains and overturn the seas as they rushed towards those strange beasts.

“Bang!” A flock of tyrannical strange beasts rushed towards Ye Xiwen like wild boars to knock him down.

Ye Xiwen immediately swatted his palm. Their bodies instantaneously exploded and transformed into blood fog. The fog was then absorbed by Heavenly Source mirror. Only their inner stones remained behind.

These domineering strange beasts were like tyrants who dominated over other strange beasts. However, Ye Xiwen had thoroughly wiped their entire existence within a short span of time. Would the other strange beasts dare to attack Ye Xiwen after watching this? Wouldn't that be equivalent to courting death?

Ye Xiwen had obtained enough inner stones. Hence, he didn't hunt more strange beasts, and sat cross-legged on that summit. He instantly absorbed the abundant star power which was shining down from the sky. As a result, his 'inner universe' began to transform.

Ye Xiwen fully operated the 'Observing Person Scripture'. The intrinsic quality of this scripture was to create a small version of the universe inside human body. His universe merely had a star and a planet (2) at present.

Ye Xiwen started to absorb the energies from those inner stones as the 'Observing Person Scripture' began to operate at full capacity. These inner stones were the energies cores of these strange beasts. Their entire energy was accumulated in these inner stones. Moreover, these strange beasts had received the illumination power of stars day and night. Their bodies were filled with star power; that was exactly what Ye Xiwen needed.

The chaos within his universe began to boil over with the

absorption of a large amount of star power.

There were all kinds of luminous spots within Ye Xiwen's Dantian. These luminous spots were numerous and all densely packed. Yet, they were located away from each other — with a certain distance in between.

These luminous spots instantaneously began to blossom into dazzling rays of light as large amounts of star power were instilled into his inner universe. One of these luminous spots began to absorb large amount of star power under the guidance of his consciousness. The luminous spot began to revolve at a great speed, and continued till the power of countless stars had been submerged into it.

This luminous point slowly began to expand once it had absorbed the power of so many stars.

The temperature of this spherical luminous spot slowly began to rise. However, this didn't worry Ye Xiwen.

Day-by-day-time passed, and this luminous spot got bigger and bigger. It slowly took the shape of a planet. In fact, it had started to appear just like the planet 'Venus' from his previous life.

“Bang!”

Venus had been molded at last. Ye Xiwen's imposing aura finally rose once again. Moreover, his universe had also expanded by one

third because of Venus's formation.

However, the universe was inside Ye Xiwen's Dantian. Since the universe had expanded by one third, it meant that his Dantian had also expanded by one third. It could now hold 30% more Real Elemental Energy. His strength had risen considerably as a result.

Ye Xiwen could only compete with weak experts of legendary eighth stage. But now, he was sure that he would be able to compete with the top powerhouses of legendary eighth stage even though his realm hadn't ascend, and he was still at half-step legendry's small complete realm.

Ye Xiwen opened his eyes and heaved a sigh of relief. He realized that his imposing aura had become even more terrifying he restrained it. Many strange beasts who were observing him from afar trembled with fear. It seemed like these muddle-headed strange beasts that only knew how to kill — had apparently learnt fear as well. The way Ye Xiwen had mercilessly slaughtered their brethren, had left them with a deep sense of fear.

In order to deal with these strange beasts — one needed to be more brutal than them. Only then could one scare away these strange beasts.

“You couldn't level up this time. However, your strength is sufficient to compete with the top powerhouses of half-step legendary eighth stage. You will be counted among the top ranked disciples even if we include those ‘above 50 years old’ new disciples in the equation!” Ye Mo said with a smile.

Arriving at this foreign battlefield had brought several rewarding benefits for Ye Xiwen. His ‘Observing Person Scripture’ was currently at its initial stage, and the power of these stars was the best form of nourishment for his universe.

“But this is not enough!” Ye Xiwen shook his head. There were too many experts inside True Martial University. The strongest ones were elusive and stayed hidden; especially those who had been cultivating for a long time. There were innumerable such hidden experts. Ye Xiwen had been lagging behind. But he had started to catch up now. He was slowly filling the gap between him and these people.

“I still have a dragon essence left in the stock!” Ye Xiwen had two dragon essences earlier. However, he had used one during a closed-door practice in order to avoid a confrontation with the Jinyi Guards. Hence, only one dragon essence had remained.

“My cultivation should be able to make a breakthrough to half-step legendary sixth stage after consuming this dragon essence. Then, I will be able to beat even the experts of half-step legendary ninth stage. Even if that Luo Yi Hang personally arrives — I will beat the crap out of him!” Ye Xiwen said coldly.

A burst of noise came from afar at this time, and a ‘shaking sword rainbow’ suddenly flitted across the sky.

Heavenly Source Mirror = Tianyuan Mirror

He has the Sun and Mercury inside his inner universe.

# Chapter 340: Conflict

---

The ‘shaking sword rainbow’ seemingly cut through the sky. A figure was riding over that sword rainbow.

A group of experts were closely pursuing that figure.

“Do not let it escape!”

“That is a ‘stunning sword code’!” (1)

“Grab it, and we will have immeasurable future prospects!”

Sword Code!

Ye Xiwen promptly opened his eyes, and condensed Real Elemental Energy in them to have a clearer vision. He immediately saw a figure riding over that sword rainbow. However, it was not a human being, but a thick ‘sword code’.

“Buried Sword Secrets!”

Ye Xiwen saw these three words written on that sword code; three large golden words. A chill ran all over his body. It felt as if it would destroy his very existence.

“Crap! Quickly chase it Ye Xiwen!” Ye Mo immediately shouted.

Ye Xiwen didn't get enough time to think. He immediately pursued that figure.

"I haven't seen a book running on its own. Could it be a book demon that has already cultivated successfully?" Ye Xiwen also began to tread on a rainbow. His body took the form of a lightning and advanced toward that figure.

"It shouldn't be. It doesn't have the soaring 'demon energy' of a book demon. It is only made of pure 'sword energy'. Hence, I can say for certain that it is a 'stunning sword code'. An ordinary secret book cannot have such mystical abilities!" Ye Mo said. (2)

The voices of the pursuers had started lagging farther and farther behind since they couldn't match the speed of that sword rainbow.

It was moving at a scary speed. In fact, it was moving at such a fast speed that even Ye Xiwen couldn't match its pace. He finally opened his devil wings and started to reduce the distance between himself and that sword rainbow; little-by-little.

It wasn't clear as to how long it would take for Ye Xiwen to catch up. Suddenly, a giant stele arrived in front of his eyes. This stele seemed to have been thoroughly beaten by weather, and had already transformed beyond recognition. So much so, that it looked like an ordinary cliff covered entirely with weeds.

A huge cuneiform script (3) was engraved on it!



Such an engraved script would shake the minds of those who would see it. No one could tell whose hands were used to carve such a script. A person would only have an illusion of feeling the very suppression of heaven and earth upon seeing it.

No one knew when this giant stele was established or who did it — or what exactly was suppressed inside it.

Ye Xiwen was just about to overtake that stunning sword code. However, it suddenly entered that stele, and disappeared without a trace.

Ye Xiwen was somewhat surprised. He hadn't expected that this sword code would submerge into that stele and vanish.

“How is this possible?” Ye Xiwen took several laps around that stele. But he couldn't find where that sword code had gone to. He could only make speculations that this stele probably had some kind of relation with that sword code.

“This stele is quite strange isn't it?” Ye Xiwen said. He didn't know how long this had been such. However, he could tell that it must have been established at least over a hundred thousand years ago by the extent of its weathered appearance.

Even if something had been suppressed inside of it... it should've perished by now!

Ye Xiwen didn't know whether there were any life forms which could live through eternity. But he certainly knew that the experts of legendary realm had a trivial lifespan of 1000 years. Even the top powerhouses of the sage realm had a lifespan of 2000 years. In fact, even the experts of the 'Great Sage' realm could only live for 5000 years. Hence, any living form would've been obliterated in the passage of 100,000 years.

In fact, this was truly the case. Ye Xiwen stepped onto that piece of land and felt that it was no different from an ordinary land. It didn't seem to have any suppressive force either.

Then, Ye Xiwen heard a noise behind him. The experts who were chasing the sword code had finally appeared and surrounded him.

"Where is the sword code? Why can't I feel the sword energy of that sword code? You must have taken it!" a middle-aged man stepped forward and said. He was clad in a magnificent robe, and appeared calm and composed. He was considerably stronger than the others.

"He has definitely taken it. Otherwise, how can it suddenly disappear like that? Moreover, we saw it coming this way a moment ago. So how come it's not here anymore. He alone is here. He must have stolen it!" a young woman stepped-out and said. She was clad in a red robe and had a dainty stature. She had pearl-like white teeth and bright eyes. She looked extremely beautiful. She glared at Ye Xiwen as she spoke with her hands placed on her waist.

"I don't have the sword code!" Ye Xiwen impatiently replied to

this group of experts. The sword code had suddenly disappeared, and he himself was still puzzled.

“That’s impossible! We won’t believe you unless you let us inspect your spatial ring!” an expert shouted.

Ye Xiwen’s complexion suddenly changed. To let other people check one’s spatial ring was a matter of extraordinary shame and humiliation since it was a show of extreme distrust.

However, this was a normal thing in the eyes of those experts. It was impossible for Ye Xiwen to thoroughly consume and refine that sword code in such a short period of time. He could’ve only obtained it. Therefore, it was most probable that the sword code was inside his spatial ring.

“I said I don’t have it. And what will you do even if it is in my hands?” Ye Xiwen sneered and said, “First come, first serve. This is a truth that you don’t seem to know!”

“Young fellow, I advise you that you hand over that sword code. I will give you a reward if you will hand it over!” that middle-aged man said in a righteous manner.

“Reward? Someone like you thinks he can give me a reward?” Ye Xiwen looked coldly at him.

“Boy, you are quite presumptuous!” That middle-aged man said angrily, “Where do you think you are right now? You are just a

rookie in front of me. You are nothing more than a baby who has just crawled out of its cradle.”

One couldn't judge the skill of an expert by looking at their face; however, one could easily guess a person's age. Ye Xiwen didn't even look 30.

Those experts had judged that he must be a new disciple who had fled from the rear of the battlefield.

They were actually a step ahead in entering True Martial University, and had entered prior to Ye Xiwen and his batch of young geniuses. Also, the number of these old geniuses was quite enormous. It ranged up to hundreds of thousands of experts. This included including ones with tyrannical cultivations of more than hundred years. They simply didn't pay attention to experts like Ye Xiwen who wasn't even 50 years old.

Many of these old experts also belonged to the generation of highly talented people. In fact, their talent wasn't worse than Ye Xiwen and the other young geniuses. However, their cultivation time was far more than Ye Xiwen's. Many of these experts had missed the True Martial University's last term of recruitment due to various reasons. According to them, experts below the age of 50 years were like rookies.

“Rookie, you say? You've been cultivating for more than hundred years. Yet, you still couldn't enter the sage realm. A trash like you who cannot even cultivate properly shouldn't be talking to me in that condescending tone!” Ye Xiwen sneered as anger flourished in his heart. His age was an advantage when considering his

cultivation level. However, it was a disadvantage for him this time.

The complexion of those experts had immediately changed; especially the complexion of that middle-aged expert, who appeared to be their leader. His complexion had turned ashen. His age had already surpassed 150 years. Hence, he would be considered as a fairly old man among the new disciples.

Normally, these experts would be considered young geniuses at this age due this type of cultivation. However, they were practically worthless in True Martial University; a place where the geniuses were in abundance.

“It seems that you wish to die. Just kill him, and the stuff in his spatial ring will be ours!” that middle-aged expert roared. He shot his fist towards Ye Xiwen. A burst of cold fist energy rushed forth. It carried an ice-cold aura, and instantly swept towards Ye Xiwen.

The fist energy had frozen the air. The space itself had frozen, and was chipping bit by bit. It was not clear how far had the temperature dropped below zero degree. This was extremely terrifying.

“You think you can kill me!” Ye Xiwen sneered. He immediately shot a big hand, and it happened so fast that no one could see him do it. His big hand and that ice energy collided into each other. This led to an explosion.

It had seemed as if the sky would collapse at the time when his big hand grabbed that ice energy and crushed it.

The difference between the strength of both the sides was pretty clear. That expert was at legendary seventh stage. Comparing his strength with that of Ye Xiwen's — was like distinguishing between mud and cloud.

“Clang!” Ye Xiwen's big hand shot a startling sword intention into the sky. It seemed to shatter the entire world as it immediately arrived in front of that middle-aged expert.

“Puchi!” That sword intention pierced its way into that middle-aged expert like a long sword.

“Splash!” Blood splashed out from that middle-aged expert's body. He simply didn't think that Ye Xiwen would attack so fiercely and ruthlessly.

It seemed as if he had forgotten that it was actually him who wanted to kill Ye Xiwen first. This had thoroughly aroused Ye Xiwen's killing intent.

Kill the person who tries to kill you!

Ye Xiwen's logic was quite simple. Whoever would try to kill him — he would kill that person instead!

“You... You...” That woman in red robe was stunned. She and her group of experts also belonged to a vicious and merciless generation. No one knew how many people had died in their

hands. However, the main point was that they had blundered by underestimating Ye Xiwen. He had merely been a lamb for slaughter in their eyes. ...if he had acted obediently, they might have spared his life; if not, then they would've killed him.

However, Ye Xiwen had suddenly launched a counterattack in revolt, and had effortlessly slaughtered their most formidable expert. This pretty much explained why they were so shocked.

“Get lost!” Ye Xiwen coldly said. He did not mean to be ruthless with them.

Those people bitterly looked at Ye Xiwen. Now they were certain that he had stolen the sword code. However, they didn't dare to continue confronting him. They could only bitterly depart from there.

Ye Mo opened his mouth as he saw those people leave, “Ye Xiwen, do you see how strange this matter is. The appearance of that sword code is also very strange. Other people may not have seen, but we clearly saw that it submerged into that stele. It seems that the problem lies inside that stele!”

“Well, that sword code attracted so many people, but actually disappeared all of a sudden...” Ye Xiwen frowned and said.

“But, if those people were to think that you took the sword code... then they would've naturally launched an attack!” Ye Mo said.

“Whoever dares to cause trouble for me shall be slaughtered!” Ye Xiwen coldly said.

**Stunning Sword Code:** This can also be termed as ‘sword rule’ or ‘sword law’. It’s basically a set of rules to practice a certain set of secret sword skills. That is why it’s called a code.

With passage of time, a secret book can gain wisdom and turn into a book demon.

**Cuneiform:** It denotes to the wedge-shaped characters used in the ancient writing systems of Mesopotamia, Persia, and Ugarit, surviving mainly on clay tablets.



# Chapter 341: Dispute

---

Ye Xiwen spent a long time on that stele. He continued to look for a clue, but didn't find any.

However, it didn't mean that this matter had come to an end. In fact, this sword code's trouble had only begun. It was said that this sword code had already flown across more than half of this foreign battlefield. It had attracted a stream of experts who had come after it en masse. There was a city not far from this stele. Many warriors had gathered in this city within a short period of time. A stream of young experts had also rushed there.

Suddenly, this not-so-small city had started to bustle.

Ye Xiwen found a tavern in that city. He was just about to find a place to sit down when he was surprised by a voice that sounded not far away from him. He turned his head and saw five or six experts. Surprisingly, one among them was the red-clothed woman he had earlier scared off.

She was sitting opposite to a man. And she had a smile on her face. Ye Xiwen saw that handsome young man who appeared to be over 20 years of age. He was clad in a magnificent robe, and looked very much like a prince.

"It's you?" That red-clothed woman could not conceal the surprised expression in her eyes upon seeing Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen didn't mind her at all; he took a seat.

“What happened? Do you know him?” That young man frowned as he saw Ye Xiwen being ‘all arrogant and ignorant’.

“Yes, Bao Qin Wang (1); he is the one who stole that sword code!” That woman in red looked towards Ye Xiwen with a resentful look in her eyes.

“Oh, everyone here has come for the sword code. I didn’t expect that it would fall into his hands!” Bao Qin Wang looked towards Ye Xiwen; he seemed a bit surprised.

Bao Qin Wang stood up and walked towards Ye Xiwen with a ‘sort of smile’ on his face and said, “Hello friend, I heard that you have obtained the sword code. I do not know whether it’d be possible for you to hand it over to us. Our ‘Sword Tomb’ will compensate you if you hand it over to us!”

“The sword code isn’t with me!” Ye Xiwen shook his head. However, he was trying to understand the matter of Sword Tomb in his mind. Sword Tomb was a force that had abruptly risen among the new disciples. It consisted of the young disciples who preferred to use a sword. Their leader was a sword sage whose strength was extremely tyrannical. It was difficult to find his rival in the younger generation. He was regarded as one of the top characters in the younger generation.

He didn’t expect that the sword code would attract the Sword Tomb’s people.

“The sword code is clearly in your possession. But you don’t admit it. You are nothing but a gutless person!” A magnificent cold light flickered in her eyes. She was certain that the sword code had fallen into Ye Xiwen’s hand.

“You say that it’s with me; but do you have any evidence?” Ye Xiwen lightly said.

“The sword code is in your spatial ring!” That woman in red said, “Hand over the sword code or else you will die!”

Ye Xiwen frowned. He had no idea where she had found so much anger and resentment. It seemed as if she hated him so much that she wished to drive him to commit suicide... then and there.

“Brother, that sword code is indeed very important for our Sword Tomb. Soon our leader, the Sword Sage will also arrive. I hope that you will show him respect!” Bao Qin Wang’s tone was genial. However, it was clear from his attitude that he would not tolerate refusal. He had this air about him which made him appear aloof and superior.

“Your respect is quite expensive ah; as valuable as the sword code!” Ye Xiwen sneered and said. He was particularly disgusted with way these people acted ‘all superior’ in front of him. Bao Qin Wang might have seemed polite a moment ago... However, he was actually giving off a feeling as if he was doing Ye Xiwen a favor by being nice.

Bao Qin Wang’s complexion suddenly changed. He didn’t expect

that Ye Xiwen would be so cunning. He had used the name of Sword Tomb to his advantage in various matters. But he had never experienced this type of failure.

Bao Qin Wang simply couldn't restrain the anger. His sword energy surged-up. The people inside the tavern were startled. Could it be that Ye Xiwen was going to start a fight here?

“So, you're not going to show us any respect?!” Bao Qin Wang clenched his teeth as he said in a cold voice.

“Is there any benefit in that?” Ye Xiwen appeared rather calm and confident even while facing Bao Qin Wang's world-shaking sword intention and murderous aura. The sword energy which had rushed towards Ye Xiwen was suddenly blocked in its path; about three feet away from the spot where he was standing.

“Ye Xiwen, how are you here?” A pleasantly surprised voice suddenly sounded.

Ye Xiwen raised his head to look and actually saw three old acquaintances — Jian Wu Chen, wolf cub, and Mu Ling, whom he was seeing after a very long time. These three had arrived walking side by side.

“How come you all are together?” Ye Xiwen was also pleasantly surprised. He didn't expect that he would meet his friends here. One must know that True Martial University was huge. The true extent of its size was simply hard to imagine. Millions of new disciples had joined the university just in this term itself.

Ye Xiwen was certain that he would meet them someday. However, he didn't expect that it would happen so soon.

“What's going on here?” the wolf cub glanced towards Bao Qin Wang and asked.

Bao Qin Wang looked bitterly at the wolf cub. It was clear that he had suffered some kind of defeat in the past... and wolf cub was the cause.

“It's you three!” Bao Qin Wang bitterly looked towards the three of them and said, “‘Buried Sword Secrets’ is in his possession!

“You should know that our leader is exerting his utmost to get his hands on this ‘Buried Sword Secrets’. It can possibly be a ‘sword scripture’. Hence, it is very important for our Sword Tomb!” Bao Qin Wang gloomily looked at that trio.

Mu ling and Jian Wu Chen were somewhat puzzled as they looked towards Ye Xiwen. They were puzzled because they had also come for the sword code; they hadn't expected that it would've already fallen into Ye Xiwen's hands.

Ye Xiwen shook his head — indicating that he didn't have the sword code.

“If he says he doesn't have it; then the sword code is not in his possession. Now don't bother him and get out of here while I am

still in a good mood!” the wolf cub said in an arrogant manner as he simply looked down on Bao Qin Wang.

“He certainly said no. So I also think that he doesn’t have the sword code!” Jian Wu Chen said, “As for your leader — I will personally talk to him!”

“It’s impossible. The sword code must be in his hands. We have witnessed the disappearance of it, and only he was present there at that time!” the woman in red shrieked. That loud sound was exceptionally unpleasant to hear.

“Annoying woman! You are still pestering?!” The wolf cub clamored.

“You are acting recklessly. I let you off once; but I hadn’t thought that you would still have evil intentions!” Ye Xiwen coldly said.

“What did you say?” The woman in red became furious. She didn’t have this ‘so-called’ image. She didn’t know why she had this immense hatred for Ye Xiwen since the time he had spared her. However, her heart was brimming with the intention to kill him. Even she didn’t know where this hatred was coming from...

“I said you are acting recklessly. Do you really think I won’t kill you if I wanted to?” Ye Xiwen squinted at her. The cold killing intent surged-up in his eyes. One could say that the killing intention in his heart was more with regard to the annoying nature of this woman.

That woman in red took a step back. However, she shamelessly regained her confidence after watching Bao Qin Wang's figure standing next to her. Hence, she said. "Humph! Who do you think you are? Some amazing character? You are just a coward who doesn't deserve anyone's praise!"

"You say I don't deserve your praise. Do you think that I'm afraid of you? I just don't want to kill you and commit a needless sin. Otherwise, a single move of mine shall be enough!" Ye Xiwen coldly said.

"You!" Ye Xiwen's sharp words had pissed her off; to the extent of making her choke.

"Humph! You are quite domineering and arrogant!" Bao Qin Wang was quite discontented. He also felt that Ye Xiwen was way too domineering... as if regarding himself as some big-shot. "Who do you think you are that you dare to insult others?"

"I am arrogant and despotic because of you. Is your 'respect' a hard currency? Is it so valuable that you want to give it to me, and in return want me to hand over the sword code?" Ye Xiwen laughed coldly.

Ye Xiwen also didn't act politely since the other side wasn't giving him any respect; they were using force. He was never a person of good temper to begin with. However, he didn't believe in stirring up trouble for no reason. But whoever thought that he could be bullied easily — was utterly wrong.

It didn't matter what crafty plots and schemes were used against him — he would just use a single sword attack to destroy them all.

The enemy was quite aggressive. This was making it difficult for Ye Xiwen to tolerate. He just had to fight back in the end.

“Jian Wu Chen, Mu Ling, do you still want to shield this man? The sword code is one thing that our leader specifically wants to have. You know what our fate will be if we cannot obtain it!” Bao Qin Wang looked towards them and said.

“Damn it! Keep that old guy out of this. Ye Xiwen said that he does not have it! That means he actually doesn't have it. Even when he was carrying one page of Ancient God Scripture... he never denied it. What is this sword code in comparison?” the wolf cub fought against the injustice, and spoke some words of praise for Ye Xiwen.

“Carrying Ancient God Scripture? You are Ye Xiwen!” Bao Qin Wang immediately understood that the man whom they had provoked — was Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen was considered as an obscure and elusive persona among these new disciples. His past achievements were many — including breaking through the city gate and slaughtering a group of Law Enforcement disciples at the city gate. However, he had undoubtedly risen to fame way before all that. Just because of that one page of Ancient God Scripture... for which he was chased down by many people. He had kept-on killing people all the way until he reached True Martial University. Perhaps, he hadn't slaughtered the strongest of young experts. However, he was certainly one of them.



That one page of the Ancient God Scripture had made his reputation. A lot of people were quite aroused because of that. And even though he had become famous only recently... but no one dare to provoke Ye Xiwen since his fame was entirely cast on the blood of his enemies.

Ye Xiwen wasn't someone to be messed with.

He would destroy the reputation of anyone. It didn't matter whom he was facing... He could even destroy the reputation of Sword Tomb.

"The Sword Code has disappeared into that stone stele. You can go there and look for it if you wish to find it!" Ye Xiwen said.

"If Ye Xiwen say so, I believe him!"

"I believe him too!"

Mu Ling and Jian Wu Chen took a stand to support Ye Xiwen.

(To be continued).

Qin Wang means 'Prince'. So, Bao Qin Wang may also mean 'Prince Bao'.

## Chapter 342: Luo Yi Hang Attacks

---

Both of them spoke in unison to show their support towards Ye Xiwen. Bao Qin Wang was put in a tough spot. He could neither advance nor retreat. He could only look at them bitterly before leaving with his group.

“How are you guys here?” Ye Xiwen asked. He didn’t expect that he would actually find Jian Wu Chen and Mu Ling here. However, the most unexpected thing was to see the wolf cub.

There had been no news of him ever since Ye Xiwen and the wolf cub got separated. Ye Xiwen had never expected that he would actually see him here.

Ye Xiwen finally came to know everything from the wolf cub. Jian Wu Chun had gone for the closed-door training after the two of them were separated. Later, both Jian Wu Chen and the wolf cub had entered True Martial University. Nobody said anything about the wolf cub since many disciples had brought beast mounts.

Then, both of them joined the organization called Sword Tomb, and gained the status of high-level experts. They met with Mu Ling inside the Sword Tomb organization since he had also joined it.

Then, they had received the news about the appearance of a ‘sword code’ and came looking for it. The ‘sword code’ had crossed through more than half of the foreign battlefield. This had brought in numerous experts who had been pursuing it. Of course, the members of Sword Tomb were the most interested among these

people.

This entire organization was comprised of sword experts. They were aware of the importance of cultivating a good sword technique. They simply could not go on without cultivating a good sword technique.

These three hadn't thought that they would bump into Ye Xiwen here. It was purely an accidental encounter.

Everyone had made good progress, while the wolf cub had made the greatest. It had reached the peak of half-step legendary eighth stage, and was about to enter half-step legendary ninth stage. Ye Xiwen couldn't help but envy this kind of speed. However, wolf cub had mysterious origins and it seemed as if he faced no barriers in his cultivation.

Jian Wu Chen had also progressed quite quickly after obtaining an inheritance. He had reached half-step legendary eighth stage. He hadn't been as strong as Mu Ling in past. However, he had overtaken Mu Ling now, who was still at half-step legendary seventh peak.

"Boy, you are pretty good ah. I've heard a lot about your name; not bad, not bad. You haven't lost this old man's respect!" The wolf cub assumed the role of an elderly, and started treating Ye Xiwen like a youngster. Ye Xiwen slapped him, and sent him flying to the other side.

Wolf cub returned to Ye Xiwen's side, and said in a depressed

tone, “What the hell! We are meeting after so long, and you slapped me? Public morals are degenerating with each passing day. You just hit your old friend!”

“You must go to that giant stele if you’ve come here for the sword code. I have seen it submerging into that stele with my own eyes. I even chased it, but my speed fell short!” Ye Xiwen said.

Ye Xiwen had honestly told Bao Qin Wang about the whereabouts of that ‘sword code’. He certainly wasn’t afraid of Bao Qin Wang; he just didn’t wish to invite calamity for no reason.

This sword code had attracted many tyrannical experts. He was likely to come across a lot of trouble if he didn’t stay away from it. Ye Xiwen wasn’t afraid of any trouble. However, he didn’t feel like taking the initiative to look for some.

Ye Xiwen wouldn’t have been in the slightest bit of trouble if that woman in red hadn’t made those irresponsible remarks.

He would’ve certainly accepted it if the ‘sword code’ were really in his possession. However, it was not, and he still ended-up getting accused for it.

“That’s strange. How it can disappear?” Jian Wu Chen frowned and asked.

Jian Wu Chen had no doubt in Ye Xiwen’s words. There was no need for Ye Xiwen to lie. This meant that the problem lay with that

sword code.

More and more powerhouses had begun to advance towards this area following the disappearance of the sword code.

However, this strange matter was just beginning.

A mysterious Divine Egg appeared above a tall mountain on the third day since the 'sword code' had started attracting many people to arrive at this place. No one knew which monster's egg it was. Countless experts forged a battle in order to compete for this Divine Egg. Even Ye Xiwen joined the battle. However, that Divine Egg turned into a Divine Hou (1) and vanished from everyone's line of sight.

A bad premonition flourished inside Ye Xiwen's heart. However, more experts arrived after hearing about that Divine Hou. According to the legend, it was one of the nine sons of the Dragon King. It possessed a real dragon's blood in its veins and was exceptionally noble. Ancient gods had used it as a mount in the past.

Divine Hou was so terrifying that it used to take dragons as food. Many people were quite excited since they would have boundless future prospects if they were able to catch a Divine Hou.

Someone found that Divine Hou in a valley the next day. A heaven-shattering war broke out among several experts in order to compete for it; they still failed to catch it in spite of heavy casualties.

Finally, the Divine Hou disappeared into that same giant stele.

Suddenly, everyone's gazes were drawn towards that stele. Nobody knew when it was established and what was engraved on it. Some people even sent messages back to their inheritances in order to gain some knowledge about it. However, even they didn't know anything. No one knew for how long new disciples had been practicing in this foreign battlefield. However, this place had never been discovered still.

"This Divine Hou is one of the nine sons of the Dragon King!" Mu Ling said, "These people are really going crazy over it!"

"I heard that Divine Hou is not one of the nine sons of the Dragon King... rather it is a sixth grade zombie (2). In fact, it is even more powerful than the Drought Demon (3)!" Ye Xiwen said.

In the ancient mythology, there were White Corpse, Blade Corpse, Jumping Corpse, Flying Corpse and Drought Demon. The Divine Hou could not be called as zombies as per Buddhist say. It possessed no less than the power of gods, and could challenge gods and devils alike. It could kill the gods and slaughter the devils. Only such a zombie could be called 'Hou'. Such a zombie could have a thousand years or even ten thousand years worth of abilities acquired through practice and cultivation. Some people called such a zombie a devil. It would initially turn into a 'Drought Demon', and then the Drought Demon would evolve into a 'Hou'. A Hou possessed great magical powers. It spewed fire from its mouth and ate dragons as food. That was why Buddha had used it as a mount, and in this way had suppressed the dragon.

Suddenly, everyone's complexions changed drastically. If it really was a zombie... then it was quite terrifying. The 'sword code' as well as the Divine Hou had disappeared in that stele one after another. What kind of secret did that stele contain?

"Damn it! There won't be a mass grave beneath it, right?" the wolf cub said in his typically uncouth manner.

Ye Xiwen had also asked Ye Mo privately about this Divine Hou matter. But even he didn't know the answer very clearly. The zombie race itself was classified as 'mysterious' among the three realms. As if they had suddenly appeared from outside the three realms, and weren't even made of the so-called five elements. The members of the real zombie race weren't seen during the daytime. They were usually nothing more than a corpse with muddled consciousness.

"Regardless, more and more people have joined in. It is an indisputable fact!" Jian Wu Chen said, "We will soon see the results irrespective of how mysterious that place is!"

"Ah, I also have the same premonition!" Ye Xiwen nodded and said.

"Ye Xiwen, come out to die!" Suddenly a loud shout came from the distant sky. It reverberated in the sky from a distant place. A terrifying and peerless aura instantaneously shrouded the small courtyard where Ye Xiwen and the others had lodged. An extremely dreadful force of oppression swept down along with

boundless killing intention. They were ice-cold and piercing in nature.

That loud shout was like a sonic boom; it had completely shaken the entire city. This city wasn't very big. Moreover, everyone in this city was an expert with successful cultivation. Therefore, even a little sound could make them go off like a boiler.

A figure stood mid-air; right above the small courtyard where Ye Xiwen was settled. He appeared to be over 20 years old. He was clad in a magnificent robe. His eyebrows were like a sword, and his eyes were like stars. His eyebrows were ramping all the way to his temples. He looked extremely handsome, but had an ice-cold expression on his face. It seemed like his aura was powerful enough to repel even those who were located a thousand miles away.

Experts through the city released their soul searches to see who had got so furious.

“Who is this man, ah! He is so rampant. Even more arrogant than I am!”

“Didn't you see the emblem embroidered on his chest? That is the emblem of Law Enforcement Hall. As per his strength — he must be Luo Yi Hang! He is so young... but he has already reached half-stage legendary ninth stage. He definitely has boundless future prospects. No wonder he could become a leader of Law Enforcement Hall's young disciples!”



“Sure enough! He is not just talented, but also has formidable strength. Can it be that he’s come looking for Ye Xiwen because the guy killed his juniors?”

“Exactly! Ye Xiwen is an undisciplined guy. A few members of Law Enforcement Hall looked down on him and provoked him... so he killed them all. The higher brass of Law Enforcement Hall was unable to investigate this matter properly. So they let a high-level expert like Luo Yi Hang deal with this matter. It is clear that he must punish Ye Xiwen in order to establish the prestige and dignity of Law Enforcement Hall in the eyes of new disciples. How will the Law Enforcement Hall maintain the rules and discipline in the university if everyone starts to disobey them!”

A terrifying aura belonging to the peak level of half-step legendary realm had shrouded this small city. There were no truth level experts inside the city. However, there were many half-step legendary and legendary realm experts; even they couldn’t bear this kind of murderous aura.

“Bang!” An imposing aura leapt-up from that small courtyard. Ye Xiwen came out of the small courtyard. He was riding on a rainbow light.

“You are Ye Xiwen, correct? Not bad; you dare to come out on your own. You’re not a coward!” Luo Yi Hang coldly looked at Ye Xiwen. He certainly showered praises on Ye Xiwen, but he didn’t have a bit of smile on his face. There a cold look in his eyes on the contrary.

Ye Xiwen didn’t say anything in response. He simply released his

golden divinities. The invincible divine power contained in those golden divinities immediately blocked Luo Yi Hang's imposing aura.

Luo Yi Hang's imposing aura was much stronger than Ye Xiwen's. He was at half-step legendary ninth stage, while Ye Xiwen was merely at half-step legendry's small compete realm. In general, Ye Xiwen strength shouldn't even be comparable to an expert of half-step legendary sixth stage.

Hou – A mythical creature. It's popular name is Denglong also known as Wangtianhou, Chaotianhou, or simply 'Hou'. According to the folklore, it is one of the sons of the Dragon King. It has been used as a mount of ancient gods. It can eat the brains of dragons. It can spew flames and can defeat dragons. It resembles a horse with scales all over its body.

Appearance: It has various characteristics which resemble animals: horns like a deer, head like a camel, ears like a cat, eyes like a shrimp, mouth like a donkey, hair like a lion, neck like a snake, scales like a koi fish, front paws like an eagle, and rear paws like a tiger.

Zombie: Also known as Jiang Shi or Corpse.

Draught Demon: Also known as Hanba or 'Nüba' is a Chinese drought deity. Wherever it goes, it invokes draught.

## Chapter 343: Fight With Luo Yi Hang

---

Luo Yi Hang coldly stared at Ye Xiwen. The undisguised and ferocious killing intent had completely shrouded Ye Xiwen. Luo Yi Hang was just like a revered god of death.

“You’re pretty good. You even have a manly appearance!” Luo Yi Hang coldly said.

Ye Xiwen didn’t say anything. He didn’t wish to come out in front of Luo Yi Hang. However, Luo Yi Hang had compelled him to do so... in a way.

The odds of winning against Luo Yi Hang weren’t looking good even if Ye Xiwen had condensed Venus by now. However, he still had to come out and face this opponent.

“He is very strong. You only have one recourse now, Ye Xiwen. Use your ‘phoenix regeneration technique’ and exhaust him. Your only option is to compel him to consume all his energy!” Ye Xiwen heard Ye Mo’s voice in his mind. It was almost impossible for Ye Xiwen to defeat Luo Yi Hang with his current strength since Luo Yi Hang was extremely powerful. Even ordinary experts of half-step legendary ninth stage would not be able to sustain a few moves of Luo Yi Hang. There was only one way out for Ye Xiwen — to exploit his own restoring capabilities and keep fighting with Luo Yi Hang until he exhausted all his power.

Ye Xiwen nodded. He had anticipated that he would need to fight with Luo Yi Hang someday; but not today. However, he had been

exposed because his relation with the 'sword code' had attracted the attention of several people towards him. As a result, he would have to fight with Luo Yi hang ahead of time.

The sky began to shiver under Luo Yi Hang's imposing aura. The killing intention surged-up as if it was a substantive attack; it cracked-open the space.

Luo Yi Hang's killing intention was locked on Ye Xiwen, but suddenly filled the entire sky as well. It seemed like it would kill Ye Xiwen no matter where he would run to. This was a method to establish one's prestige and authority.

Ye Xiwen had killed several Law Enforcement Disciples one after another. The Law Enforcement Hall had obviously lost their prestige in front of this term's new disciples as a result. Luo Yi Hang was obviously very unhappy about this since he was the leader of this term's Law Enforcement Disciples. His own prestige had fallen along with the Law Enforcement Hall's. And the main culprit behind all this was none other than Ye Xiwen. Therefore, Luo Yi Hang needed to kill Ye Xiwen in order to re-establish the prestige of Law Enforcement Hall.

"Die!" Luo Yi Hang roared as he released sonic boom. It swept across in all directions and set-off violent whirlwinds.

The long blade in Luo Yi Hang's hand released blade energy, and it wantonly swept-out in all directions. A large section of the empty sky instantly shattered and collapsed down like an avalanche. Even the primal chaos on the other side of the space was exposed as the space shattered. There was no dispute on the

fact that Luo Yi Hang possessed tyrannical strength.

“Clang!” The sword intent from Ye Xiwen’s hand soared into the sky. It applied sidewise compression in all four directions, and directly pierced its way through the sky.

“Bang!” The blade energy and the ‘sword intention’ collided in the sky. The terrifying forces mutually crashed into each other, and condensed into waves of dreadful storms. This storm swept out in all directions, and annihilated everything in its path. The explosion ripped open the sky, which ultimately collapsed like the pieces of a shattered mirror.

Everyone was dumbstruck. This fight was so terrifying that its incorporeal complementary waves could directly blast a truth level expert to death.

Luo Yi Hang’s blade energy ran amuck and routed Ye Xiwen’s sword intention. It cut down the sword intention horizontally.

Ye Xiwen promptly retreated. He seemed anxious while he hastily dodged this attack.

“Bang!” The blade energy made a huge crack in the ground. Ye Xiwen was aghast; this was the first time that his sword intention had been defeated — not because his sword intention attack was not strong enough, but because there was a huge difference between his cultivation level and Luo Yi hang’s. Otherwise, this would not have happened.

“You got lucky this time, but not again!” Luo Yi Hang said as he slashed his long blade horizontally. The attack applied repression in all directions. The blade energy rushed-out as the real elemental energy surged-up. It revealed the most terrifying power.

His domineering and arrogant demeanor seemed only natural in Ye Xiwen’s view. After all, he was more powerful than Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen simply couldn’t underestimate him.

“I would have rooted you out like a worthless weed if we were at the same level!” Ye Xiwen gritted his teeth and said.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen’s words were no less than a joke for Luo Yi Hang. It was impossible for the two of them to be at the same level. This world could never be so fair.

“Bang!” Luo Yi Hang’s ominous power overflowed the sky. It seemed as if his imposing aura would dominate the entire world. He firmly clutched his long blade and rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

The universe itself was trod to pieces. It was as if his imposing aura had rushed forth to single-handedly massacre a mighty force comprising of thousands of men and horses.

Ye Xiwen didn’t retreat. He shot his sword intention once again. It condensed into a big sword which flew forward and smashed the space in the process.

“Bang!” The collision between these two attacks terrified

everyone. The surrounding space completely disintegrated into pieces. However, that small city wasn't destroyed yet.

This small city had hosted god-knows how many worthy experts over more than thousands of years. It was certainly not an ordinary city even though it looked such.

“Bang!”

They kept fighting. The blade energy and the sword intention were flying everywhere. Their murderous energies were wreaking havoc in the sky, while their desire to battle had already traversed to the heavens.

“Clang!” it sounded like Gold and Iron had collided. Luo Yi Hang's long blade was even quicker than Ye Xiwen's sword. It emitted a cold light as it cut open a huge wound in Ye Xiwen lower abdomen. Blood splashed out and kept on dripping. Luo Yi Hang's real elemental energy had infiltrated his body. As a result, his phoenix regeneration technique could not operate for long. There was no way to heal the wound, and the blood streamed out non-stop.

His dark-red blood kept gushing out. Everyone was dumbstruck; their pupils contracted. They had seen Ye Xiwen's tyrannical martial power. Hence, they hadn't anticipated that the outcome would appear so quickly. Ye Xiwen's strength was inferior to Luo Yi Hang's, and that was why he was wounded so soon. He simply had no chance of winning the next round now.

Was there nobody who could compete with Law Enforcement Disciples?

Ye Xiwen's body trembled. It was almost as if he had fallen from the sky, and into this mundane world. His bones were visible due to the deep wound, and blood kept gushing out. That attack would have hit Ye Xiwen's main point if it slightly deviated from its target.

"Ye Xiwen is going to die!" Everyone arrived to this conclusion.

Ye Xiwen had fallen into a position of absolute disadvantage by suffering a serious injury. How would he be able to make a comeback now?

"Prepare to die!" Luo Yi Hang didn't hold back. His long blade emitted rays of light which frightened everyone. He wanted to seize this opportunity to kill Ye Xiwen, and thus, rushed towards him. His mountainous imposing aura shrouded Ye Xiwen's entire body from above. The bystanders could only feel that it was very difficult to find a worthy opponent for Luo Yi Hang.

Luo Yi Hang rushed forward to exploit this situation since Ye Xiwen hadn't yet recovered. It seemed like Ye Xiwen would die.

Luo Yi Hang's ice-cold eyes were like two lightning... glaring stubbornly at Ye Xiwen. The tip of the blade was raised horizontally, and the blade light darted out along with unbounded killing intention.



The blade light ripped open countless avenues (1) in the sky as it advanced towards Ye Xiwen. Luo Yi Hang's blade skill had already reached the superb stage. In fact, he could display it with ease... as if it was on his fingertips. However, it still had great might.

The blade light suppressed downward.

Ye Xiwen moved quickly and slashed his sword.

The sword's tip and the blade light collided once again.

“Bang!” A terrifying aura filled the air. The sword and blade light collided ferociously. The blade light exploded with irresistible force. Suddenly, Ye Xiwen shouted, “Hanshan Seal!” (2)

A huge mountain fell from the sky. The entire mountain came rolling down like a giant dragon.

“Bang!” The avenues in the sky were crushed into fragments by that falling mountain.

Both men took a few steps back as the terrifying collision sounded. Ye Xiwen's physical strength was too massive. Luo Yi Hang's strength was quite enormous. However, Ye Xiwen's physical strength was even stronger.

Ye Xiwen was wounded once again. This terrible wound was caused by the enormous crushing power of his opponent's attack.

Everyone's eyelids bounced. These two men were fighting too ruthlessly; so much so that they might die anywhere and anytime. Ye Xiwen was clearly in the disadvantageous position. However, he didn't show any sign of immediate death. He was like a wounded tiger on the contrary... injured, but with enough power to fight back.

However, Luo Yi hang had an even more severe killing intent in his eyes. Ye Xiwen was at much lower level — a difference of four levels separated them. But, Ye Xiwen could actually fight with him like this. Such physical strength was indeed extraordinary.

The look in Ye Xiwen's eyes seemed profound and solemn. He was unceasingly reading the Hanshan secret art. The Hanshan Seal was finally invoked again, and a huge mountain fell down from above. It held so much suppression force that it seemed as if it would crush the heavens along with the twilight of gods.

Luo Yi Hang's one blade attack was able to cut through that falling mountain, but it gave Ye Xiwen enough time to heal.

Ye Xiwen finally ejected Luo Yi Hang's real elemental energy from his body. In fact, his injuries had also healed at a very fast speed.

Luo Yi Hang's complexion changed and became exceptionally solemn. He was aware that Ye Xiwen possibly possessed an outstanding 'healing type power technique'. However, he hadn't cared much about it. People like Ye Xiwen were ranked as one of

the top disciples of the younger generation. So how could they not have any healing technique? In fact, it could be said that they would have the most superior healing power techniques.

However, Luo Yi Hang gasped as he saw this amazing recovery speed. It was far superior to the healing techniques he had seen in the past. All the other healing techniques seemed nothing more than trash when compared to this. Suddenly, a burning hot light flourished in his eyes.

Luo Yi Hang would need to capture Ye Xiwen in order to obtain this technique. Then, he would have to use his 'soul search' to scramble through Ye Xiwen's sea of consciousness. Then, he must transform this strange technique accordingly for his own use. In fact, he suspected that this was actually one of the ancient god techniques. The matter about Ye Xiwen obtaining one page of Ancient God Scripture was already well-known fact. So how could he not know?

This strange technique would be priceless if it were recorded on that one page of Ancient God Scripture.

Luo Yi Hang no longer held himself back. The imposing aura boiled over his body, and his figure released a clanging sound similar to that of gold and iron colliding. This scene was too terrifying.

"Bang!" The long blade in Luo Yi Hang's hand released an incredible blade light. The blade energy split open the space in a flash and exposed the chaos on the other side. The blade attack then abruptly advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s sword intention confronted this blade attack, but it was much terrifying than earlier... The blade energy instantly smashed his sword intention and went further to crash into his body.

“Puchi!” The blade energy opened a huge bloody wound in Ye Xiwen’s chest. This attack was extremely ferocious and almost killed Ye Xiwen.

Blood was dripping, but Ye Xiwen was still standing.

His complexion didn’t change much either.

Luo Yi Hang was waiting for Ye Xiwen to proceed and resume the fight. Suddenly, a rumbling sound reverberated from the distance, and stirred up the entire world.

Avenues = Also called ‘Dao’ are the martial principles. When high-level experts fight, they can call forth such avenues.

Hanshan Seal = Shaking Mountain Seal

# Chapter 344: Enters The Underground World

---

The entire universe rumbled and shook. This stirred-up the entire city. Nobody knew the reason behind this sudden event.

Soon, everybody knew where the problem was. There was a giant stele not very far away from the city. The area in a radius of more than 10 miles surrounding it had completely collapsed. This had exposed a huge gap.

Everyone was seething with excitement because they knew that this was a once in a lifetime opportunity. And they might not get another later.

Why did they come here? Was it not for that sword code?

However, there had been a widely spread rumor that Ye Xiwen had obtained this sword code. However, he had completely denied it, and had said that it had disappeared in that stele. Nobody had any evidence that it was with him. However, a lot of people were still ready to cause him trouble. They wanted to launch an attack on him. It was too early to say that the sword code was in his hands. But, a lot of people disliked him, and were hence gearing-up to deal with him.

Ye Xiwen knew that he had been exposed to all this mess. He knew that he must leave this place, but he didn't even if they might hold him down. His reasoning was simply. His departure would cause a riot involving several thousand experts inside this

city since almost all of them had come for the sword code.

Ye Xiwen's departure would enrage everyone.

However, a Divine Hou appeared out of nowhere soon enough. Then, it disappeared into that giant stele. This washed away the suspicion that had stained Ye Xiwen. In fact, Ye Xiwen would've been submerged by all those people if Luo Yi Hang and his men hadn't arrived and surrounded him first.

Ye Xiwen would've disappeared long ago if these people hadn't kept a covetous eye on him. Or at the very least... he would have found a nice place to hide.

The outcome of the fight between Ye Xiwen and Luo Yi Hang wasn't certain yet.

The strange movement in that territory had attracted Luo Yi Hang's attention as well. Ye Xiwen seized this opportunity to heal his wounds, and was secretly relieved. There was no dispute in the fact that Luo Yi Hang had tyrannical strength. There was a huge difference between their levels. Even an ordinary expert of half-step legendary ninth stage wouldn't be able to block Luo Yi Hang's blade attack. Perhaps, two strikes of his blade would be enough to kill them.

Even an ordinary expert of half-step legendary ninth stage would not be able to force Luo Yi Hang to this extent. But Ye Xiwen had relied on 'gilded tyrant form' and 'phoenix regeneration technique' to hang on.

The experts in this entire city seethed with excitement. They had been closely observing the fight between Ye Xiwen and Luo Hi Hang. They had kept an eye on this fight since they wished to see if the sword code had really fallen into Ye Xiwen's hands or not. They had been expecting to know the answer by the end of it.

However, everyone was determined that the sword code wasn't in Ye Xiwen's possession after that sudden movement took place in that region. Moreover, it would eventually fall into Luo Yi Hang's hands after the fight even if it was in Ye Xiwen's.

Nevertheless, the sudden appearance of that underground pit had made them even more excited. It seemed as if the sword code and Divine Hou had disappeared in that stele; they had most likely escaped into that giant pit.

Everyone bellowed and excitedly flew outside the city.

Suddenly, a sword rainbow flew across the sky. And it was followed by a figure treading on a rainbow-light. Both of them instantaneously flew inside that pit.

Some sharp-eyed people immediately recognized that figure.

"That is the Sword Sage. He is the leader of the Sword Tomb organization. I didn't expect that the Sword Sage would arrive as well!"

“I didn’t expect that the two top experts would actually gather at this place instead of staying hidden like always. I never thought that he would appear so fast. It seems like the Sword Tomb’s people already knew about it!”

Luo Yi Hang saw that figure treading on the rainbow-light, and his complexion suddenly changed. How could he not have recognized the Sword Sage? Other people weren’t a threat in his eyes. Especially since he had brought a large number of Law Enforcement Disciples with him... However, many members of the Sword Tomb had also arrived. The sword skill was regarded as very sharp and effective one among all sorts of martial arts. Therefore, these sword disciples usually had an extremely tyrannical strength. Moreover, the Sword Tomb’s leader’s arrival had scared him even further.

Luo Yi Hang looked towards that pit, and realized that more and more experts had started to enter it. He then looked at Ye Xiwen once again, and realized that he had almost restored his strength. Luo Yi Hang finally made his decision, and turned around to leave. He flew directly inside that pit.

He felt sure that he could kill Ye Xiwen sooner or later. However, the Sword Sage was likely to take away any treasures which were inside that pit. The current gain would certainly not make up for the loss he would have later on.

In fact, he had no fear of Ye Xiwen’s future growth potential. He had been able to cultivate to this level... that itself showed that he possessed an air of strong confidence. He aimed at the supreme throne of the younger generation. Ye Xiwen hadn’t demonstrated



enough skill to portray himself as a threat in Luo Yi Hang's eyes.

Ye Xiwen growth was certainly rapid, but it didn't bother Luo Yi Hang one bit. No matter how quick was Ye Xiwen's growth... he didn't care as long as his own was faster than Ye Xiwen's.

Moreover, Luo Yi Hang had already seen that Ye Xiwen possessed a strange healing technique. It was impossible to kill Ye Xiwen in a short period of time. Moreover, he wouldn't get anything if he were to arrive late inside that pit.

Ye Xiwen heaved a sigh of relief as he saw Luo Yi Hang depart. He sat cross-legged in midair, and began to heal his injuries.

"Ye Xiwen, are you all right?" Jian Wu Chen and the others flew over. They arrived next to Ye Xiwen and asked in a concerned manner.

"I am all right!" Ye Xiwen shook his head. In fact, the result was much better than what he had anticipated. His hopeless approach to exhaust Luo Yi Hang to death hadn't work. In fact, Ye Xiwen was completely exhausted instead of Luo Yi Hang.

Ye Xiwen could think of only one method to deal with Luo Yi Hang—injure the man seriously, and then use the devil wings to escape. However, it was impossible for Ye Xiwen to outrun Luo Yi Hang if the latter was in his peak condition. But it would've been much easier to escape him if he were in an injured state.

Ye Xiwen was confident that he would be able to beat Luo Yi Hang rather easily after finding a way to have a breakthrough to the next stage.

“You all go and examine that pit. I am going to be a bit late since I have to heal my injuries!” Ye Xiwen said.

“Alright! Then we will go first!” They were members of Sword Tomb after all. Hence, they had also received the scrambling order from the Sword Sage.

Jian Wu Cheng and Mu Ling went to that pit after confirming that Ye Xiwen was fine. They saw that the wolf cub was also present there.

Ye Xiwen had completely healed his injuries in less than ten minutes. He had injured himself rather seriously. Therefore, he was forced to completely restore his internal injuries before he entered the pit.

There was no one in the city now. Everyone had rushed into that pit. Ye Xiwen rode the rainbow light, and arrived near that stele in a flash.

This stele had initially looked quite ordinary to him. However, it was emitting waves of strange light now. It seemed as if some kind of martial technique was being set off in motion.

“This stele really is very strange!” Ye Mo frowned as he appeared

on Ye Xiwen's shoulder.

“But, I still want to go inside and see. I can feel that it contains a large amount of star power!” Ye Xiwen said. The power of the stars was what Ye Xiwen needed the most since he had recently started to construct his own universe. Other forms of energies could also be used in the construction of the universe. But they were far from being as effective as star power. Ye Xiwen could upgrade quickly... as long as there was enough power of the stars. Then, he could even compete against those other peerless geniuses.

“I think that this foreign battlefield is possibly a star fragment. That's why it has such abundant star power!” Ye Mo said.

“Star fragment? Such a huge star fragment!” Ye Xiwen was somewhat startled.

“Well, maybe they have taken some star as a battlefield. And this underground region could have been fragmented out of it!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen held his breath as thought of taking a star as a battlefield. Disintegrating a star into fragments was impossible even for an expert of the sage realm.

What sort of a terrifying expert would it take to fragment a star?

Regardless; this place had abundant star power. For Ye Xiwen, it was like cultivating in a holy land. Naturally, he needed to go

inside the pit.

Ye Xiwen got into the pit. He realized that it was a huge underground world. It was hard to imagine. It was a huge world and was no different from any other; except the fact that it had no sky. The large availability of star power had given birth to strange beasts, and they ran amuck in this world.

“I can feel the aura of a strange beast ahead!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen had just entered this underground world and had already found a tyrannical strange beast. These strange beasts were more tyrannical than the ones on the surface. This was merely a strange beast of legendry’s seventh stage. However, many experts of legendry’s eighth stage wouldn’t be able to deal with it.

“Arghh!” that strange beast roared in a strange manner. It ferociously rushed towards Ye Xiwen. Its movements were fierce and powerful. Every action and movement of that strange beast was unexpectedly conforming to the laws of the world.

These strange beasts were far more tyrannical than those present on the surface.

Ye Xiwen sneered. He shot his big hand towards that strange beast and grabbed it. Many experts of half-step legendary eighth stage wouldn’t be able to deal with this strange beast. However, that was limited only to the ordinary experts of half-step legendary eighth stage. Ye Xiwen wasn’t at half-step legendary eighth stage yet. However, his real physical strength was sufficient to sweep

away the experts of half-step legendary eighth stage. Hence, coping with this strange beast was like a piece of cake for him.

The strange beast screamed as Ye Xiwen grabbed it. It began to struggle frantically; but how could it possibly escape from Ye Xiwen's attack?

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen crushed that mountainous strange beast to death. It then turned into blood fog. Its flesh and blood was absorbed by Heavenly Source Mirror (1), and its inner stone was absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

The Heavenly Source Mirror hidden inside Ye Xiwen's body had finally completed the accumulation of energy. It suddenly burst into dazzling rays of light, and this light shrouded the surrounding area.

“Ha ha... Ye Xiwen, I have finally completed the accumulation of energy. The Heavenly Source Mirror has finally been restored to the level of a pseudo-sage tool. The blood pond can finally be opened now!”

Notes:

Heavenly Source Mirror = Tianyuan Mirror

# Chapter 345: Frantic Killing

---

‘Shua!’ The Heavenly Source Mirror (1) leapt-out of Ye Xiwen’s body and flew-up. It emitted scarlet light. This light spread across half-the-sky.

Ye Xiwen could clearly see a huge blood pond in the depths of Heavenly Source Mirror. It was rolling and tumbling. It seemed as if a world was evolving inside it. This blood pond had been conjured bit-by-bit; it had grown out of nothing.

“Ha ha! Ye Xiwen, I’ve finally restored a bit of it!” Ye Mo spoke in excitement, “The restoration is only to the level of a pseudo-sage tool. However, it can possibly lend some power of an authentic sage level tool!”

A faint smile appeared on Ye Xiwen’s face. Heavenly Source Mirror was like his right-hand man. Ye Xiwen’s strength would naturally increase with the mirror’s restoration.

The so-called sage tools were used by the experts of the sage realm to practice the ‘tool techniques’. An expert of the sage realm would be capable of practicing sage tool techniques. However, not all sage experts could use sage tools. Several sage experts had low strength, and they could only use pseudo-sage tools. In fact, most half-step sage realm experts didn’t even have pseudo-sage tools in their possession.

The Heavenly Source Mirror was like a human who had been sleeping for many years, and had just woken up. It needed to eat.

Its restoration-degree would increase as it ate more and more. The flesh of those strange beasts and demon beasts had been absorbed by the Heavenly Source Mirror. It had undergone a transformation since it had finally absorbed sufficient energy.

“We don’t have to worry about getting besieged since we have this blood pond!” Ye Mo said, “This blood pond can condense blood slaves. It can even condense an army of blood slaves if it has sufficient energy. One can even condense 100 million blood slaves of the legendary realm if they have sufficient energy. That would indeed be enough to submerge the entire True Martial University!”

Ye Xiwen’s scalp went numb as he imagined 100 million blood slaves of legendary realm. 100 million blood slaves would indeed be sufficient to raze the True Martial University to the ground. However, it was also important to consider the amount of energy that would be required to condense so many of them.

The method to create blood slaves was designed by Ye Mo’s former master. It was the most elite and the most loyal army. Ye Mo’s master had relied mainly on the core forces of his blood army to run amuck the world. He had eventually conquered the Devil World, and had hence gained the title of Devil King.

The one who attained this blood pond surely possessed good luck. It could condense a new species of soldiers. Moreover, these blood slaves bore absolutely loyalty to the owner of Heavenly Source Mirror. They would never betray him. Conquering the world wouldn’t only remain a dream if someone had such an army.

However, one could guess that condensing 100 million blood

slaves was nothing more than a delusion if they would look at the price of condensing one such slave.

A total of ten thousand ‘Spirit Dans’ (2) were required in order to condense a single blood slave of legendary first stage. But the amount of ‘Spirit Dans’ required would increase if one wished to condense more. Ye Xiwen would only be able to condense a blood slave army if he could transfer the entire world’s spirit energies for this use. Otherwise, he’d have to stop thinking about it.

However, one could actually condense a blood slave of sage realm as long as there was sufficient amount of energy. Though, it was unrealistic for Ye Xiwen to condense a large numbers of blood slaves at the moment.

“Forget it. It is too expensive to condense a blood slave. We can make some helpers on occasion. However, just forget about an army of blood slaves!” Ye Xiwen shook his head and said. It was simply unrealistic. Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo were talking about this matter earlier. However, Ye Xiwen could sense that it was too far-fetched.

“Ha ha, you are still very young right now. Refining these ‘Spirit Dans’ will consume your time. Heavenly Source Mirror can steadily condense ‘Spirit Dans’. But, you can immediately condense one blood slave of the sage realm if you can think of a method to obtain ‘spiritual arteries’ (3). It will let you run amuck among these new disciples!” Ye Mo chuckled and said.

“It is too early to dream of that!” Ye Xiwen shook his head.



“Moreover, you can find the corpse of a sage expert and immerse it inside the blood pond. Even that can be transformed into a blood slave. However, such blood slaves will be of low quality!” Ye Mo said, “But it can be a very good option since it requires only half the energy!”

Half? Ye Xiwen couldn’t even afford half the energy. This was a useless suggestion; nothing more.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen felt a strong killing intention, and it was sweeping towards him. He used his soul search technique and saw a humanoid strange beast in front. It had already taken unfair advantage of the situation, and had caught him off guard. It struck with its two sharp front claws. They suddenly appeared in front of him like two steel knives. They were meant to behead him.

Ye Xiwen realized that this strange beast was probably at half-step legendry’s small complete realm, and had an innate skill of moving stealthily. Perhaps Ye Xiwen wouldn’t have been able to avoid this attack if he hadn’t felt its unusually strong killing intention.

Ye Xiwen stretched-out his devil wings. His whole body appeared like a bolt of golden lightning as it flew to avoid that twin claw-attack. He shot his palm forward while grazing in the air, and unleashed the move ‘Hidden Dragon Rises from the Abyss’ (4).

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen's coiling dragon palm attack exploded that strange beast into fragments. Its flesh and blood was absorbed by the Heavenly Source Mirror. It also contained star power; this was absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen could feel that the universe inside his Dantian had expanded a bit.

"These strange beasts in the underground world are more tyrannical than the ones on the surface. They contain more star power inside their bodies!" Ye Xiwen spoke since he could feel a distinct difference.

Ye Xiwen's was on the move non-stop. He flew at a high altitude, and ceaselessly killed all strange beasts which came his way. He also saw traces of the experts who had arrived before him. These traces indicated that they had killed several strange beasts. But their own corpses were also present among the beasts'.

"Flutter-Flutter!" A flock of owls rushed down from above. These creatures were very difficult to deal with during the night time. They issued the most unpleasant sound as they rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

"Dammit! It's a flock of owls. Moreover, these aren't ordinary owls!" Ye Mo said.

The owls condensed into a huge black cloud, and started to fly in flocks.

They finally saw Ye Xiwen. They popped-over towards him one-after-another as if he was their prey. They spat black divine beams from their mouths. It looked as if a mass of black clouds had spat-out another mass of the same. It was quite terrifying.

Ye Xiwen didn't dare to hold back. These owls were huge. His divinities obeyed him to form a golden divine wall in front of him. The owls that had spat those poisonous beams had no way to penetrate this golden wall.

These owls weren't too strong. In fact, some of them only had the strength of legendary first or second stage. However, many owls had gathered. So much so, that they could even overwhelm an expert of half-step legendary ninth stage.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen's Heavenly Source Mirror flew-out, and scarlet rays of light swept across. The owls that came in contact with this light exploded and turned into blood fog. They were absorbed by the Heavenly Source Mirror.

Ye Mo absorbed their essence and blood in a carefree manner. Individual owls didn't contribute much. However, their sheer number was quite enormous and easily made-up for the lack in quality.

Ye Xiwen wasn't ready to be outdone yet. 'Hanshan Seal' (5) condensed instantly. It applied enormous suppressive force on the owls; this pressure resembled that of a giant dragon. Those owls were transformed into blood fog by that suppressive force.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo collaborated to deal with those owls. They quickly and efficiently killed all of them. The owls were quite large in number. However, their strength was much inferior. Large quantity can certainly submerge the quality. But their numbers hadn't reached that extent yet.

A rumbling sound reverberated as soon as Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo relaxed. Thousands of densely packed strange beasts suddenly appeared; they looked like porcupines. They surged forward and it seemed as if an earthquake had shaken the ground. Moreover, these legendary level strange beasts were extremely tyrannical. In reality, they were running in the air. This was enough to cause intense vibrations in the air.

The strange beasts on the surface were basically 'used' to fight and train each term's new disciples by the True Martial University. Once in a while, some people would come to clean them up for population control. Hence, approximately ten thousand or so strange beasts remained on the surface. No one knew how long these beasts had lived here. Moreover, strange beasts of various species had combined to form this allied army.

However, the strange beasts inside this underground world had never been discovered. These strange beasts had maintained their

original appearances and population. Therefore, they could be seen in various ethnic groups. And each ethnic group could have over ten thousand strange beasts of same species.

In fact, they would be destroyed by other ethnic groups if they didn't maintain such large groups of over ten thousand beasts. Such was this place's terror.

This was especially true for the strange beasts with weaker strength. In fact, the strange beasts of truth level might already be extinct. It was impossible for such beasts to survive in the place.

“These strange beasts are difficult to deal with. Be careful; they have thorns on their backs!” Ye Mo cautioned. However, there was no need for Ye Mo's cautions since those strange beasts had shot their thorns in attack.

The ten thousand strange beasts had shot over ten thousand thorns. It appeared as if their attack had hid the sky and covered the earth. These densely packed strange beasts appeared like a large group of black clouds; they had covered the surrounding area.

“Quite ferocious!” Ye Xiwen was dumbstruck. The thorns on their backs seemed poisonous. The space in front of Ye Xiwen dissolved owing to the mid-air friction caused by the loud ‘whizzing’ chorus of thousands of thorns.

However, the most terrifying thing was that — it was just the first round. These strange beasts were incomparably huge, and

each one of them appeared like a moderately-sized hill. The thorns on their backs were as thick as the calf of a human leg.

Simply infinite!

Heavenly Source Mirror = Tianyuan Mirror

Spirit Dans = Ling Dans

Spiritual Arteries = Streams of pure spirit energies which run underground. Most sects are built above the land which contains spiritual artiest.

Hidden Dragon Rises from the Abyss is a move of 'Coiling Dragon Palm' technique.

Hanshan Seal = Shaking Mountain Seal

## Chapter 346: Killing Spree

---

These thornback strange beasts were as many as the hair on an ox. Their thorns were sharp, thin and extremely terrifying.

“Woosh!”

“Woosh!”

“Woosh!”

The space was pierced by those thorns, and the sharp sounds of it reverberated.

Ye Xiwen looked somewhat startled, but didn't dare to underestimate them. These beasts were perhaps inferior to him when taking strength into consideration. However, their biggest advantage was their sheer numbers since the entire ethnic group had attacked at once.

“Hanshan Seal (1)!” Ye Xiwen shouted loudly. A huge mountain swept down like a giant dragon.

It directly crushed the incoming wave of thorns to the ground.

“Woosh!”

“Woosh!”

“Woosh!”

Sharp piercing sounds reverberated once again.

Those thornback beasts had launched another wave of thorns. They had innumerable thorns on their backs.

“Unexpectedly, these strange beasts know when to advance and retreat... like an army’s battle formation. They are launching wave after wave of attacks... without any gap!” Ye Xiwen sighed and said. These strange beasts’ wisdom wasn’t as profound as a human’s. However, they were still quite intelligent. Each of these strange beasts was like a military general. They knew when to attack and retreat in order to keep the enemy at bay.

Ye Xiwen immediately trod forward and his hands emitted golden rays. Momentarily, he went on a killing spree and started to rip-apart these thornback beasts one-after-another.

“Clang!” Ye Xiwen released ‘sword intention’ from his hand. It soared in the sky and formed a sword light. The sword light immediately crashed down. He came down along his sword. He shuttled back and forth among those strange beasts as he slaughtered them one by one.

Each of these thornback beasts was like a hill and Ye Xiwen was nothing in front of them size-wise. However, no enemy could be his match when crossing paths with his sword light. He killed hundreds of these beasts in a flash.



Ye Xiwen had already rushed into the flock of those strange beasts. This had made it difficult for them to attack him. However, these beasts immediately rearranged themselves in a military battle-formation, and directed their attacks towards Ye Xiwen once again. This made it difficult for Ye Xiwen to execute his original plan.

“These strange beasts are very difficult to deal with!” Ye Xiwen said.

“Hanshan Seal!” Ye Xiwen shouted without any hesitation. And a huge mountain pressed down with the ferocity of a giant dragon.

However, those thornback beasts shot their thorns once again. A barrage of thorns crashed into the descending mountain in the blink of an eye, and exploded. This scene was exceptionally terrifying.

However, the invocation speed of Ye Xiwen’s attack was faster than theirs, and the shaking mountain smashed down.

“Boom!” A huge mountain... like the very incarnation of a giant dragon... pounded upon the formation of those strange beasts, and hundreds were smashed to death.

The ‘Heavenly Source Mirror’(2) absorbed their flesh and blood, while Ye Xiwen assimilated the star power contained in their bodies.

Ye Xiwen spared no effort to attack. His 'sword intention' pounded into the flock strange beasts like a ferocious tiger. A large number of beasts were chopped down, and Ye Xiwen got to absorb more star power. The 'Observing Person Scripture' within his body began to operate crazily, and the universe within his Dantian also started to expand bit-by-bit.

He continued to absorb more and more 'star power' as he killed more strange beasts. So much so, that he kept-on killing beasts one-after-another, and absorbed their 'star power' unceasingly.

However, it would require a long time to bring about a qualitative change in his universe since the power of the stars was still far-insufficient.

Ye Xiwen interchangeably used the 'Hanshan Seal' attack and the 'sword intention' attack to kill these tyrannical beasts. Ye Xiwen suddenly rushed inside the battle formation of these beasts in order to kill them. Even at his speed... he continued to fight for an hour until he finally wiped-out their entire group.

It was a different thing killing the owls because those owls were quite small in size. Ye Xiwen's one sword attack was capable of killing a big group of such owls. However, these thornback strange beasts were very large in size; so much so that they were almost as big as a hill. His sword attack could only kill one or a few of these beasts at once.

Ye Xiwen had already killed these strange beasts. He didn't really

care about the fast consumption of his real elemental energy (3). He would've dried up his real elemental energy if the 'Heavenly Source Mirror' hadn't crazily manufactured the 'Spirit Dans' and then supplemented his lost energy.

“You’ve absorbed over ten thousand strange beasts of the legendary realm. That should be enough to upgrade you!” Ye Xiwen gasped for breath as he said to Ye Mo.

“It is still far from enough. The sage realm is entirely different from the legendary realm. I am a pseudo-sage tool at present, and I wish to transform into a sage tool. How can this be so simple?” Ye Mo said, “The ‘Heavenly Source Mirror’ is not an ordinary magical tool. It will be sufficient to sweep-away all other sage level tools once it upgrades to the sage level. It naturally won’t be easy to upgrade it!”

Despite his words, the absorption of over ten thousand strange beasts of the legendary realm meant that the ‘Heavenly Source Mirror’ had already obtained great benefits.

Ye Xiwen was still gasping for breath. Meanwhile, he flew over a lake. Suddenly, thousands of grotesque-looking fishes rushed-out of the lake. They actually flew in the air and rushed towards him. They spat-out water swords. These swords filled the entire vicinity in the blink of an eye.

Ye Xiwen was running low on the real elemental energy; only a small amount of it remained. He had intended to find a place to restore it. However, he didn’t have the means to do so now.

Ye Xiwen could see the bones on one side of the road. Some experts had their flesh thoroughly eaten... and only the bones remained. Moreover, they hadn't died long ago. It seemed evident that these fishes had made a meal out of them.

The experts couldn't have done anything radical in order to resist these over-ten-thousand tyrannical strange beasts. Thousands of young geniuses had arrived here. However, they weren't as good as such a huge group of strange beasts. It was quite difficult for an ordinary person to escape this group of beasts. Most of them got killed as they tried to flee. The only exception was Ye Xiwen since he was capable of wiping-out entire groups of strange beasts. Only he had this kind of ability. That was because his tyrant body could accommodate far more real elemental energy. This had supported until now. He would've died long ago if he were to be replaced by some other new disciple. Luo Yi Hang and the experts of his rank were usually fearless of such groups of strange beasts. However, even they could only choose to pass through quickly. It was simply impossible for them to take-on so many of these strange beasts at once and survive.

Ye Xiwen possessed a very tyrannical body. However, even he exhausted his real elemental energy after fighting with that group of thornback strange beasts. What could one possibly say for the other experts...

Ye Xiwen stretched out his devil wings, and rushed to the center of these strange fishes. He used his tyrannical body, and killed a group of strange fishes in a single breath.

These strange fishes generally grew-up receiving ‘star power’, and used it to temper and refine their own bodies. This made their bodies very hard; similar to gold and iron. But, could the toughness of their bodies possibly compare to Ye Xiwen’s ‘gilded tyrant form’? His ‘gilded tyrant form’ turned him into a golden statue as he dashed forward like an unstoppable tank. Those strange fishes didn’t stand a chance in a close combat. Even their dreadful sharp teeth couldn’t injure him.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen was like a big bulldozer. Wherever he went — he crushed all those who came in his path. Those strange fishes were blown-off by him. He was running out of real elemental energy. However, his ‘gilded tyrant form’ was tyrannical enough to explode those strange fishes by colliding with them; it wasn’t a difficult task.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen killed the last strange fish. He had already consumed the last vestiges of ‘spirit energy’ (4). Others had already gone deeper into this underground world. However, they hadn’t gone on a killing spree like Ye Xiwen.

Their encounter with these strange beasts could only be described as ‘touch and go’. They didn’t dare to engage such beasts. Even an expert like Luo Yi Hang was no exception. He too

would've died if he had encountered so many of these strange beasts.

They had come here to obtain the treasure. They didn't wish to die engaging thousands of legendary level strange beasts since these beasts were enough to submerge them.

Only Ye Xiwen could've dared because the 'star power' within the bodies of these strange beasts was no less than a rarely seen treasure to him.

No less than 20,000 strange beasts; all of legendary realm... Generally, their levels were on the lower side... only going up to legendary third stage. However, they were still genuine legendary level strange beasts. Ye Xiwen had absorbed a lot of 'star power' from these legendary level strange beasts. He could even feel the 'star power' surge in his body. He was only a short step away from condensing the Earth. Then, his inner state could have a breakthrough...

"Ye Xiwen, this lake was formed by the liquefaction of spirit energy... No wonder it has so many aggressive fish-type demon beasts. It is simply impossible to find something like this in other places!" Ye Mo said as he looked at that huge lake, "Go inside this lake. You can speed up the restoration of your real elemental energy there."

Ye Xiwen nodded and agreed with Ye Mo's suggestion. He was somewhat tired. His real elemental energy had been consumed completely. This had exhausted him.

Ye Xiwen suddenly dived headlong into the lake. He suddenly felt a burst of relaxation-like feeling over his entire body. It reached all the way to the pores in his blood capillaries. This felt similar to drinking cold water to heart's content in the hottest time of summer.

The 'spirit energy' could be considered as the most useful kind of energy. There is a proverb that often describes that 'a person has very much spirit energy'.

The more 'spirit energy' he absorbed — the more consciousness he gained. This resulted in regaining a clear and bright mind. His body also evolved unceasingly along with his brain.

In fact, people innately contained 'spirit energy'. This was the so-called 'innate energy'. However, the human body was like a huge leaking spoon; it had holes everywhere. Those holes are closed before birth since one stays immersed in the amniotic fluid. This locks the innate energy within one's body. However, those holes open after birth, and one begins to inhale huge amounts of impure energy from the very first of their breaths. However, the one who can retain more innate energy, and less impure energy, is often considered as more talented.

Some people could naturally see 'spirit energy'. Such people could be considered as quick-witted. In fact, there is a relationship between this and one's physique. Some people are born with big holes in their bodies. Such people can't store the 'spirit energy', and have no way to cultivate. And some others are born with the ability to store great amounts of 'spirit energy' within their bodies.

Such people often have exceptionally good aptitude and foundation.

“Bang!” A huge explosion occurred. Suddenly, the space began to boil like water.

Ye Xiwen had completely restored his real elemental energy. He was about to come out of the lake. But, he immediately dived-in once again.

(To be continued).

Notes:

Hanshan Seal = Shaking Mountain Seal

Heavenly Source Mirror = Tianyuan Mirror

Real Elemental Energy = Zhen Yuan

Spirit energy = Lingqi



# Chapter 347: Xuan Yuan Palace Hall

---

The space trembled frantically. Suddenly, the piece of sky above the lake was torn open from the middle.

Ye Xiwen was hidden at the bottom of the lake. He was operating the 'restraining breath technique' at its utmost to hide his presence in its entirety. He narrowed his eyes and looked at what was happening. The lake was quite deep. However, it still couldn't hide an expert like Ye Xiwen who had such a high cultivation.

A portal appeared. Many experts came out of it and gathered together.

They were headed by a man who was approximately 30 years of age. He was clad in a brocade robe, and appeared very mysterious. His daring demeanor and confident attitude could be seen on his face. One glance was enough to tell that he was an extraordinary person.

Ye Xiwen tried to see through this man's cultivation. He estimated that this man was perhaps even stronger than Luo Yi Hang. He was probably at half-step legendry's Great Complete Realm.(1)

He was only half-a-step away from entering the sage realm. Such a cultivation level wasn't an easy thing to possess in this generation. He could be regarded as an extraordinarily talented person.

“Brother Fan, is this the underground territory located in the foreign battlefield which is under the True Martial University’s rule?” a young man asked. He was clad in magnificent military attire. His cultivation was at half-step legendary ninth stage. He wasn’t as strong as the aforementioned Brother Fan. However, he was also a very talented person.

“Yes, this is. It indeed is. In fact, an extraordinary figure was suppressed here in the ancient times. This is such an old matter that the people of True Martial University may not remember it. The True Martial University had just been established back then. The foreign star beasts had launched a sneak attack on the True Martial University shortly after. Many formidable experts of this university fought in that bloody battle. The Evil God of those star beasts was suppressed here later. Afterwards, this world slowly birthed several strange beasts!” Brother Fan said with a hint of smile on his face, “Perhaps this place would’ve fallen into oblivion if the first generation’s ancestor of our Xuan Yuan Palace Hall (2) hadn’t unintentionally found some ancient records about it. Then, no one would’ve discovered its existence!”

“He he, the people of True Martial University can never even imagine that the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall will be having ours trials underground while they are having theirs’ above it. He he, True Martial University has suffered heavy losses. Many of its inheritances are incomplete and several of its ancient books have ceased to exist. It has gained the reputation of the most authentic place for learning martial arts in the entire world. However, it is shallow in reality!” that young man said as he laughed. He was obviously looking down upon the True Martial University.

Ye Xiwen listened quietly. He made no movement or noise. He

had already started pondering. He had thought that this place was a maiden land. However, he never expected that someone had already discovered this place. Moreover, it was obvious that this wasn't the first time they had come here.

"I didn't expect them to be from the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall!" Ye Mo suddenly uttered in Ye Xiwen's mind.

"Do you know about Xuan Yuan Palace Hall?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Yes. The Devil World had once invaded the True Martial World(3). Bai Mo Jiao's people(4) still secretly operate within the True Martial University. Hence, the Devil World also knew quite a bit about Zhen Wu Jie's situation and circumstances. Your Zhen Wu Jie is a vast continent surrounded by boundless seas from all sides. This continent is divided into five regions; namely — East, West, North, South and Central. It is said that the Southern region is your human race's place of origin in the True Martial World. And the True Martial University was established around that time. The True Martial University was rich and powerful back then, and ruled the entire True Martial World. However, later the Devil World invaded, and the True Martial University took the lead to resist the invasion. The devil army retreated later, but only after the True Martial University had suffered huge losses. It no longer enjoyed its previous majestic reputation. Moreover, it could only hold on to the Southern region since its influence in other regions slowly waned. Several small and large influences rose abruptly in the other regions. The Xuan Yuan Palace Hall is one amongst the best of them. In fact, it is arguably more rich and powerful than the True Martial University at present. It is an outstanding and well-known influence in its region!" Ye Mo explained to Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen couldn't help but hold his breath since he had a cold feeling in his heart. The True Martial University was already tyrannical enough. It recruited millions of new disciples each term. However, there were other forces which were actually not inferior to it. Moreover, there weren't one... but several such forces.

“Brother, the trials here are quite good. However, our Xuan Yuan Palace Hall also has such trial grounds. So why have we travelled thousands of miles to come here? It could turn into a serious matter if the people of the True Martial University were to find us!” that young man said in a confused manner since he still didn't understand the true purpose of their visit.

More people had been emerging from the portal. Hundreds of people had already gathered. Most were at half-step legendary seventh stage. Many were experts of half-step legendary eighth and ninth stage.

“Of course there is a reason. These star beasts that absorb ‘star power’ are quite good to be used in trials. However, that Evil God which had been suppressed here is most important!” Brother Fan said, “A star beast is entirely different from ordinary demon beasts or devil beasts. It is a magical creature that grows by absorbing the star power that exists in the universe. It feeds on the power of the star in order to survive. These beasts you see merely possess the bloodline of real star beasts. They cannot be considered as real star colossus. The real star colossi are as huge as the stars; just as the name suggests. They eat stars as food and are extremely rare. Moreover, the majorities of star beasts are muddleheaded, and aren't much different from ordinary beasts in that respect. However, some of the star beasts are capable of awakening their

‘spirit wisdom’. They are the most terrifying beasts. And the most dreadful ones are known as ‘star gods’. They lead innumerable star colossi to conquer various stars. One such Evil God has been suppressed here. He had once brought disaster upon the people of the True Martial World. This had led to the True Martial University’s suddenly decline.

“Our Palace Halls’ Lord has sent us here to explore and investigate. He wishes to know if that Evil God is dead or alive. We are supposed to plunder his corpse if he is dead. However, we must find a way to control him if he’s alive. He is a supreme treasure either way. But, this place isn’t far from True Martial University’s battlefield. And that’s where they resist the invasion of star beasts. This university has many experts of sage realm and Great-sage realm to keep a watch on this area. Our lord’s arrival would’ve alarmed those high-level experts of the True Martial University. How could’ve these treasures fall into our hands then?” Brother Fang continued, “Furthermore, this place used to be a battlefield in the ancient times. So it would certainly have many secret books, magic weapons etc. And it will make you a hell lot stronger if you manage to find a pseudo-sage tool. Then, you can even run amuck once you return to the Palace Hall!”

Ye Xiwen listened calmly. However, he wasn’t calm in his heart. He had never imagined that this place would have such a bitter secret. This meant that those groups of over ten thousand star beasts of legendary realm had actually evolved from that one star colossus. This showed that how powerful an existence that Evil God really was...

“Star colossus! The creature suppressed here is actually a star colossus!” Ye Mo also held his breath, “A real star colossus is

different from star beasts. The star beasts merely possess the blood of star colossus. A real star colossus can flip the entire the True Martial World upside down. They belong to a very scary ethnic group. Although there aren't too many of them, but each of them has the power to shake the world!"

Ye Xiwen nodded. These star colossi must be extremely powerful if they could make even Ye Mo praise their world-shaking power.

Forget about the present True Martial University which was already formidable enough. Its true power could be imagined from that time it used to be prosperous. However, even so, the True Martial University had failed to kill that star colossus with all its might, and the most it could do was to suppress it here. It had also led to its decline. Hence, one could imagine the power of the sealed star colossus.

"The recklessness of these people knows no bounds. They will be fortunate if that star colossus is dead. If it is alive and they try to control it, then I am afraid..." Ye Mo sneered.

"Brother, look at this group of strange fish beasts. It seems like they all were slaughtered in an instant. None live. It doesn't seem that they've been slaughtered by other star beasts. We've also found the skeletons of human beings in the vicinity!" a sharp-eyed disciple had found dead bodies lying on the ground.

"It is not good. Has this place been found? Damn!" Brother Fan cursed loudly, "We must investigate quickly; dammit!"

“We will immediately leave if we come across sage experts. However, we will kill any disciples of the True Martial University who are going through the trial. We must plug the loopholes, and ensure that this secret remains hidden!” Brother Fan clenched his teeth and said. His facial expression was quite fierce.

“Yes!” the disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall agreed in a chorus. They advanced deeper into the underground world.

They were negligent in the fact that they didn’t expect that someone could be hiding nearby. They searched the surroundings once, but didn’t find anyone. Then, they flew away one after another. Afterwards, Ye Xiwen quietly came out of the lake.

Ye Xiwen heaved a sigh of relief. The consequences would’ve been inconceivable if those people were to find him.

These disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall were far more tyrannical than those disciples of the True Martial University. Let alone that Brother Fan, who was at half-step legendry’s Great Complete realm... even those experts of half-step legendary eighth and ninth stage could combine and set-up a deathtrap for Ye Xiwen.

“The situation is getting more and more chaotic. I find this matter quite strange already. The sword code and Divine Hou disappeared here. And now these disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall have arrived. Everything is in a complete mess in here!” Ye Mo said.

“Yes, it is getting more and more chaotic. I must have a breakthrough. My combat strength will be enough to beat the experts of half-step legendary ninth stage once I breakthrough to half-step legendary sixth stage. In fact, I won’t need to fear that Brother Fan either!” Ye Xiwen said. He clearly felt his own lack of strength. He wasn’t at the top strength-wise even among those disciples of the younger generation who had burst through the city gate to enter the city earlier.

“Well, this lake is made up of liquefied ‘spirit energy’. You can take it and use it for cultivation. You won’t find something like this in the outside world!” Ye Mo said.

“Yes!”

(To be continued).

Notes:

1. Half-step legendary ninth peak<Half-step legendry’s great complete realm< Sage first stage

Note: Those who can have 9 breakthroughs within half-step legendary realm can skip ‘Legendary realm’ altogether and have a direct jump from half-step legendry’s great complete realm to Sage realm.

2. Xuan Yuan: It’s the personal name of Huangdi, the Yellow Emperor. It is also the name of the star ‘Regulus’.



3. Zhen Wu Jie: Also known as 'True Martial World' is the name of the continent this story is currently based in.

4. Bai Mo Jiao: It's an organization of Devil Worshipers which keep attacking humans. They want to bring the rule of devils in True Martial World. The English translation for Bai Mo Jiao would be 'Devil Worship Religion'.

# Chapter 348: Heavenly Tribulation Arrives

---

Half-a-month passed in an instant. This underground world had changed tremendously over the course of this time. At least one-third of the several thousands who had arrived here had died. They hadn't been killed by those star beasts. They had been killed by the disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

Only Ye Xiwen knew about these people from Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. Everyone else thought that them to be a group from the True Martial University. After all, this was the True Martial University's territory; no one had imaged that other forces might also arrive here.

Perhaps Ye Xiwen would've felt the same if he hadn't seen them coming out of the portal. He wouldn't have believed that some people could've travelled across a huge region through that portal to arrive here in secrecy. This was beyond everyone's expectation.

So much so that the disciples of the True Martial University didn't even contact the outside world. Some people did return to that pit to exit the underground world. However, they found that that pit had already been mended. This had incited panic among those experts.

They had never come across such situation. No one knew how things took this turn.

However, Ye Xiwen knew that this must've been the Xuan Yuan Palace hall's disciples' doing. But how could they dare to do such

an audacious thing? The entire True Martial University would burn with anger if they come to know about this matter. The True Martial University was still the overlord of the Southern region despite its decline. True Martial World (1) was world's strongest force and its rage was sufficient to create trouble for the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

It was chaotic outside. However, Ye Xiwen only thought of one thing — to enhance his strength. Only the relentless enhancement in his strength could help him in dealing with the impending chaos.

He especially needed to deal with those Xuan Yuan Palace Hall disciples. He knew that they intended to eliminate all disciples of the True Martial University present here. Moreover, they had great strength since they had several experts of half-step legendary ninth stage. This was far higher than this term's experts in True Martial University. Only Luo Yi Hang and Sword Sage could contend the experts of half-step legendary ninth stage. Moreover, the other party also had that Brother Fan, and he was at half-step legendry's great complete realm.

One couldn't rely on others. One could only trust themselves.

Ye Xiwen had accumulated a lot of 'star power' and had initiated the process to condense the Earth over this time. However, he had wanted to condense the Earth to perfection since it held a special status in his heart.

An intense rumbling sound reverberated at a distance. Huge Mountain-like figures were getting closer.

These strange beasts were called Mountain Giants. They were born out of this territory and were full of 'star power'. These Mountain Giants were more powerful than the species of Mountain Giants found on the outside. Their bodies were the most tyrannical defense.

They were only over a thousand in number. However, their mere-walk was enough to produce rumbling sounds. They marched forward like a magnificent army. It was very scary.

These Mountain Giants belonged to a tribal group. They had formed an army formation, and migrated at a very slow pace. This was an incomparably huge army.

A sharp eyed Mountain Giant spotted Ye Xiwen, and immediately roared. These Mountain Giants began to move. Their appearance gave no sense of sluggishness in their demeanor. In fact, they were quite flexible. It seemed as if huge Mountains were dashing towards Ye Xiwen from afar.

Each Mountain Giant had a huge stone club in its hand. They looked very tyrannical. It seemed as if their stone clubs could smash the sky to pieces.

They were barely more than a thousand in number. But they had enough strength to ensure their safety.

"Whish!" a violent sound of reverberated. It seemed as if the air had been torn. The vanguard team of Mountain Giants had already

arrived. They were headed by a rather huge Mountain Giant. It brandished its huge stone club, and produced an ear-piercing sound; it would seem as if the space had been shattered. A strong shadow took shape out of nothing and shrouded Ye Xiwen.

“Ye Xiwen, kill these Mountain Giants and you’ll be able to condense the planet. These Mountain Giants are different from ordinary star beasts. Their bodies are made up of stones. Moreover, their bodies are tempered and refined by ‘star power’. Thus, they contain a lot of ‘star power’. This much star power will be enough for you to condense the Earth to perfection!” Ye Mo quickly said.

Generally, even the little star beasts possessed significant ‘star power’. Then how could these massive Mountain Giants not have it in abundance?

In fact, the amount of star power in their bodies was so high that the leftover ‘star power’ after Earth’s creation would be enough to prepare for the next breakthrough.

Ye Xiwen moved into action and summoned the ‘Hanshan Seal (2)’. This ‘Hanshan Seal’ unexpectedly brought a glimmer of ‘twinkling stars’ as it appeared above. Even Ye Xiwen hadn’t expected this. It seemed like he had undergone a huge change after absorbing so much star power.

“Bang!” A huge mountain fell from the sky like a giant stone dragon.

It pressed towards several of those Mountain Giants.

These Mountain Giants swung their stone clubs towards that falling mountain. These stone clubs formed a huge shadow, and it rushed towards the descending mountain like a stone dragon.

“Bang!”

It appeared as if two huge stone dragons had maliciously collided in the sky; each strangling the other to death.

Ye Xiwen snorted. He shot a big hand, and grabbed those stone clubs. Suddenly, the shadow of that stone dragon got crushed, and the ‘Hanshan Seal’ finally suppressed downward.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Dozens of Mountain Giants were crushed in moments since they didn’t get enough time to escape.

Each Mountain Giant had extraordinary strength. In fact, they didn’t even require a martial skill. One could tell from their enormous bodies that each was enough to face dozens of enemies.

What exquisite martial skills would they need? They were one strong group, and could smash their enemies with one swing of their clubs. What control could one have on such creatures that could smash their enemies to explosion? What was the need of martial skills?

However, they were very sluggish in nature. They wouldn't become skillful even if they were given a chance to be since they weren't laborious.

Ye Xiwen rushed into this army of Mountain Giants, and went on a killing spree.

These Mountain Giants were massive like mountains; as their name suggested. However, they started to look smaller after they got killed. It was a magnificent sight.

Ye Xiwen slaughtered them crazily. Soon he had effortlessly killed hundreds of Mountain Giants with his long blade. But, this massacre aroused the indignation of the Mountain Giant King.

This Mountain Giant King was clearly bigger than other Mountain Giants. It was extraordinarily conspicuous even in a very large crowd of incomparably huge Mountain Giants.

The power within its body started to boil-up. It swung its huge stone club at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen shot his long blade again, and it maliciously slashed

towards that huge stone club. That stone club in Mountain Giant King's hand was basically a stone club; however, it smashed down like a mountain in Ye Xiwen's eyes.

“Bang!” the two completely unequally-sized weapons collided, and a terrifying power swept across. The strength of this Mountain Giant King was ridiculous. It had always used the toughness of its body to compete against multiple opponents. Unfortunately, today he had come across Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen's body was even more powerful.

The practitioner could tear gods and devils with bare hands if the ‘gilded tyrant form’ were practiced to the pinnacle level. Ye Xiwen hadn't practiced it to the pinnacle level yet, and legendary experts could use their skills and higher cultivation levels to suppress him. However, it was impossible to suppress him by using just one's physical strength and bodily toughness.

Perhaps that person with the special physique of a ‘titan’ could pose a challenge to Ye Xiwen's ‘tyrant’ form. But, how could Ye Xiwen believe it unless they would have a showdown? Ye Xiwen was quite confident about his ‘gilded tyrant form’. He wouldn't spare the person who dared to provoke him... whether one had a titan body or anything else.

That person with the titan body could take a hike. Ye Xiwen believed that his ‘gilded tyrant form’ was the strongest. This was the reason he had stuck to it.

“Go to hell human!” that Mountain Giant King shouted loudly. The intense rumbling sound burst-out like the sound of mighty



bell. It couldn't believe that a human was challenging it on equal terms.

No human had been able to match its strength. However, Ye Xiwen hadn't used his full strength yet.

Ye Xiwen sneered. He avoided that stone club which had swept at him. Then, he instantly flew over the head of that Mountain Giant King.

"Clang!" The 'sword intention' soared in the sky. It formed a hundred-meter-long sword, and swept down at the Mountain Giant King.

The so-called gigantic body of Mountain Giant King collapsed and broke-down to pieces. Only an immense 'inner stone' was left behind, and Ye Xiwen hastily collected it.

The remaining task was a piece of cake for Ye Xiwen once he had slaughtered this Mountain Giant King. The other Mountain Giants were no match for him. He killed them all — just the way clouds are swept away by the strong winds.

Ye Xiwen suddenly felt that his 'small complete realm' had reached perfection after he had absorbed the great amounts of star power. But, one luminous spot inside his universe frantically began to emit rays of light. It attracted massive amounts of star power towards itself.

Dark clouds began to gather in Ye Xiwen's direction.

Ye Xiwen looked-up towards the black clouds in the sky. He understood that it was natural for the heavenly tribulation to arrive following the completion of his realm.

Ye Xiwen clenched his fists tightly and shouted, "Come On!"

(To be continued).

Notes:

Zhen Wu Jie = True Martial World

Hanshan Seal = Shaking Mountain Seal

# Chapter 349: Bitter struggle With Heavenly Tribulation

---

Clouds in the sky turned more and more dense. The layer of clouds rapidly blackened as if black ink had spilled over it. It appeared as if a thunder dragon was rolling and flickering in the clouds.

A strong suppressive force swept down. This mighty force could easily make one feel exceptionally insignificant.

“Crash-Bang!” The lightning fell from the clouds and severely crashed down. The lightning didn’t appear like a thunder dragon this time. Rather, it appeared like a group of thunder dragons that had rushed down one after another. They crazily fell upon Ye Xiwen; as if to bite him to death.

Those thunder dragons could not bite Ye Xiwen’s body owing to his ‘gilded tyrant form’. However, they were able to grab him with their claws. This left his body stained with blood in several places. Berserk lightning and thunder wreaked havoc on his body. His body was roasted, and turned black.

Ye Xiwen frowned. These attacks were far more tyrannical than before.

Ye Xiwen’s golden divinities transformed into a small statue of his figure, and bombarded those thunder dragons. This small statue butchered them with its bare hands, and then absorbed them in their entirety.

One could say that it was just a minor tribulation for Ye Xiwen; nothing more.

It was hard to tell how long the lightning and thunder had been ravaging Ye Xiwen's body. He was unceasingly operating his 'Observing Person Scripture' in order to guide the 'star power' and lightning energy inside him.

The luminous spots within Ye Xiwen's body had begun to tremble crazily. Though, these spots hadn't formed the stars yet.

Then, the thunder tribulation slowly spread in the sky. A tall figure appeared in the clouds. It was staring at Ye Xiwen with its ice-cold eyes.

Ye Xiwen could feel an ice-cold killing intention coming from that figure. Then, it blew his hair backward. This killing intention was different from any he had felt before. He felt a deathly chill getting directed towards him from that ice-cold look.

Ye Xiwen looked up, and realized that it was a lightning ape. It was quite tall; almost 3 meters in height. Its ice-cold aura could easily scare-off most people.

Ye Xiwen felt that this lightning ape looked very similar a human beings; to living creatures in general. It seemed as if this lightning ape had its own power of thought.

It was clearly visible how terrifying this lightning ape really was.

Ye Xiwen's expression was solemn. He realized that this must be the trump card of this heavenly tribulation. Perhaps his cultivation would immediately rise to an unconceivable degree in case he successfully made it through it. However, it would be a dead end for him if he wasn't able to pass through.

This was the reason why most people were afraid of crossing the heavenly tribulations; it involved too great a risk. One could possibly die if they didn't pass through it. If not that — they would at least risk serious injuries.

However, Ye Xiwen's case was different. He would definitely die in case he couldn't get through this battle formation of thunder tribulations. It was impossible to escape from such a heavenly tribulation with just injuries.

Ye Xiwen didn't feel lucky since he knew he had no other option but to move forward. He must take large strides forward, and overcome all the obstacles that stood in his path.

He could sense that this lightning ape wasn't a living creature. Rather, it had been condensed from the heavenly tribulation's consciousness in its entirety.

That lightning ape's expression was ice-cold and its aura was very terrifying; precisely — it was a killing machine. However, its strength was very tyrannical; perhaps even more than Ye Xiwen's. Its strength wasn't at the level of half-step legendary ninth stage.

However, it still seemed even more terrifying than the experts of ninth stage.

Ye Xiwen had fought with lightning beasts earlier. However, those beasts didn't have enough wisdom. They just used their instincts to fight. There had been no reason for Ye Xiwen to worry as he had dealt with them. Hence, he had easily slaughtered many such beasts.

However, this lightning ape was different. Ye Xiwen unexpectedly saw a trace of wisdom in its eyes. Moreover, one couldn't guess the exact of its strength's tyranny. Perhaps, its strength wasn't inferior to Ye Xiwen's.

Ye Xiwen was fully concentrated on crazily operating the 'Observing Person Scripture'. The lightning and thunder were still striking everywhere from the sky. However, he was focused on his crazy pursuit to condense the Earth.

Ye Xiwen's cultivation would advance by leaps and bounds once he succeeded in doing this.

"Roar!" that lightning ape roared loudly and rushed towards Ye Xiwen. It hopped and arrived in front of him just like a real ape would. Its speed was very fast. It drew a long wave of lighting in the sky as it effortlessly approached him.

The lightning ape shot 'monkey fist' (1). Moreover, it was an extremely profound 'monkey fist', and appeared quite horrifying. It seemed as if this fist attack had been launched by an extremely

profound expert who had practiced for countless years. The suppressive force in this terrifying martial art went towards Ye Xiwen.

The lightning fist attack rushed towards Ye Xiwen. It was an overwhelming attack since it brought along the very principles of Dao. ‘Monkey Fist’ wasn’t an extremely profound fist technique. However, this particular attack of the lightning ape had enormous might.

There is no such thing as ‘weak technique’. The crucial point is to see who is using it.

Ye Xiwen didn’t retreat; nor did he hold back. A ‘Hanshan Seal’ (2) smashed down. It swept down from above; like a huge mountain.

“Bang!” a huge explosion occurred. The lightning ape smashed the ‘Hanshan Seal’ with its fists. Then, it immediately arrived in front of Ye Xiwen and continued to attack with its fists. This was the most terrifying attack so far.

Ye Xiwen had no choice but to face the enemy with his ‘coiling dragon palm’. He used the move ‘Hidden Dragon Rises from the Abyss’. His hands immediately turned into dragon claws in order to counter the incoming fist attack.

“Bang!”

The fist attack and the palm attack collided into each other. The two strong forces began to boil-up and instantly swept across the surroundings. The space itself was shattered in the process.

Ye Xiwen felt a terrifying electric current leaping along his arm within a split second of the collision, and it directly spread over his entire body. Suddenly, his entire body had been paralyzed. He was taken aback. It was almost impossible for an ordinary lightning to actually injure him owing to the strength of his ‘gilded tyrant form’; let alone paralyze his body. The lightning should’ve been destroyed as soon as it had come in contact with his ‘real elemental energy’ (3).

However, this lightning ape had unexpectedly succeeded in paralyzing him.

The lightning ape saw through this chink in Ye Xiwen’s armor. One could say that it was a killing machine. It immediately rushed in front of Ye Xiwen. Its fist contained the might of countless lightning and thunder as it pounded on Ye Xiwen’s chest.

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen was instantaneously sent flying upside down. His ribs had been broken. Even his internal organs were near-ruptured. Blood gushed out from the corner of his mouth. Suddenly, his entire body was paralyzed.

Ye Xiwen almost fainted. Such a bitter battle had only taken place when he had confronted enemies with far superior strength.



However, Ye Xiwen had never been beaten-up so miserably by an expert of the same realm as his. An ordinary fist attack from this opponent of the same realm had left him in such a miserable state. It was an extremely rare occurrence — even impossible.

However, Ye Xiwen had been able to sustain this lightning ape's 'monkey fist' because of his 'gilded tyrant form'. Perhaps an ordinary expert would've lost their life to this attack. In fact, they wouldn't have been able to block this fist attack.

Ye Xiwen sighed with sorrow. This terrifying heavenly tribulation had become more and more terrible. However, he didn't have time to think about all this. He opened his devil wings, and quickly left his position. A terrifying electric light ferociously smashed the place where he had standing almost simultaneously.

"Bang!" The electric light dispersed. However, that lightning ape's fist attack had smashed the ground's surface into pieces. This lightning ape's fighting style was quite average, and not that wonderful either. However, it was living up to the reputation of 'lightning speed' since it was made up of lightning. It would've been impossible for Ye Xiwen to avoid this attack if he hadn't opened his devil wings. In fact, he might've succumbed to this attack.

Ye Xiwen quickly took the advantage of this gap between the two attacks of the ape. His 'phoenix regeneration technique' hastily began to repair his wounds.

“What kind of a Heavenly tribulation is this? How can it be so terrifying?” Ye Xiwen gasped as he said. The ‘phoenix regeneration technique’ unceasingly repaired his ruptured and shriveled chest. Soon, it had been restored to its normal condition. The blood wasn’t gushing out from the corner of his mouth anymore. However, he hadn’t been able to restore to his peak condition yet — that would take time.

That lightning ape looked upward when it saw that the opposite party couldn’t attack. It then roared loudly and rushed towards Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if each of its steps would break the heavens. Its terrifying suppressive force was firmly locked on Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen didn’t get any time to relax.

The ‘Monkey Fist’ shook the heaven and earth. It seemed as if it would squash the entire universe as it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

The power contained in this fist attack was fairly average. However, it was incomparably quick and was about to hit Ye Xiwen. In fact, it seemed as if he would get crushed into fine powder.

Ye Xiwen had no time to think. He immediately shot his ‘coiling dragon palm’. It transformed into a golden dragon in the sky. It instantly went towards that lightning ape, and used its claws to tear it into two halves. Meanwhile, the lightning ape’s power also surged-up instead of decreasing. It struck Ye Xiwen’s chest with its fist, and opened a big hole.

“Puff!” Ye Xiwen spat out a mouthful of blood. His chest was nearly broken, and this left him nearly breathless.

He was panting and gasping for breath. The phoenix regeneration technique began to operate crazily within his body. The speed at which that big hole in his chest was being repaired could be seen with naked eyes.

The lightning ape ignored Ye Xiwen, and seemed to be recovering quickly as well. Its body which had been split into two parts had already rejoined within a few moments. In fact, it had fully recovered. Its healing speed was superior to Ye Xiwen's phoenix generation technique since it in-itself was nothing but a bundle of energy. Therefore, its speed of restoration was bound to be faster. It could effortlessly heal itself. Even the healing speed of Ye Xiwen's phoenix regeneration technique didn't stand a chance in comparison.

(To be continued).

Notes:

Monkey Fist – It's a popular boxing type martial art.

Hanshan Seal = Shaking Mountain Seal

Zhen Yuan = Real Elemental Energy (Just in case the readers have forgotten. Making a switch from Pinyin may confuse some readers who are used to previously used terms.)

# Chapter 350: Enters Half-Step Legendary Sixth Stage

---

This was a terrifying battle. Ye Xiwen had fallen into a comprehensive disadvantageous position. The lightning ape was like a killing machine that had no flaws. The 'Monkey fist' it demonstrated seemed simple, but it had far more power than it should have. It was extremely frightening.

Ye Xiwen needed to be quicker than this lightning ape; this was the most crucial point. However, Ye Xiwen's body had turned numb. The injuries sustained during the battle weren't a major concern for him. However, the electric attack had made his body numb; this had turned into a major problem. He was lagging behind, and needed to catch up with that lightning ape. Otherwise, it would become very difficult for him to continue with the fight.

That lightning ape rushed over in a flash. It swept its slender yet powerful tail, and instantly swept Ye Xiwen away.

Ye Xiwen was sent flying. He came to a halt after he crashed into a mountain.

Blood unceasingly flowed out from the corners of his mouth. He had suffered serious injuries one after another. So much so, that the phoenix regeneration technique couldn't repair his injuries at this pace. That lightning ape didn't give him any opportunity to take rest.

Ye Xiwen unceasingly operated the phoenix regeneration

technique to repair his wounds.

“Ye Xiwen, you can’t go on like this. You’ll certainly die if you continue to fight like this!” Ye Mo said.

“I know. But there is no other way!” Ye Xiwen roared. He brandished the long blade he held in his hand towards that lightning ape; he put everything into the attack.

Ye Xiwen’s movement had slowed down, but that lightning ape’s movement had come nowhere near-close to being slow. It rushed towards Ye Xiwen like a golden god of lightning, and attacked mercilessly.

“Puchi!” That lightning ape was cleaved into two halves by Ye Xiwen. However, its attacks also arrived in a flash. Ye Xiwen was already prepared for it and escaped quickly.

“Panting, Panting, Panting!”

Ye Xiwen was panting unceasingly. However, most injuries on his body had been restored. Yet, the numbness hadn’t reduced much; on the contrary, it had intensified.

“Ye Xiwen, you must resolve this situation. Otherwise, you won’t be able to fight; you may collapse first!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Mo didn’t need to state this fact. Perhaps, the strength of that lightning ape was the same as Ye Xiwen, but it was still extremely

tyrannical. However, this wasn't the biggest problem. The biggest problem was that electric energy which kept paralyzing his body. It was making his movements slower and slower. He didn't wish to see himself getting thrashed like this — slowly and steadily.

“Use your divinities to counter its electric energy!” Ye Mo reminded.

However, Ye Mo didn't need to remind him since he had already started doing the same. The divinities were boiling on his body. They began to circulate all over his body, and thus formed a giant golden armor.

That lightning ape recovered effortlessly; that too in the blink of an eye. Its cold eyes flashed like the lightning as it looked towards Ye Xiwen. It immediately released an electric light, and it flickered in front of Ye Xiwen.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen's palm attack and the ‘Monkey Fist’ ferociously collided into each other. The electric light pierced through the air and almost broke through Ye Xiwen's thick divine armor. However, the power of this electric light got exhausted and it couldn't penetrate his armor.

This boosted Ye Xiwen's confidence. He continued to beat-up that lightning ape with a barrage of palm attacks, and opened a big hole in its chest.

However, the lightning ape didn't bother about the palm attack, and instantaneously shot its fist on Ye Xiwen's body.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen was sent flying. However, there was a trace of smile on his face.

He took the advantage of this situation and repaired many of his wounds. The electric attack of that lightning ape was the most troublesome thing for Ye Xiwen. He wasn't afraid of other things. After all, that lightning ape wasn't a human being. It wasn't as cunning as human beings.

Most other things would be simple to deal with once he could restrain this numbness.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen and the lightning ape struggled hard. No one could tell how many rounds they had fought by now. Even that lightning ape felt powerless in this kind of battle despite being entirely made up of lightning. Its stature had decreased from 3 meters to only 2.

Ye Xiwen had been in a disadvantageous position initially, but he was slowly suppressing that lightning ape now. However, he was still unceasingly absorbing its lightning, and was then transforming it into energy; he was gradually condensing the Earth within his body. It had slowly started to look very similar to the Earth from his previous life.

Suddenly, several unexpected visitors appeared outside the layer of tribulation clouds.

“Ye Xiwen, it’s not good. Some people have arrived outside the heavenly tribulation,” Ye Mo promptly alerted him.

Ye Xiwen swept-out his soul search. He found out that they were the same disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace hall whom he had seen earlier.

They were headed by that man of half-step legendary ninth stage; the one who had been talking to Brother Fan earlier. Over a hundred disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had gathered up. Four of them were at half-step legendary ninth stage, and six were at legendary ninth stage. In total, there were ten people of this level including the lead-man.

The leader was clad in a brilliant military dress. His countenance showed indifference. He was watching the fight between the lightning ape and Ye Xiwen.

Four disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall stood behind him. They were at seventh or eighth stage of either half-step legendary realm or legendary realm.

“He he, Brother Fang Chen, I didn’t expect that we would see a disciple of True Martial University passing through the Heavenly Tribulation here. He is extremely reckless. He dares to cross this tribulation in this kind of environment!” an expert of legendary



eight stage sneered and said. He had been forced to jump straight from half-step legendary seventh stage to legendary eighth stage since he had no way to continue to cultivate within half-step legendary realm. However, he was still regarded as an outstanding expert amongst his peers. It was natural for him to be arrogant.

Ye Xiwen would be screaming ‘injustice’ if would come to know of his man’s words. However, there was no place which was 100% safe for him in a territory like this. He had no option but to cross the Heavenly Tribulation here. He had anticipated that the Heavenly Tribulation would scare away those star beasts. However, he didn’t expect that it would attract the disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

“This tribulation is quite scary. To take on such a strange and terrifying Heavenly Tribulation... it seems that this person is one of the top geniuses of True Martial University!” Another expert of half-step legendary seventh stage said.

Even Fang Chen was shaken after watching the fight between Ye Xiwen and the lightning ape. His countenance changed as he witnessed such a terrifying battle — particularly after watching that awful fighting method in which both the parties were blasting the other to open severe wounds on their enemy’s body.

“However, we must kill him. He will become a peerless genius of True Martial University in future if we leave him alive. It will be best if we can strangle him in the cradle!” a disciple of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall suggested. The other disciples nodded in unison. The relationship between True Martial University and Xuan Yuan palace Hall couldn’t be dubbed as ‘very unfriendly’ since the latter

was the subordinate force of True Martial University at some point in the past. In fact, they maintained a fairly decent relation in public eye. However, there was no one here, and they could easily kill Ye Xiwen. No one would ever come to know about this.

They didn't know what kind of Heavenly Tribulation Ye Xiwen was crossing. However, they knew that it was an extremely strange and terrifying one. He was certain to become an extremely tyrannical person in the future if he could cross it.

Those four disciples came out from behind Fang Chen, and surrounded Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen hadn't crossed the Heavenly Tribulation yet. They didn't dare to enter the domain of tribulation because they would suffer huge losses if the Heavenly Tribulation were to mistakenly identify them as his helpers.

“Ye Xiwen, perhaps these disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall are planning to kill you!” Ye Mo said.

“Humph! I know. But let them be pleased with themselves for a while. Perhaps they'll have the chance to kill me if they rush inside now. But, they will die once I finish crossing this tribulation!” Ye Xiwen hadn't heard their conversation. However, he knew what they were thinking. They had planned to kill him just when he would complete the tribulation since he'd be exhausted. However, they didn't know that he had a wonderful healing technique — the ‘phoenix regeneration technique’. Their idea could only be deemed as futile.

“Will they rush inside? He he, perhaps a group of apes will appear in the sky if they will rush inside. It will be like a nest of

apes here when that time comes!” Ye Mo chuckled and said.

Ye Xiwen pushed-back that lightning ape and nodded. It wouldn't cause great changes in an ordinary heavenly tribulation if they were to intervene. However, Ye Xiwen was crossing an extremely terrifying Heavenly Tribulation. A group of lightning apes might actually appear if they were to intervene. That would be devastating for everyone.

Hence, Ye Xiwen didn't dare to lure them inside.

“Ye Mo, begin!” Ye Xiwen shouted loudly. The Heavenly Source Mirror had stayed hidden for long. It suddenly flew out and emitted scarlet rays of light towards that lightning ape. That lightning ape had already been exhausted to a great extent in the battle. It was no match for the Heavenly Source Mirror, and was instantly entangled by the light.

Ye Xiwen didn't miss the opportunity. He suddenly flew up and arrived in front of that lightning ape. He shot his palms; they turned into a pair of dragon claws, and instantaneously tore apart that lightning ape.

The lightning ape turned into purest form of lightning energy after it had been torn apart; it was then absorbed by Ye Xiwen. It entered inside his universe and the Earth instantly took shape.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen's imposing aura surged up in a flash.

He had finally arrived at half-step legendary sixth stage.

“He he, he is really an adept genius of True Martial University.  
But, unfortunately he’s going to die!”

# Chapter 351: Everyone Gets Slaughtered

---

Suddenly, a few figures swept down from the sky. These were disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. They had seen that Ye Xiwen had just crossed the Heavenly Tribulation, and his entire body was covered in wounds; such a tragic sight it was. However, they didn't hesitate. They rushed over since they knew that they would have to pay a heavy price in order to kill him if they allowed him to recover.

As for the possibility of being unable to kill Ye Xiwen...? That was a joke! How could that be possible?

Fang Chen sneered as he came down flying. He looked at Ye Xiwen. One could see a feeling of superiority in his eyes; it was as if he was looking down at Ye Xiwen.

“Who are you?” Ye Xiwen pretended that he didn't know them so that he could secretly operate the ‘phoenix generation technique’ non-stop to repair his wounds. It repaired his wounds within no time. His strength had also been restored to some extent. Soon his physical condition would see a complete recovery. He was just concerned about healing the deep injuries that had reached his bones. The superficial flesh wounds weren't a matter of concern since they couldn't do anything apart from causing some pain.

Ye Xiwen obviously wasn't in a rush to repair these superficial wounds. He allowed them to believe that he had just crossed the heavenly tribulation, and was in a weak condition. He was looking for an opportunity to catch them off-guard so he could eliminate them in one fell swoop. After all, the enemy side had a leader who

was at the half-step legendary ninth stage, and this man was watching him very attentively.

An expert of the legendary ninth stage wasn't a major concern for Ye Xiwen. The potential of a mere legendary ninth stage expert was nothing in Ye Xiwen's eyes. However, the strength and potential of an expert who had practiced to half-step legendary ninth stage could be considered top-notch. Such an expert would become a fearful existence of the Sage realm in the future. How could such a person not have their own hidden secrets? In fact, these secrets must've prevented them from giving-up practice midway...

“He he, boy, we are disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall! We're telling you this so that you don't die with any remaining grievances!” an expert of half-step legendary seventh stage sneered and said. Other people seemed to have no interest in stopping him. Ye Xiwen was already dead in their opinion. Therefore, how could he possibly disseminate this information even if he were to find out?

Ye Xiwen sneered. He just wanted to buy some time. Perhaps they didn't think that he could recover in such short time. However, their intestines would've turned green with regret if they had known it.

“It's not good. He is buying time. Everyone, attack at once!” Fang Chen's complexion changed, and he immediately yelled. He had noticed that Ye Xiwen's breathing was becoming steadier and steadier over the course of the conversation. This indicated that he had recovered a lot.

Who didn't have one or two healing techniques nowadays? But the merits of these techniques varied greatly. Ye Xiwen had sustained serious injuries. Fang Chen had initially estimated that Ye Xiwen would require more than two hours to heal; that too by using a quick and top-notch healing technique. However, he had never imagined that Ye Xiwen would have the miraculous 'phoenix generation technique'.

However, this didn't stop him from issuing the judgment. Ye Xiwen had obviously been biding time. Fang Chen thought that a few minutes of delay wouldn't save Ye Xiwen.

"You're reacting now? It's too late!" Ye Xiwen shouted. His terrifying aura swept across the surroundings in a heart-beat.

Ye Xiwen had deliberately kept some superficial wounds on his body to fool others. But they had suddenly been repaired within a few breaths.

"You Xuan Yuan Palace Hall disciples consider yourself 'big-shots', don't you? You wanted to eliminate the True Martial University's disciples. So you sealed this underground place to block any contact from outside world. That's indeed ambitious!" Ye Xiwen sneered.

"How do you know that?" Fang Chen looked at Ye Xiwen in astonishment. He could clearly remember that no one was spying-around when he had spoken about this matter. And it was impossible for him to speak about this matter in front of an

outsider.

It would be better if this matter was wrapped-up as secretly as possible. The consequences would be inconceivable if the True Martial University were to find out.

Fang Chen looked at Ye Xiwen. The 'Killing intention' had started to flourish in his eyes. He couldn't let Ye Xiwen escape; he needed to kill Ye Xiwen here.

"How do I know... well, even the walls have ears. You guys shouldn't dream about leaving this place alive. You're more than hundred in number. Four of you are at half-step legendary ninth stage, and one is at half-step legendry's great complete realm. Your Palace Hall's Lord will get a solid heartache if you guys die at once!" Ye Xiwen said coldly.

Practicing to legendary ninth stage was simple. However, practicing to half-step legendary ninth stage was very difficult. True Martial University had welcomed over a million people this term. One must consider that they all must've had numerous fortuitous encounters before their enrollment. However, barely fifty people had practiced to half-step legendary ninth stage. And around ten people reached the half-step legendary great complete realm. They were considered as geniuses among geniuses. These people were like the treasure of their respective forces. These people had their own archive; they were treated as key targets, and were given proper protection.

The death of any such expert might even shake the corresponding backing force.



“You know so much! Now you’re doomed for certain. We won’t allow you to escape!” Fang Chen said coldly. He was in no hurry since he was certain that Ye Xiwen would die.

“People like you think that they can kill me?” Ye Xiwen sneered, and then moved. He left a trail of golden afterimages as he arrived in front of an expert of half-step legendary seventh stage.

“You are courting death!” That expert of half-step legendary seventh stage was somewhat amazed by Ye Xiwen’s speed. However, he was in no hurry either. He suddenly spat lightning from his mouth. It was an extremely high-level and mysterious skill.

That lightning struck like the ‘rain of lightning’ during Heavenly Tribulation. However, it was very unfortunate that they hadn’t arrived here earlier. Otherwise, they would’ve seen how Ye Xiwen had faced that shower of thunder weapons. In fact, they would’ve seen that he hadn’t budged one bit.

Ye Xiwen sneered and stretched out his big hand. His golden divinities started to boil. He grabbed the lightning, and crushed it. It exploded, but couldn’t injure him.

His big golden hand immediately transformed into a dragon claw, and slapped that expert.

“Bang!” That expert of half-step legendary seventh stage had no time to dodge. He was turned into blood fog by Ye Xiwen.

“How can it happen?”

“It is impossible!”

The disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall couldn't believe their eyes. Ye Xiwen's palm attack had slapped an expert of half-step legendary seventh stage to death. In fact, the man hadn't even been able to fight back. This was entirely different from what they had thought. They thought that they could suppress Ye Xiwen with a slight effort; exterminating him should've been nothing for them. However, they didn't expect that this would happen. Fang Chen suddenly turned furious. Ye Xiwen had killed his man in the blink of an eye; that too, right before his eyes. He was embarrassed by this. His face looked like a red fruit.

Fang Chen moved into action, and launched an attack. A startling divine beam swept out towards Ye Xiwen. It shattered the space and took along everything that came in its path.

Ye Xiwen sneered as saw the incoming attack. He then brandished his long blade. His 'Real Elemental energy' frantically rushed to its tip. The long blade surprisingly began to radiate brilliant starlight.

It seemed as if hundreds-of-thousands of stars had exploded in front of Fang Chen. He simply didn't get any time to react, and his divine beam was torn to bits by Ye Xiwen's blade light. The blade light then swept forward. It appeared as if it would sweep away everything in its path.

“Bang!” Fang Chen’s ‘real elemental energy’ protective layer had been torn apart by Ye Xiwen.

“Puff!” Fang Chen spat-out a mouthful of blood. The divine armor on his body had been cracked-open by Ye Xiwen. Blood gushed out from the wound on his chest. It was extremely terrifying.

Fang Chen looked towards Ye Xiwen in amazement. He hadn’t anticipated that Ye Xiwen could have such formidable strength. Ye Xiwen’s aura was clearly at half-step legendary sixth stage. Therefore, they were so confident that they’d be able to kill him. In fact, anyone in their team should’ve been able to kill him one-on-one.

However, they hadn’t expected that this matter wouldn’t turn out to be as they had predicted. Ye Xiwen’s tyranny was far beyond their imagination.

Fortunately, he had used all his strength in that hasty retreat. This had allowed him to avoid Ye Xiwen’s attack. Else, he would’ve died.

“You guys will die today!” Ye Xiwen coldly looked towards Fang Chen and those other three disciples. He then said, “Not just you. All the disciples of your sect must die!”

“Go kill him. I want to see him dead!” Fang Chen quickly shouted.

The remaining three disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall rushed towards Ye Xiwen without any trace of hesitation. They could see that his strength was extraordinarily tyrannical; to the extent that he could be considered a humanoid monster.

They were no match for him in their individual capacity. But perhaps they stood a chance if they formed a team.

However, how could Ye Xiwen allow them to succeed? He paid no heed to their attacks and continued to pursue Fang Chen. He sneered and his long blade swept out a horrifying light.

“Bang!” the blade light exploded into terrifying rays of light. These rays blew-off the tip of Fang Chen’s nose.

Fang Chen shouted like a demented person as he saw that long blade approach closer and closer, “I am a genius. I must prove that I can enter the great sage realm in the future. How can I die here? I don’t want to die. I am not willing to die, ah!”

His voice hadn’t faded when Ye Xiwen’s long blade struck him.

“Puchi!” Fang Chen’s protective layer was routed, and his body was cut in half. He didn’t even have the power to fight-back in his last moments.

“Let’s go; hurry up. We must report to Brother Fan — there’s a guy who is going to ruin our plan!” The remaining three disciples

of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had realized that they had run into a peerless 'killer star'. Ye Xiwen was like the living reincarnation of the 'god of death'. They immediately dispersed, and tried their best to avoid getting caught in Ye Xiwen's dragnet; they knew that they'd be eliminated if they did.

However, how could Ye Xiwen let their wishes come true? He stretched out his big golden hand. It got bigger and bigger in the sky. It then fell from the sky like a huge golden cloud and crushed the three of them in one go.

# Chapter 352: Rumor Spreads Everywhere

---

Half a month passed in the blink of an eye. Ye Xiwen didn't pay much attention to other things and continued to practice without a break. This place had many star beasts and he continued to kill any that came his way. The accumulated 'star power' got more and more vigorous as a result.

Ye Xiwen still required a lot of 'star power' to form the entire solar system. His idea was to form a fully operational universe which could generate 'star power' on its own. This would rid him of the need to absorb the external star power.

Ye Xiwen was improving his universe. He wasn't in a hurry because he knew that the universe within his body was currently in its most basic state. But it would help him embark on this invincible road of martial arts if he had the most solid foundation. He wanted to build a solid foundation.

He didn't relax one bit. He clearly knew what needs to be done, and at what time.

He had also been hunting-down and killing the disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace hall in secrecy over the course of this half a month besides unceasingly slaughtering star beasts.

They had mingled among the disciples of the True Martial University, and had slyly killed many disciples of the True Martial University. However, they didn't know that someone was keeping an eye on them.

Ye Xiwen didn't hold himself back when it came to the disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. They wanted to eliminate all disciples of the True Martial University, and this meant that Ye Xiwen was also one of their targets. Therefore, Ye Xiwen would crazily chase them down whenever he'd see them. Neither party took a break.

Ye Xiwen had killed three 'legendary ninth stage' experts of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He had also killed two experts of half-step legendary ninth stage including Fang Chen who was considered a top expert among the disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

He had also killed thirty others...

In other words, Ye Xiwen had already killed more than one-third of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall disciples that had arrived here.

In addition to this, more than half of those disciples had died in the counter-attack executed by True Martial University's disciples. That Brother Fan of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall was quite furious, but he couldn't do anything about it.

The disciples of the True Martial University couldn't do anything to contact the higher authorities. Hence, they couldn't call for reinforcement. However, the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall couldn't do so either.

That was because Ye Xiwen had rushed towards their portal soon after they had spread out to slaughter the disciples of the True Martial University. He then killed the 'legendary ninth stage'

expert who was guarding the portal, and then destroyed it.

Hence, they had lost their advantage, and both parties had arrived at the same level.

However, they still had one advantage. No one apart from Ye Xiwen had noticed the involvement of these Xuan Yuan Palace Hall disciples yet.

The disciples of the True Martial University would've united and caused an instant destruction of the enemy if they had been aware of their presence. The Palace Hall had sent some good experts. However, over a thousand disciples of the True Martial University had arrived for the trials. The quantity of the True Martial University's disciples had an overwhelming advantage over the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's quality. The experts from the Palace Hall were superior in quality when compared to the experts of the True Martial University. However, they weren't enough to subdue over a thousand people.

Several rumors had started to spread since many disciples had died mysteriously. In fact, some of them hadn't been assassinated by the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. Therefore, the rumors had spread very quickly.

Most people said that someone was killing other disciples, and this rumor had proliferated very quickly. Everyone had been convinced of this rumor when a disciple of Law Enforcement Hall came under a surprise attack. He fought bravely, and forced the opposite party to retreat. However, he sustained seriously injuries.



Everyone was convinced that someone had deliberately started to kill other disciples. Suddenly, the panic began to spread, and the atmosphere became intense.

This rumor had spread like wildfire. However, not many people believed it. This was because it was impossible to have peace and harmony in such a big University. Several people had come across a number of bloody battles in the past. And many mortal enemies were present in this university. In fact, they weren't small in number. Moreover, fights erupting between the disciples were also quite normal.

Moreover, there was an abundance of star beasts present in this area. A death by the claws of these beasts wasn't strange either since several people were on the hunt for a treasure. Several of these star beasts had also been slaughtered. Moreover, these terrifying star beasts always arrived in large groups. It was impossible to tell the number of disciples that had been killed by these beasts, but there was nothing strange about it. However, the arrival of this matter left several people in panic.

Several people had initially panicked because the exit point was sealed. This had made them somewhat hysterical. However, the disciples of the two major forces of the True Martial University, namely — the Law Enforcement Hall and the Sword Tomb — weren't anxious. However, they couldn't do anything about it either. Many people tried but couldn't break the seal to open the exit point.

It seemed as if both these major forces were on a crazy treasure

hunt. This place was considered extremely dangerous. However, several people had obtained enormous profits from the treasure hunt. This had lured many people to stay for the treasure hunt.

The matter of the exit point being sealed-off and the unceasing assassination of disciples had caused people to panic. Many people were under the impression that someone, or a group of people, had been secretly assassinating the disciples of the True Martial University.

No one had thought about an 'outsider' being involved. Everyone doubted each other.

The tensed atmosphere began to fill the air. The storm clouds approached and began to spread over the disciples of the True Martial University.

The other news that had caused a sensation among the disciples of the True Martial University was the assassination of that very disciple of the Law enforcement Hall who had come across the surprise attack earlier. He had been found dead in a room inside the Earthen City.

Suddenly, everyone began to feel insecure.

The Earthen City was a foothold that the disciples of the True Martial University had built in this underground world. This place was built to support their survival here. A powerful expert with his supernatural powers had created a series of quarters made up of toughened soil, and had enclosed them within an earthen wall.

This structure could resist the attack of those star beasts.

Many courageous people had turned timid as the rumor that someone had been assassinating the disciples of True Martial University started to spread. Some of the weak disciples hid inside the Earthen City and waited for this mess to end. They felt safe inside the city. At least there was no danger there.

However, a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall had been slaughtered inside the Earthen City soon after. This made several hundred disciples of the True Martial University to panic with shock. They became afraid of coming in contact with others.

They would only remain in touch with people they knew.

The panic had started to spread inside the Earthen City. However, Ye Xiwen arrived into the city soon after. He had arrived tracking a disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

How would people not panic? That recently murdered Law Enforcement disciple was at half-step legendary eighth stage... this meant that the killer must be at legendary ninth stage. Ye Xiwen's intended target was an enemy of at least legendary ninth stage.

This was so-called 'being an oriole bird and staying behind mantis as it stalks the cicada'. Ye Xiwen didn't disclose anything to anyone and gradually slaughtered the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. However, he was unsure of fighting with that Brother Fan.

That man was at half-step legendary great complete realm, and was about to step into half-step sage realm. Ye Xiwen wasn't capable of competing such strength. Therefore, he could only stay low-key and secretly slaughter the weaker disciples.

The experts of the Law Enforcement Hall were very discontented since one of their own had been killed. Hence, several experts of Law Enforcement Hall had returned to the city to investigate.

They couldn't accept this. They were elites among elites. They weren't able to deal with Ye Xiwen. However, one had to admit that the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall were truly elites among the elites. Many of these people were among the well-known leading figures of True Martial University's disciples. How else could they've possibly managed to maintain order and quell those other rebellious elite disciples of the True Martial University?

"Even the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall can't find any clues!" Ye Xiwen was looking for a place to sit inside a recently built restaurant. Some people were discussing the assassination of the disciples of the True Martial University in a corner.

"Someone has dared to assassinate a disciple inside the Earthen City. The killer certainly isn't an ordinary person... it can even be a group... this is possible because there is news that many disciples have been killed simultaneously at different places!"

"I don't know who's doing this. No one would want to face the people's outrage, right?"

“Maybe one interest group wants to keep everything for itself in order to earn maximum profit in this underground world. That’s why it wants everyone else to die...!”

“They are insane. There are so many of us. Do they really think they can kill us all?”

“The opposite party dares to do such a thing. That means they have grasped something. Otherwise, how could they dare to do something like this?”

“Could the people of the Sword Tomb be behind this? Only two major forces are present here — the Law Enforcement Hall and the Sword Tomb. However, that disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall was found dead, and people have found clues that he had been killed by a sword expert!”

Ye Xiwen was listening secretly. The experts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had done this. It was obvious that they wanted to mislead everyone.

Many more experts of the True Martial University gathered as these people continued to discuss. They couldn’t be defeated that easily. However, the situation was only getting more chaotic. They needed to find the enemy’s identity.

However, Ye Xiwen didn’t mention the name, or expose the intentions, of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He didn’t wish to lose his secret identity as an ‘oriole’ on the hunt. The Xuan Yuan Palace

Hall's losses would be considered as the reaction of the disciples of the True Martial University if he were to launch a surprise attack on them. They wouldn't be alarmed that someone had guessed their real identity as long as he wouldn't mention their name.

Secondly, he and the Law Enforcement Hall considered each other as arch-enemies. The people of the Law Enforcement Hall wanted to kill him by all means; they wanted to kill him to reestablish their prestige. However, they had been busy with the people of the Sword Tomb because of that 'sword code' of late. Therefore, the people of Law Enforcement Hall hadn't been able launch an attack on him. A dogfight had been raging between these two major forces. He simply didn't need to intervene.

He was only concerned with Jian Wu Chen, Mu Ling, and the wolf cub since they were members of the Sword Tomb as well. He needed to look for an opportunity to warn them about the reality.

At this time — a group of people entered the restaurant.

## Chapter 353: Provocation? Conflict?

---

This group was made of 7-8 people. One could tell from their armbands that they were experts of the Law Enforcement Hall. The weakest amongst these experts was of legendary seventh stage, while the strongest was at the peak of half-step legendary eighth stage. He was just one step away from entering half-step legendary ninth stage. He would then match Luo Yi Hang's level.

Each of them appeared outstanding, and had a thriving heroic aura. They didn't seem like ordinary people. Instead, they were elites among elites.

One of them spotted Ye Xiwen. Their 'killing intention' instantaneously locked onto him. This was that same woman in red whom Ye Xiwen had once taught a lesson. Her gaze swept towards Ye Xiwen like two sword lights when she saw him.

Ye Xiwen snorted. He instantly routed both sword lights.

That woman couldn't injure Ye Xiwen. Her complexion turned extremely ugly because Ye Xiwen's gaze didn't stay on her body for long.

In other words, Ye Xiwen didn't really pay much attention to that red woman. However, he noticed a man standing behind her. That man seemed approximately 20 years of age. He was clad in a white robe. That man was smiling faintly. It seemed as if he was very carefree.

Others might not know him. However, Ye Xiwen recognized that he was a disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He had seen that man when he was inside that ‘spirit energy lake’. That man was a part of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s team of experts.

One must say that the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s team’s quality was much higher than that of the True Martial University disciples. Of course, it didn’t mean that the True Martial University was inferior to the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. This naturally wasn’t the True Martial University’s top strength. Only the Sword Sage and Luo Yi Hang could be considered as the top disciples of the True Martial University among the disciples who had arrived here. Whereas, those other experts with the titan body, phoenix body, and so on hadn’t yet shown their faces. The True Martial University’s disciples wouldn’t seem so inferior if they had.

Of course, this wasn’t the true extent of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s strength either. This encounter could ‘at best’ be described as a small-scale collision.

However, Ye Xiwen was puzzled as to how the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had mixed together with the members of the Law Enforcement hall. This was quite intriguing.

“Law Enforcement Hall’s faction has sent an expert to investigate the matter of its disciple’s assassination. That expert is Miao Yu. It is said that his cultivation is extremely high. He is only one step away from entering half-step legendary ninth stage!”

“However, one can’t be sure whether he’ll be able to have the breakthrough or not. But he’ll become very valuable for the



university if he can enter the half-step legendary ninth stage. He'll then be cultivated as one of the future pillars of the university. The experts at half-step legendary ninth stage and above are regarded as treasures by most inheritances. They are considered on an entirely different level within the scope of the university!"

He was indeed just one step away from entering the half-step legendary ninth stage. However, there was a difference of heaven and earth in the treatment. These experts at half-step legendary eighth stage were always seeking a breakthrough. However, 70 percent of the experts would give up in the end. They would then have a breakthrough to legendary realm.

"The Law Enforcement Hall has been compelled to take action this time. After all, an expert of half-step legendary eighth stage was killed. Miao Yu's arrival is more than enough even if Luo Yi Hang hasn't personally moved into action. He is considered the strongest among the experts of Law Enforcement Hall. He is second only to Luo Yi Hang. It seems like the Law Enforcement Hall is very furious!"

"So what if Miao Yu has been mobilized? The only clue they have is that the murderer is a sword expert. It is practically useless; it's not enough to investigate further!"

Ye Xiwen was wondering. He had never expected that the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall would be hidden so deep. Perhaps even he wouldn't have been able to recognize them if he hadn't seen and remembered their faces back then. There were so many inheritances in the True Martial University that it was impossible for everyone to know the people from other

inheritances. Hence, the existence of one or two unfamiliar disciples was a normal thing.

“Do not create any trouble!” Miao Yu lowered his head and shouted. He looked at Ye Xiwen with a somewhat strange look in his eyes as he said this. It seemed as if he didn’t wish to indulge in a fight with Ye Xiwen at this time.

His orders were to investigate the cause of the Law Enforcement Hall’s disciple’s death. Moreover, he had been asked to find the source of this rumor. Many innocent disciples had been killed even if the second matter didn’t involve the disciple of Law Enforcement Hall directly. Hence, it was impossible for the Law Enforcement Hall to turn a blind eye. Otherwise it would ruin the very idea on the basis of which the Law Enforcement Hall was originally established.

His main goal was to resolve these matters, and not to fight with Ye Xiwen. Everyone was aware of the fight that had taken place between Ye Xiwen and Luo Yi Hang. Miao Yu had seen that Ye Xiwen was inferior to Luo Yi Hang but had managed to hold his own for a long time. That fight had shocked countless people.

Miao Yu was very confident of his own cultivation. However, he wasn’t sure of facing an expert of Ye Xiwen’s strength. In fact, it was quite possible that Ye Xiwen would kill him and his companions if he were to create a disturbance here.

And this wasn’t without precedent. The Law Enforcement Hall was very powerful, and most people didn’t dare to provoke its disciples. However, there were many extremely powerful disciples

who simply didn't care about the Law Enforcement Hall. In fact, the tyranny of the strength of some-such people had even troubled the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall in the past.

Ye Xiwen was obviously one of them. Moreover, he never clamored about anything. Instead, he just did what he desired. The person who dared to provoke him must be ready to die in his hands. He was absolutely ruthless and fierce. He had no hesitations about anything.

Perhaps only Luo Yi Hang could kill Ye Xiwen. In fact, the Law Enforcement Hall had been continuously looking for Ye Xiwen's whereabouts. However, they hadn't found any information about him. They had come across him quite unexpectedly this time, and it was already too late to inform Luo Yi Hang.

This could only be taken up the next time.

Of course, he didn't know that Ye Xiwen was looking forward to his next meeting with Luo Yi Hang. Luo Yi Hang had suppressed Ye Xiwen to the point of suffocation the last time they had met. However, Ye Xiwen could make Luo Yi Hang suffer the same if they were to face each other again.

The disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall were so tyrannical because they had a policy — they wouldn't allow non-elites to join. This was the reason why their disciples were far stronger than the normal ones. However, their strength was nothing compared to Ye Xiwen's.

That woman was quite discontented. However, she couldn't do anything.

The Law Enforcement Hall's team sat down.

Ye Xiwen realized that they made no attempts to provoke him. And he was too lazy to care.

“Brother Miao, the result of the investigation reveals that the murderer is a sword expert, isn't it?” The red woman rolled her eyeballs. She immediately calculated in her mind and asked.

“Yes!” Miao Yu nodded. This news had already spread, and most people were aware of it.

“I know that the murderer is a sword expert!” that woman shot a glance at Ye Xiwen and said. She hadn't said it clearly... however everyone had guessed that she must be pointing towards Ye Xiwen.

Suddenly, everyone remembered the rumor that had once spread. It had said that Ye Xiwen had obtained a 'sword code'. However, a part of the suspicion on Ye Xiwen had been eliminated because of the emergence of the underground world and the God Hou; however, only a part and nothing more. Many people still doubted that the 'sword code' had fallen into Ye Xiwen's hands. But no one dared to cause trouble for him.

Ye Xiwen had been defeated in that fight with Luo Yi Hang. However, he had fought bravely for a very long period... in spite of

the fact that there was a huge difference between their levels. This was like a miraculous accomplishment for most people since it was impossible for them to achieve something similar.

Most people wouldn't wish to engage Ye Xiwen even if they were to find him since they were afraid of Ye Xiwen's crazy retaliation. But then, the emergence of the pit had diverted everyone's attention. However, the red woman's words suddenly reminded everyone of that incident.

Moreover, people had seen Ye Xiwen use 'sword intention' to kill experts. Ye Xiwen might not have practiced sword technique much. However, he was definitely a sword expert, and everyone recognized this.

Hence, everyone suddenly looked towards Ye Xiwen when that woman mentioned this. The Law Enforcement Hall's team also looked towards him. It was hard to tell when a big conflict might break-out between the two parties.

The Law Enforcement Hall's tyranny was a well-known fact. It was a very strong organization. However, Ye Xiwen didn't have an affable image either; his wrath was well-known as well. He had slaughtered the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall twice... and in front of everyone.

Basically, he was one of top experts of the younger generation, and simply couldn't tolerate the slightest of offense.

Various organizations had welcomed the new disciples to join

them. However, several disciples were convicted for being guilty for engaging in a conflict with these organizations. They were then killed by these organizations in order to successfully establish their own prestige. However, there were some exceptions who didn't give-in to these organizations. These people became well-known through the True Martial University. Such as the one with the titan body, the one with phoenix body etc. A strong conflict had broken out between them and those organizations as a result. But no one dared to cause any trouble for these 'exceptions' anymore since they had shown outstanding abilities.

However, Ye Xiwen's strength was much inferior to those 'exceptions' in the 'popular' public opinion. He was yet to establish himself and shouldn't have provoked organizations with supreme prestige.

However, he had instead killed two disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, and had then indulged in a fierce fight with Luo Yi Hang. Many people had acknowledged his strength as a result.

Those who dared to challenge these organizations didn't rise to fame; they ended-up dead.

People would get to watch a spectacle if a fierce conflict broke-out between these two parties.

"Indeed. I can faintly sense 'sword intention' looming over his body. He is clearly a sword expert. I've heard that he couldn't deal with the Law Enforcement Hall earlier, and had lost the fight. This case has a high possibility of personal revenge!" that disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall spoke indifferently. It seemed as if he had

intended to whisper. However, his voice was loud enough to reach everyone's ears.

“Come out. Have the guts to face confrontation if you have the skills. There's no bravery in attacking from behind!” That red woman continued to provoke Ye Xiwen.

She had noticed that Miao Yu wanted to maintain peace. However, she hated Ye Xiwen to her core. She was aware that was no match for Ye Xiwen. Hence, she tried to instigate both Miao Yu and Ye Xiwen since she wanted them to launch an attack on each other. She wanted to take advantage of the Law Enforcement Hall's power to obliterate Ye Xiwen. Therefore, she was trying to incite hatred inside their hearts. In fact, it couldn't be regarded as provocation since the enmity between Ye Xiwen and the Law Enforcement Hall had already been established. In fact, it was a widely known fact.

Ye Xiwen frowned. This woman was desperate to challenge him by herself. He had let her go the last time. However, he didn't know that he would come to regret it now. Suddenly, an immense 'killing intention' flourished inside his heart.

# Chapter 354: The Fifth Layer Of The ‘Tyrant Body Technique’

---

Ye Xiwen didn't know why so much hatred had evolved inside her heart. But he didn't care.

The ‘killing intention’ inside his body surged-up.

There was someone who held an inexplicable hatred against him. And that person simply couldn't restrain it.

“Are you fed-up of life?” Ye Xiwen faintly asked. His indistinct ‘killing intention’ could terrify anyone.

“You’ve done this kind of a thing, and you still don’t dare to admit it. You’re not worthy of being called a man!” that woman in red clenched her teeth and spoke in disdain.

“This kind of person is like a tumor for our True Martial University. He is an unstable disciple. He mustn’t be allowed to live!” that disciple from the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall said softly. His expression was tranquil, but a ‘killing intention’ flourished in each and every word he uttered.

“Ha ha... what a joke! You think I want to kill you all, and so you need to assassinate me? But you’re just a flock of chicken and dogs. So killing you will be like slaughtering chicken and dogs!” Ye Xiwen sneered as he replied disdainfully.



Everyone's expression suddenly turned pale. They were aware that he was capable of killing them. He had already killed several disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall before... that too in front of everyone.

How could someone not try to assassinate such a person after listening to those words? But they knew that they might get slaughtered if confronted him.

Everyone looked towards the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall and noticed that their complexions had turned ashen. They were elites among elites. An ordinary person couldn't be compared with them. However, Ye Xiwen had compared them with chicken and dogs. This was like slapping them several times on their faces. However, they must tolerate because they had no other choice at the moment.

There was only one reason behind their silence — they could not beat Ye Xiwen.

Only that Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's disciple's expression didn't change. It seemed as if he didn't care about Ye Xiwen's words.

That woman in red looked at Miao Yu. She wanted him to launch an attack on Ye Xiwen and kill him. She knew that he didn't have the strength to kill Ye Xiwen. However, she believed that the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall-combined had the strength to.

Those disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall were stubbornly

staring at Ye Xiwen with their sword-like vision. Suddenly, the atmosphere had turned very intense. They waited for Miao Yu to speak. A huge and terrifying clash would take place as soon as he would give his command.

There were only speculations that Ye Xiwen was a sword expert. However, sometimes things only require speculations. Only one reason can be enough at time... and nothing else would be required thereafter.

“He is extremely despicable. We cannot allow this continue...” That woman’s voice hadn’t yet faded when a terrifying ‘sword intention’ was sent flying. It then maliciously crashed into her body.

“Bang!” That woman in red had been killed and turned into blood fog by Ye Xiwen’s ‘sword intention’. It happened so quickly that only Miao Yu could see Ye Xiwen’s movement. However, he didn’t get any time to stop the attack.

“She acted recklessly. She went too far!” Ye Xiwen smiled coldly.

“You’re very audacious. You dare to kill a disciple of the True Martial University in front of the Law Enforcement Hall disciples? You’re insane!” Miao Yu couldn’t control his anger.

“Don’t talk like she was very innocent or something. She was provoking everyone to kill me. My heart wouldn’t be at peace if I hadn’t killed her.” Ye Xiwen indifferently said.

Everyone held their breath. Ye Xiwen wasn't an ordinary despotic and fierce expert. He had dared to kill that woman in front of the Law Enforcement Hall disciples without any hesitation. The Law Enforcement Hall and their likes were probably nothing more than nonsense in his eyes.

He had such strength and confidence. That woman may have been pernicious and hateful, but she had the strength of half-step legendary seventh stage. Not many people could match such formidable strength.

How could she have arrived here along with the arrogant disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall if she didn't have such strength?

However, such a person had been slaughtered by Ye Xiwen's 'sword intention'. In fact, she didn't have any strength to fight-back.

"You can try if you also wish to check whether I'm that murderer or not. Take a good look at how I kill you!" Ye Xiwen was blazing with anger as he looked towards Miao Yu. A majestic aura swept out and firmly pressed down upon Miao Yu. His complexion turned ugly. He felt suffocated. However, he also realized that Ye Xiwen shouldn't be that murderer.

Miao Yu realized that Ye Xiwen could've easily killed that expert of half-step legendary eighth stage. Therefore, there was no need for him to assassinate that disciple secretly. Moreover, the enmity and confrontation between Ye Xiwen and the Law Enforcement Hall was similar to 'beating around the bush' from a certain point

of view. Killing one person was considered as murder, and killing two people would also be considered as the same. What was the difference?

Moreover, the murdered wasn't a person with great power according to the findings of the investigation.

“Humph, let's go!” Miao Yu coldly snorted. He had no option but to leave. Otherwise, even he would've been murdered if Ye Xiwen's anger was to rise further. And nothing could've been done about it then. He wouldn't even have a place to go and cry... which he did as long as he remained alive.

Ye Xiwen had no interest in killing Miao Yu. He wasn't a homicidal maniac on a killing spree. Killing a person who would've killed him otherwise doesn't make him a murderer though.

Ye Xiwen didn't move. However, he attached a trace of his soul search on the body of that Palace Hall disciple. Soon, he could sense that that disciple had separated from the Law Enforcement Hall's team and had quickly flown outside the city.

Ye Xiwen started to pursue him. That disciple was flying quite fast. He must've been trying to locate the other disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. However, how could he match Ye Xiwen's devil wings?

Ye Xiwen caught up with that disciple within a short period of time.

“It’s you?” That disciple was somewhat surprised to see Ye Xiwen. But he didn’t know why Ye Xiwen had arrived here, “What do you want?”

But he was secretly vigilant.

“I’ve come to kill you!” Ye Xiwen grinned and said.

“You are killing disciples in this way. Aren’t you afraid that the higher authorities of the university will find out about this later on?” that disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall shouted.

“You don’t need to pretend in front of me. I know you are a disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall!” Ye Xiwen sneered and stated.

“You... it’s you who’s been killing our disciples these past few days!” That disciple’s complexion turned frantic since he had come to understand this very clearly.

“That’s clever of you. But, you’re going to accompany them in the after-life very soon!” Ye Xiwen smirked.

“I must take revenge for them!” That disciple suddenly became angry. He brandished his sword towards Ye Xiwen. A stream of startling sword energy swept-out and shattered the space around it. The sharp sword energy even broke down the chaos.

“It seems like you’ve killed that disciple of the Law Enforcement

Hall!” Ye Xiwen was amazed to see that disciple’s sword skill. He suddenly understood that perhaps that Law Enforcement disciple had died in the hands of this guy. And those laughable Law Enforcement disciples had been investigating for such a long time, but still hadn’t seen that the ominous beast that was right beside them.

“You have a lot of courage; you actually mixed into their group!” Ye Xiwen shouted.

“Clang!” Ye Xiwen’s startling ‘sword intention’ soared in the sky like the sound of the collision between gold and iron, and immediately rushed towards that disciple.

“Bang!”

The ‘sword energy’ and the ‘sword intention’ collided in the sky. A terrifying force set-off a series of waves.

“Bang!” The ‘sword intention’ routed that ‘sword energy’ attack.

“I’ll send you on your way to Hell today!” Ye Xiwen sneered. A terrifying and imposing aura surged-up within his body. He rushed towards that disciple like the reincarnation of the god of death.

It seemed as if the universe had been trodden to pieces. Ye Xiwen pulled-out an overwhelming ‘sword intention’ as he charged towards that disciple.

“Die!”

Ye Xiwen roared. The golden sword intention had already lased out. However, that disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall didn't admit defeat yet. He released a startling 'sword energy' to counter the incoming attack.

“Bang!” that sword energy collided with Ye Xiwen's sword intention and was routed by its irresistible force. The sword intention ferociously went rampaging all the way, and crashed into that disciple's body.

“Bang!” that disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall was cleft into two.

He had been killed in moments.

Ye Xiwen had killed this disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall without any hesitation. He turned around and flew back towards the Earthen City.

Ye Xiwen knew that this disciple was looking for other disciples of Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He might have been able to grab the big fish if he had followed him. However, he had to consider his own safety first. Otherwise, he could've lost his life since it would be too bad for him if he were to encounter that Brother Fan. He was a bit unsure of fighting with that Brother Fan at the moment.

Time flew by quickly and three days passed in the blink of an eye.

No conflict broke out between Ye Xiwen and the Law Enforcement Hall during this time. However, the Earthen City wasn't tranquil. A group of star beasts had attacked. Hundreds of people had been injured or killed. However, they had successfully pushed back those star beasts.

Ye Xiwen sat cross-legged inside his room. His mind was submerged in the Martial God Space. He was presently deducing the fifth layer of his 'gilded tyrant form'.

The 'Observing Person Scripture' was Ye Xiwen's foundation. However, the 'tyrant body technique' was the foundation for skipping challenges since his enemies didn't have a body as tough as his. They would be suppressed by him without being able to pose a challenge.

However, the 'tyrant body technique' had been stuck in the fourth layer for quite some time. The ground work had been done for deducing the fifth layer. However, it hadn't yet been deduced fully.

But, the deduction of the fifth layer of Ye Xiwen's 'tyrant body technique' had almost come to an end now. It would soon be completed.

Ye Xiwen's body kept radiating golden rays of light for a while. This had illuminated the entire room. He opened his eyes and heaved a sigh of relief. Finally, the fifth layer of 'tyrant body technique' had been deduced. He could now proceed with the



breakthrough.

“God Hou; the God Hou has appeared!”

Several screams sounded outside his room.

# Chapter 355: Fighting With The Divine Hou

---

The entire Earthen City was boiling with excitement. The Divine Hou had finally appeared. They had entered this underground world to chase. It could freely come and go out of this place. Hence, they might find a way to get out if they could grab it.

However, it was too early to get excited. Many people were thinking that they could get enormous benefits if they could grab that Divine Hou.

A terrifying force swept across the entire Earthen City. A huge figure appeared above the city wall. It was the same Divine Hou that had escaped earlier. However, it was a several times bigger in size at this time. It wasn't as big as the star beasts; they were usually the size of a hill. However, it was as big enough to be the combined size of 4-5 people.

Its strength had enhanced enormously, and it had reached at the peak of legendary ninth stage. It rushed into the crowd inside the city wall and started to slaughter them. It was impossible for an ordinary person to stop this Divine Hou.

It rampaged around; the places it visited turned into a river of blood. No expert could stop this Divine Hou.

Ye Xiwen swept-out his soul search. He was surprised to see that this Divine Hou's body resembled that of a horse. Its entire body was covered with golden scales and was surrounded by flames. It had a dog's head. It had two antlers atop its head; like that of a

deer. It had four strong limbs and its claws were like a wolf's. Its long tail was on fire, and was constantly blazing.

It would stretch out its claw and mow down a large number of experts.

“Evil creature!” a loud shout reverberated from afar. Miao Yu and two other legendary eighth stage's disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall had launched an attack on the Divine Hou.

However, their attacks didn't prove out to be effective because this Divine Hou had already reached legendary ninth stage. So how could these ordinary people be its opponent?

“Oh boy; I didn't expect to see a ‘heaven facing’ Hou here!” Ye Mo clicked his tongue as he stated in astonishment. It was evident that this ‘type’ of Hou wasn't common.

It was needless to say that a ‘heaven facing’ Hou was aggressive and took dragons as food. It was at the top of the food chain, and had always been a dragon-eating creature. It was hard to find creatures that could eat dragons.

Therefore, a living creature that could take dragons as food was considered as extremely powerful.

Ye Xiwen recalled reading some records on ‘heaven facing’ Hou. There used to be some Hou beasts found in the East Sea that ate dragon brain. They were extremely ferocious. They used to shoot

flames up to several dozen feet from their mouths when they fought with the dragons. Those dragons couldn't stand a chance in front of these beasts. A few dragons had appeared in the sky in the summer of 25th year of Kangxi Period, in Pingyang County. They had come to chase a Hou beast. People had seen a close fight between 3 flood dragons, 2 dragons and a Hou over the next three days. The Hou had managed to kill one dragon and 2 flood dragons. However, it then collapsed and fell into the valley. That Hou was 20 feet tall, and was shaped like a horse. It had scales and bristles on its body. The flames were still gushing out of its scales and bristles after its death. They covered its entire body. In fact, they reached 10 feet over it.

It was extremely terrifying.

Several experts of legendary eighth stage were attacking with all their might. However, they weren't a match of this Divine Hou. Then, it suddenly displayed a terrifying fighting strength. It spat flames from its mouth and a legendary eighth stage's disciple of the True Martial University was burnt to death. He had no chance or strength to fight back.

However, the other people still braced themselves, and somehow gathered the courage to kill this Divine Hou. Otherwise... everyone would die.

Everyone could feel that they were mistaken about something. The Divine Hou they had initially chased wasn't this terrifying. However, perhaps an expert of legendary ninth stage wasn't suited to be an opponent for this one.

This Divine Hou was a mythological animal according to the folklore. There were many rumors about its origin. However, it was a legendary creature nonetheless. These terrifying creatures used to eat dragons as food even in ancient times. These people couldn't possibly hunt down one such beast so easily.

These experts had been excited by the thought of catching this Divine Hou. However, they hadn't thought the rationality of this matter.

Everyone seemed to be frightened at first, but they eventually calmed down. They realized that this Divine Hou wasn't fighting back when they had first seen it. Instead, it was only running away blindly. However, nobody could injure it now. Whereas, it could kill or injure any expert who tried to come in its path...

Everyone had calmed down. But this composure was meaningless now. It seemed as if this Divine Hou had gone insane and had begun to slaughter people mindlessly.

Ye Xiwen realized that he must launch an attack on that Divine Hou.

"You evil creature!" Ye Xiwen shot his 'sword intention' in the sky. It swept-out from a distant place and fell towards the Divine Hou.

"Bang!" a loud explosion reverberated. The Divine Hou had avoided this attack in advance, and that 'sword intention' had cut-open a huge rift in the ground.

Miao Yu was relieved to see that Ye Xiwen was present in the city. Miao Yu felt relaxed instead of a need to keep an eye on him. He had surely wanted to see Ye Xiwen dead. However, everyone felt relaxed; Ye Xiwen's presence gave them a sense of security.

Ye Xiwen wasn't just going to spectate from the sidelines. Ye Xiwen was aware that the method to exit this underground world was likely to be hidden in this Divine Hou's body.

The other people had also thought the same. This Divine Hou could freely enter or exit this place. Perhaps they could find the secret to access this place on its body. However, it wasn't necessarily certain.

"Who wants to come out and face me?" the Divine Hou unexpectedly opened its mouth. Everyone could tell that it didn't have a low intelligence.

"Divine Hou, I am giving you an opportunity. I won't kill you if you tell me the secret to freely access this world!" Ye Xiwen's figure arrived in front of the Divine Hou atop a golden rainbow.

"Dammit! You think someone like you can kill me. A human like you isn't even close to me. I don't know how many of you humans I have killed. None of you can defeat me. Even the dragons had no choice but to become our race's food!" Divine Hou looked at Ye Xiwen. One could see a trace of cunning and cruelty inside its huge eyes.

Wisdom and beastly brutality coexisted inside it.

“You’re quite strong. Your flesh and blood are making me excited. Your human body isn’t a descendant of gods. However, it has numerous divinities. There must be a terrifying secret behind this. I will certainly reach legendary great complete realm if I will eat you!” The Divine Hou smiled cruelly and said.

“Audacious!” Ye Xiwen sneered. This ‘heaven facing’ Divine Hou was extremely powerful. Perhaps, even an expert of legendary ninth stage wasn’t suited to be its opponent; they would probably get torn into halves.

There wouldn’t be many advantages for such an expert even if they could match this Divine Hou. It was an ominous beast that belonged to a race that had dared to declare the dragon race as their food.

However, Ye Xiwen didn’t fear it... even if it was extremely powerful. He had a lot of confidence in himself.

“Clang!” Ye Xiwen shot the ‘sword intention’ in the sky. It swept down from above, and landed right above the Divine Hou’s head. This ‘sword intention’ was extremely terrifying. Even an expert of legendary ninth stage would’ve been sustained serious injuries by this attack.

“Puff!” the Divine Hou roared and spat a series of flames. They burnt the ‘sword intention’. Then, the flames rushed towards Ye Xiwen. They traversed the air at an extremely fast speed and

arrived in front of him in the blink of an eye.

Ye Xiwen felt the Divine Hou's huge claws coming towards him. Its ice-cold claws seemed like hard metals that emitted terrifying rays of light.

It was impossible for an average person to avoid this attack. They would be torn apart.

Ye Xiwen opened his devil wings and flew backwards to avoid this attack. A huge 'Hanshan Seal' fell from the sky. It flew downwards and advanced towards the Divine Hou like a giant dragon. An enormous aura of the 'Earth Principle' suppressed the Divine Hou.

The Divine Hou flew out of the way, and rushed outside the city to avoid the Hanshan Seal's attack.

How could Ye Xiwen allow it to escape? His devil wings began to flap behind his back. He chased after that Divine Hou, and arrived in front of it with the intention to launch another attack.

"You human! You dare to pursue me!" Anger flourished inside the Divine Hou. Every pore of its body seemed to be emitting flames that could make people palpitate with fear. The space itself had been burnt. It was extremely hot. It made one feel as if one was placed in the middle of a volcano crater.

A series of flames were spat out. They then condensed and swept-



out towards Ye Xiwen.

“You won’t escape this time!” Ye Xiwen ruthlessly summoned the ‘Hanshan Seal’ once again. The majestic ‘Earth Principle’ condensed above, and then swept down. It seemed as if it had shattered the sky as it ferociously collided with the flames.

“Bang!”

Fire and Earth had collided. Waves of terrifying powers surged-up and swept-out one after another. A large section of surrounding city wall suddenly collapsed. A burning smell spread in the vicinity.

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

The Divine Hou spat a series of flames. These flames were made of hundreds of fire rings that had been wrapped together.

This was an unprecedented matter. This Divine Hou was an ominous beast of an ancient descent. It was just an infant at present. However, it undoubtedly had tyrannical strength. It had fought many enemies, and had defeated all its opponents in the past. It just wouldn’t resign itself to a defeat; no matter what.

This Divine Hou was a dragon-eating creature. It was widely known that dragons had extremely strong flesh. Therefore, it was entirely conceivable that its flesh would be extremely tough as well.

It had only focused on attacking his opponents during its previous battles. It didn't need to worry about defending itself because of its powerful body. However, Ye Xiwen's attacks had forced it to defend.

Ye Xiwen's attacks were extremely horrifying. In fact, that the Divine Hou felt so threatened that it had to divert its attention towards defense.

Ye Xiwen exploded the Divine Hou's flame. Then, he suddenly arrived in front of it like a golden god.

The sound of a dragon's roar reverberated from Ye Xiwen's hand. It then turned into a golden dragon-claw. His 'Real Elemental' energy surged-up and turned into an enormous hand seal, and blasted upon that Divine Hou.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's hand seal smashed that Divine Hou's defense and struck its body.

The Divine Hou screamed. A huge bloody wound had been opened in its body.

# Chapter 356: Full-On Hand-To-Hand Combat

---

"Roar!"

The Divine Hou screamed incessantly. Its dark-red blood splashed out. It hadn't expected Ye Xiwen to be so tyrannical. Such tyranny would've been normal if Ye Xiwen were at half-step sage realm. However, he was a mere human expert and that too at a much lower realm. Yet the Divine Hou had been pushed to such an extent. It simply couldn't believe this.

The Divine Hou firmly believed that its body was extremely strong. An average person couldn't injure it. So much so that it could ignore the attacks of an ordinary 'legendary ninth stage' expert. In fact, the attacks of such a person wouldn't even break its scales. However, Ye Xiwen had done it. His one palm attack had severely injured it.

Ye Xiwen was far more tyrannical than its imagination. This reminded it of those records on the people who had inherited the bloodlines of the ancient human race.

The human ancestors used to be extremely powerful in the ancient times — same as the other races. The first generations of the ancient human race had differential abilities; or one could say that... they had great magical powers. These so-called 'people with special physique' had somehow inherited the genes of their ancestors.

Ye Xiwen's performance was extremely tyrannical; like that of the human race's ancestors.

"I'm a mythological beast. I can neither die nor be extinguished. You are a petty human. Yet you dare to contend me! Do you have a death wish?" the 'heaven facing' Hou roared. Suddenly, the flames erupted from its body frantically. They then advanced towards Ye Xiwen like a giant fireball.

These flames appeared silver-white in color. They had been produced by the burning of the blood essence within its body. This was its very-own 'spirit fire', and was extremely terrifying. Wherever they went... the space got burnt and collapsed into innumerable pieces. The silvery-white flames charged towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen shot his 'sword intention', and it collided with those flames. But the sword intention was burned as soon as it came in contact with those flames.

Ye Xiwen's complexion changed since his sword intention couldn't defeat the flames.

"What!" Ye Xiwen was completely stunned.

"Ye Xiwen, be careful. These flames were produced by the burning of the blood essence in its body. They are entirely different from ordinary flames!" Ye Mo shouted.

A chill ran through Ye Xiwen's body. Blood essence was extremely valuable for living creatures. Assuming Ye Xiwen were to sustain injuries and a lot of blood were to gush out of his body... the injuries could be repaired in time. However, the lost blood essence couldn't be restored. The blood essence was the most important part of one's body. Even the top experts didn't have much blood essence.

To burn one's blood essence was equivalent to 'going all out'. One's strength would decrease enormously once too much blood essence is lost. Therefore, this method was only used in a desperate situation.

That mass of flames rumbled in front of Ye Xiwen. It broke through his defense and approached him for the kill.

A huge beast's claw emerged from inside these flames. It ferociously shot towards Ye Xiwen at a lightning speed.

A cruel smile appeared on the Hou's face as these silver flames surged-up in the air.

Ye Xiwen was already dead in its opinion. That terrifying front claw wrapped in the silver flames blasted towards Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if it would burn him to death.

"Humph!" Ye Xiwen snorted and those flames boomed-over. Ye Xiwen's hand glittered golden, and the golden divinities covered his entire arm. It then penetrated into those flames, and those flames were unable to burn through the layer of divinities.

Ye Xiwen's palm attack and the beast's claws maliciously collided.

“Bang!”

Both sides' terrifying powers began to sweep across. The Divine Hou's flesh was extremely tyrannical. However, Ye Xiwen's tyrant body was even more so. Its front claws had been broken by that palm attack.

The Divine Hou screamed yet again. Those flames had been extinguished since it couldn't continue to burn them. The scales on its body had also lost their luster.

It realized that it wasn't fit-enough to be Ye Xiwen's opponent. Ye Xiwen was far-more powerful than it had imagined.

“How is this possible? How can you be more formidable than me?” It hadn't paid particular attention earlier. Hence, it had lost to the magical powers of the ancient human race. However, Ye Xiwen had pushed it into a very disadvantageous position by now. It became frightened as well as angry; it was in a state of shock. It wasn't born a long ago... However, it had seen many elite disciples of the True Martial University. And they had been nothing in front of it. In fact, they hadn't been able to withstand a single blow from it. This had made its pride soar even higher inside its heart.

However, Ye Xiwen had shattered its pride and confidence. Ye Xiwen's strength was too astonishing.

“Stupid!” Ye Xiwen sneered. His ‘sword intention’ condensed into a long sword. He then rushed towards that Divine Hou.

The Divine Hou had suffered heavy losses because of Ye Xiwen. It now had lesser capability to resist his attacks. A trace of fear slowly started to emerge in its eyes.

“Whoosh!” The Divine Hou suddenly turned around. It turned into a streamer of light, and flew away into the distance. But, how could Ye Xiwen allow it to succeed? He opened his devil wings and started to chase it.

However, the Divine Hou was determined to escape, and was unceasingly burning its blood essence. He didn’t care if its strength would see a substantial decrease because of this. What would be the point of so much strength if it were to get killed? How would it not understand this basic logic?

Ye Xiwen’s speed was much faster than that of Divine Hou in the beginning. However, it then started to burn its blood essence and left him far behind within a short period of time.

However, Ye Xiwen didn’t lose track and continued to chase it. He tracked unceasingly it with his eyes. He was in no hurry. His opponent had used its trump-card by burning its blood essence. This meant that it had run out of tricks. Therefore, he was content in keeping an eye on it. He knew that it would have to stop sooner or later. It was impossible for the Divine Hou to continue with running like this for long.

Ye Xiwen would wait until the Divine Hou's blood essence was completely depleted. Then, he could kill it. In fact, he wouldn't have to put any effort in killing it.

Ye Xiwen had entered an extreme desolate land while he chased the Divine Hou. Groups of star beasts could be seen everywhere as they had traversed through the region. However, they had gradually vanished as his chase had taken him deeper into this underground world. The scenery around him had turned desolate and silent. Soon, the Divine Hou's speed began to get slower and slower.

Ye Xiwen was about to kill the Divine Hou. However, he suddenly saw the figure of a person rushing over from a distant place. He looked closely and realized that it was Luo Yi Hang. He saw that Luo Yi Hang was tightly pulling a 'sword code' with his hand. This was the same 'sword code' that had appeared earlier — the "Buried Sword Secrets".

Luo Yi Hang had arrived here while chasing the 'sword code'. No wonder he didn't have the time to investigate the cause of that Law Enforcement disciple's death.

Luo Yi Hang and Ye Xiwen had discovered each other at the same time. Luo Yi Hang's 'killing intention' locked onto Ye Xiwen. This ice-cold 'killing intention' could scare anyone, and would leave them to tremble in fear.

Luo Yi Hang put away the 'Buried Sword Secrets' that he had



obtained. He coldly stared at Ye Xiwen. His imposing aura swept-out like that of an astonishing ‘blade energy’. If one would look from afar with their eyes slightly closed... perhaps they would think Luo Yi Hang to be a blade; not a person. His long blade had formidable power and could cut-off any other long blade. This was the power of a man’s unification with his blade.

“Humph! I was wondering how to find you, but you’ve found me on your own accord. Let’s continue the fight that we had left unfinished!” Luo Yi Hang challenged.

Luo Yi Hang caught a glimpse of the Divine Hou that was flying in front of Ye Xiwen. Suddenly, a trace of greed appeared in his eyes. He had arrived here for two reasons — the ‘sword code’ and the Divine Hou. The ‘sword code’ had already fallen into his hands. But, he needed to get the Divine Hou in order to exit this underground world. More importantly, he wanted to grab this Divine Hou since he wished to make it his mount.

No one knew this Divine Hou’s origin. However, it was Buddha’s mount according to folklore. Buddhism wasn’t prevalent in the True Martial World. However, that didn’t mean that nobody knew about Buddha.

Buddha possessed great magical powers according to the fables. He enjoyed the reputation of having a mysterious inheritance in all Ten Thousand Worlds. He was famous for having outstanding fighting prowess. He was considered the epitome of magical powers.

Luo Yi Hang had great ambitions in his heart. He wanted to

become like Buddha. He wanted to become a peerless powerhouse who could suppress the universe. But, the first step was to capture and subdue this Divine Hou.

“Clang!” The blade energy in Luo Yi Hang’s hand condensed into a long blade. It was then released in the sky. It turned into a blade cage and fell down with a ‘bang’. The Divine Hou tried to intercept it, but was surrounded by walls made of blades. It would’ve been difficult for it to evade this attack even in its peak condition. But it was severely injured, and not strength was left in it to save itself from this predicament.

It could only escape when Luo Yi Hang would die. Otherwise, it couldn’t.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s blood and energy surged within his body, and stirred-up to the max. The energy rushed-out of his body and went into the sky. It seemed like a pillar that was supporting the heaven. Then it burst and set-off golden waves.

Ye Xiwen got on top of the golden waves. It seemed as if he was riding them. The killing intention swept across the surroundings. Luo Yi Hang had forced Ye Xiwen into a hopeless situation the last time. This had made Ye Xiwen extremely angry. He had secretly sworn that he would severely beat-up Luo Yi Hang if he were to get an opportunity. However, he had never thought that he would get the opportunity so soon.

“Ye Xiwen, I will strangle you to death, but I’ll leave your entire corpse intact!” Luo Yi Hang said coldly. He wasn’t just overbearing. He was strong as well. But he wasn’t paying any

attention to Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen was strong, but he wasn't his opponent yet. He would've killed Ye Xiwen if hadn't been afraid of the Sword Sage gaining advantage by entering the pit first.

The 'sword code' was in his hands at present. The Divine Hou was also in his hands. And Ye Xiwen had also been brought in front of him. He felt like the heavens were on his side.

"You think you can kill me?!" Ye Xiwen sneered, "I have tolerated you for a long time now. You're nothing but a pig with a long onion root inserted in its nose who pretends to be an elephant!"

"You're courting death!" Luo Yi Hang said coldly. He released formidable blade energy, and it condensed into a massive long-blade. It rushed towards Ye Xiwen like a flash of lightning. It shattered the space along its path.

Ye Xiwen's fighting intention boiled. His 'killing intention' surged-up. He condensed a 'sword intention' in his hand, and shot it across the sky. It forged ahead to face the incoming attack.

There was huge difference between their strengths the time they met. Hence, Ye Xiwen had been forced into a disadvantageous position back then. That one was certainly a very desperate fight on Ye Xiwen's part.

However, Ye Xiwen was unbridled this time. He moved forward to face the enemy without any difficulty.

# Chapter 357: Slaughters Luo Yi Hang

---

“Bang!” the aftermath of their battle shattered the surrounding space. The pitch-black chaos was extremely frightening.

Luo Yi Hang sensed that he couldn't overpower Ye Xiwen. The situation of this battle was different from the previous one. The previous battle had been near-one-sided. Ye Xiwen had struggled to keep up in the last battle. In fact, he had been forced into a thoroughly disadvantageous position.

Perhaps Ye Xiwen would've died back then if he didn't have such a strange healing technique.

However, Ye Xiwen's strength had enhanced since then. This surprised Luo Yi Hang. But, this excited him as well. He was somewhat lonely at the top. It was difficult for him to find a worthy opponent; someone with strength such as his own. An ordinary expert of legendary ninth stage certainly wasn't fit to be his opponent.

However, he seemed to have found a powerful opponent. This caused his 'killing intention' to boil-up. His ruthless aura began to overflow in the surroundings.

He felt a sense of pleasure in torturing his opponents to death. He felt as if he was about to step on an ant prior to killing Ye Xiwen.

“Ha ha ha, I didn't expect that you would've had progressed so much since then. I like to torture geniuses to death. Just looking at

you is making me excited. I'll let you die with dignity!" Luo Yi Hang laughed out loud. A somewhat cruel expression appeared on his face.

"Enough talking; prepare yourself to be sent on your way to the otherworld!" Ye Xiwen sneered. He didn't argue with Luo Yi Hang and forged ahead step-by-step. His imposing aura exploded loudly. His 'sword intention' went across the vast sky, and a golden luster illuminated half of the vicinity.

Luo Yi Hang wasn't ordinary either. His ominous power was dreadful. His imposing aura boiled-up. It seemed as if it could sweep away the entire world as it advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

"Bang!" the Earth trembled as the blade energy and the 'sword intention' collided and scattered. The space disintegrated and a terrifying energy-storm was set-off.

This was the most terrifying battle. Both parties were extremely fast. It was beyond the extent of the capabilities of one's naked eyes. They had exchanged over a hundred, or even over a thousand, blows within a split second.

Both parties used their entire strength. They didn't give any fancy chances to the other. It resembled the collision between two 'absolute' powers. Luo Yi Hang was formidable. He was at much higher level than Ye Xiwen. However, Ye Xiwen's tyrant body was even more tyrannical. Neither man seemed willing to let go of his hold on this decisive battle.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

They had spared no effort, and had given their best in this fight. The world itself had been shattered and reconstructed. And it seemed as if a new world had taken birth. In fact, it was being shattered and reborn with every successive blow they exchanged; and again...

“Whoosh!” an extremely loud sound reverberated and blood splashed out.

Ye Xiwen’s ‘sword intention’ had opened a horrible wound in Luo Yi Hang’s body. The sight of this wound could leave people trembling in fear. Luo Yi Hang had nearly gotten killed; in fact, he could’ve been cleft into two.

Luo Yi Hang was panting heavily. He had nearly lost his life to Ye Xiwen a moment ago. He hadn’t expected this to happen. Perhaps he didn’t think that Ye Xiwen could have the strength to injure him.

He had never thought that he would be forced into such a distressful situation one day. His strength was considered relatively superior to others; even among the experts of same level. Luo Yi Hang was at the peak of half-step legendary ninth stage, and

a very few experts of the same level could stand up to him. Hence, he hadn't considered that he could lose to Ye Xiwen.

Luo Yi Hang's eyes turned even colder. He then shouted, "Die!"

Then, Luo Yi Hang raised his long blade and rushed forward. He arrived in front of Ye Xiwen in a flash. His long blade had streaked across the sky, and had shattering the space along its path into small pieces. It was an extremely terrifying scene.

Ye Xiwen had occupied the winning position. Hence, he was calm. His 'sword intention' transformed into a long sword. The 'killing intention' flickered at the tip of the sword as the 'sword light' darted outwards.

Both parties had displayed terrifying fighting strength. In fact, it had exceeded far-above their respective levels.

Luo Yi Hang's long blade had evolved into the image of a god spirit. It seemed as if it was taking a stroll on Earth. It felt as if it had then gotten angry and had cracked open the heaven upon witnessing the hardships that exist in the mortal world. It seemed aloof from worldly affairs. It didn't appear to have originated from the heavenly principle.

The powerful blade beam had suppressed the surrounding space.

Ye Xiwen's sword light darted outwards. His 'sword intention' started to produce a buzzing sound. It seemed to have been

stimulated by the sudden evolution in Luo Yi Hang's blade technique. It congealed into an illusory shadow in the sky. It was the ghostly figure of that old sword expert whom Ye Xiwen had seen some time back. (1)

An intense and imposing aura swept across. It seemed as if it could puncture the world. A pure 'sword intention' wantonly emerged out from the shadow of that old sword expert.

He was the sword; the sword was him!

The blade beam and 'sword intention' collided again. That blade god and the old sword expert maliciously collided into each other.

This wasn't a collision between two moves. It was a collision of two wills. This was a collision of two entirely different styles of comprehensions. That blade skill of that god carrying a blade in its hand was tyrannical enough to dominate the world. However, it was hard to tell what sort of hidden skills that old sword expert possessed since a single sword attack of his' was capable of breaking-out ten thousand principles.

This was a collision of two entirely different martial ways. And it was extremely terrifying. Even the chaos had started to boil. In fact, it seemed as if the entire universe was about to enter the cycle of reincarnation.

Ye Xiwen hadn't anticipated that a god spirit could be resurrected inside his 'sword intention'. However, he couldn't do much about it at this time. He didn't think too much about it, and rushed forth



to confront the enemy.

“Bang!”

Both bodies were sent flying in opposite directions post the collision. Luo Yi Hang's body had been stabbed by Ye Xiwen; a huge hole had been opened in it. However, Ye Xiwen wasn't in a good condition either. Luo Yi Hang's blade energy had cut-open a huge wound on his body, and blood had started to drip from it.

This Luo Yi Hang wasn't ordinary. A very few people could reach legendary ninth stage. Both parties were powerful enough to display the invincible strength of legendary ninth stage. Therefore, both parties had been fighting head-on, and had given a tough fight to each other.

However, Ye Xiwen was fearless, and the look in his eyes had turned even more profound. It could be seen that his wounds were getting restored very quickly. His attacks were even faster than battered Luo Yi Hang's. In fact, Luo Yi Hang had already suffered two consecutive losses. This was the advantage in Ye Xiwen's favor. It was also one of his hidden trump cards.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen's hand formed a 'Hanshan Seal'. A huge mountain seal pressed down like a gigantic dragon, and smashed on Luo Yi Hang's back. The man wasn't able to avoid the attack since his fighting strength wasn't at its peak condition after having suffered two consecutive losses at Ye Xiwen hands. And now that Hanshan seal had suddenly dropped from above... he couldn't respond quickly-enough, and got hit.

“Bang!” he was smashed to the ground by the ‘Hanshan Seal’. A large crater was made in the ground.

“Aaah!” Luo Yi Hang roared loudly. He struggled to break free from Ye Xiwen’s ‘Hanshan Seal’. His terrifying power slashed the nearby land. He was in a difficult situation. His hair was disheveled, and his eyes were red. He was stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen. His terrifying ‘killing intention’ was locked on Ye Xiwen. He was young, and was proud of himself. He had been treated as a top-notch cultivation genius his entire life. He had never suffered such a loss.

He had considered Ye Xiwen a merely an ant the previous time they had fought. However, he had regarded Ye Xiwen as a worthy opponent this time.

But he hated Ye Xiwen to the extreme now. His expression turned violent since he had suffered this kind of loss. Most people wouldn’t be able to look straight at his hideous face.

His long blade set-off a burst of blade shadows in the entire sky. Each of these blade shadows could cut through the mountains and rivers. They flew right across the sky and rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

It seemed that ten million blade shadows had condensed in the sky. And they then arrived in front of Ye Xiwen like poisonous snakes. The entire sky had been torn into a hundred-thousand rifts.

And each rift extended up to several hundred meters. It was an extremely terrifying scene.

Ye Xiwen sneered. Another ‘Hanshan Seal’ descended. It rushed toward the incoming blade shadows and destroyed them.

However, Ye Xiwen wasn’t done yet. He brandished his sword and the ‘sword intention’ shattered the space into countless pieces as it rushed forward to face those incoming blade beams.

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen’s ‘sword intention’ destroyed those blade beams. Then, he rushed over and stretched-out his hands. He then displayed the ‘Hidden Dragon rising from the Abyss’ move. His hands turned into a pair of dragon’s claws. They brimmed with golden light as they tore the space.

“Bang!”

The astonishing crack opened the entire space. It extended up to far distances, and seemed to have destroyed all obstacles in its path. Nothing could withstand this attack. But this attack hadn’t been directed at the enemy’s main body. Rather, it had torn the space open and broken it into small pieces. This had made it impossible for the enemy to stand.

This attack soon arrived in front of Luo Yi Hang, but he wasn’t

able to evade the attack. He stretched out his hands to block it. However, he was unable to resist the terrifying energy of the attack. His hands started to get boiled-up.

Luo Yi Hang retreated promptly. However, he couldn't do it quickly-enough since he was wounded. His right arm was struck by the attack, and was ripped apart.

Blood started to gush-out from the wound. His face was covered in fine beads of sweat. He was feeling severe pain and had been left to pant.

However, he secretly felt glad in his heart. That attack was extremely terrifying. Perhaps it could've torn him into two halves if he hadn't avoided it in time – just like it had torn the space.

Ye Xiwen looked coldly towards Luo Yi Hang and said, "Today is your last day!"

Ye Xiwen admitted that Luo Yi Hang was very strong. However, it was pointless since he was about to die. The more formidable an enemy is — the lesser chance one should give them to make an escape. Otherwise, the enemy would surely cause a big trouble in the future since they were allowed to grow-up.

"Don't even think about it!" Luo Yi Hang's body released a burst of unimaginable blade energy. It was accompanied by a broken fragment of his blade, and it rushed towards Ye Xiwen. It was an extremely horrifying attack, and was beyond one's imagination.

The blade fragment contained the power to destroy heaven and earth. There was a possibility that Ye Xiwen could've been caught off-guard if he had used this attack in the beginning. In fact, he could've gotten injured very severely. However, Luo Yi Hang's body had sustained very serious injuries by now. His strength had declined frantically. His attacks didn't pose a big threat to Ye Xiwen any longer.

Ye Xiwen effortlessly avoided the attack.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen snorted and struck Luo Yi Hang's body with his palm. The palm attack killed Luo Yi Hang.

Ye Xiwen had learned the sword intention attack by mimicking the original sword intention attack displayed by this old sword expert.

## Chapter 358: Star Colossus Appears

---

Ye Xiwen found large quantities of ‘Spirit Dans’ and ‘Spirit Stones’ on Luo Yi Hang’s corpse. He also found various kinds of treasures. Luo Yi Hang had risen to fame abruptly in these recent two years, and Ye Xiwen could tell that he must’ve had an excellent family background. There were various kinds of medicinal herbs. Some were even over thousand years old. In fact, many of them were over five thousand years. They also contained a premium herb that was over ten thousand years old. These herbs were planted in a portable farm inside his storage space. These herbs obviously belonged to Ye Xiwen now. These treasures weren’t worth less than 30 million ‘Spirit Dans’. Ye Xiwen once had far more ‘Spirit Dans’ than this. However, that was in the past. The mysterious space in his mind had consumed large amounts of these Spirit Dans to produce spirit energy. However, there rarely came a time when he wasn’t running low on spirit energy nowadays.

He had basically been running low on spirit energy all year round. However, the ‘Spirit stones’ and ‘Spirit Dans’ found on Luo Yi Hang’s body added up to millions. It was the same as obtaining an extreme wealth. Moreover, Ye Xiwen had less than a million ‘Spirit Dans’ left. This was like a timely rain for him.

However, the biggest gain was that ‘Sword Code’. It was called the ‘Buried Sword Secrets’. The origin of ‘Buried Sword Secrets’ was quite profound. However, the entire swordplay only had four tricks in reality; ‘Buried Person Sword’, ‘Buried Earth Sword’, ‘Buried Heaven Sword’, and ‘Great Nirvana Sword’. Ye Xiwen observed it carefully. But he couldn’t tell which expert had left it behind. One could discern that it was an extremely terrifying technique from the names itself. Especially, the last move named

‘Great Nirvana Sword’... According to the description on it — there universal chaos would take birth within the range of area enshrouded by ‘Great Nirvana Sword’. This would restart the cycle of reincarnation. Everything that would then enter the reincarnation cycle would fade away and cease to exist — including the user of this technique.

This move belonged to the category of ‘suicide attacks’. However, Ye Xiwen didn’t dare to look down on this ‘Buried Sword Secrets’.

Ye Xiwen had majored in blade technique cultivation. However, he possessed the mysterious space. Therefore, cultivating this sword technique wasn’t a problem for him. Anything could be solved as long as he had sufficient spirit energy. But, the biggest profit was that ‘half blade point’. It was uncertain where Luo Yi Hang had obtained it from. It was merely a small fragment of a blade, but it could emit chilling rays of light. According to Ye Mo — it could possibly be an immortal tool. However, that might not necessarily be true...

This small fragment of light emitting blade point was a priceless material. It was beyond anyone’s imagination.

“Roar!” the Divine Hou roared angrily from afar. The blade cage had disappeared along with Luo Yi Hang’s death. The Divine Hou had been waiting for this. It tried to escape. But how could Ye Xiwen allow his target escape that easily... He immediately pursued it.

Ye Xiwen finally overtook the Divine Hou after chasing it for a quarter of an hour. He sneered and slapped it. It went flying to the

roadside. The Divine Hou had already exhausted its blood essence by now. It didn't have the power to resist Ye Xiwen's attack.

"You will regret chasing me, human!" The Divine Hou looked coldly towards Ye Xiwen. It appeared somewhat relieved, but also harbored some resentment.

Ye Xiwen's was startled in his heart. He looked around. But he could only see a completely desolate scene. He couldn't see any living creatures. A chill ran down his spine. This scene was enough to make people tremble with fear.

Ye Xiwen had a bad feeling about this. He decided to kill the Divine Hou first, and then proceed to dealing with other things.

"You don't have a choice!" Ye Xiwen sneered. He was just about to kill that Divine Hou with his palm attack.

But suddenly, a huge crack was torn open in the sky. A big hand swept-down towards Ye Xiwen to grab him. An overwhelming and heinous-in-nature power flooded the atmosphere as it advanced towards him.

Ye Xiwen's entire body was suddenly covered in cold sweat. However, he had no way out of this situation. He was carried-off by this big hand. He then fell inside the crack in space.

Ye Xiwen regained his conscious after some time, and found that he had arrived in a valley. This valley wasn't very large. It was a



little more than ten square kilometers in area. However, this valley had a huge pit. Unexpectedly, dark red blood was gushing out of it. The blood flowing out of the valley had also permeated into the earth.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

An earsplitting sound of heartbeats reverberated inside Ye Xiwen’s mind. He could hear heartbeats pounding loudly; one after another. He felt as if he had stepped on the body of a gigantic creature.

Suddenly, his hair stood on end.

“Who is this?” Ye Xiwen shouted. He was secretly vigilant in his mind.

“It is me!” an old voice reverberated. Ye Xiwen looked up. He saw an old man clad in a long robe. The robe was dazzling like the stars. This old man seemed like a warlord. His bloodlust could still be sensed.

“Who are you?” Ye Xiwen asked. He was vigilant inside. He had a feeling that being caught and brought over to this valley might have a relation with this old man.

Ye Xiwen could sense the aura of an invincible sage expert coming from that old man's body. This was entirely different from a legendary level expert like Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if a strong expert of the sage realm had arrived before him. He didn't know whether that old man would be hostile towards him or not. However, this wasn't a good thing for him.

"I am the Star Colossus that had been sealed here!" that old man lightly said.

Ye Xiwen was immediately frightened. He shocked to the extreme when he realized this was the place where the Star Colossus had been sealed. The ancestors of the True Martial University had spared no effort to contend against this Star Colossus. Moreover, this evil star god had been the main culprit in the decline of the True Martial University.

He had led to the decline True Martial University... and that too in its days of prosperity. How could he be some ordinary beast?

It was hard to count the number of senior experts of the True Martial University who had died in his hands back then. Yet, those senior experts couldn't kill it. They could only seal this peerless ominous beast. How could Ye Xiwen not be in an utter shock after he had heard this old man relate that he was that Star Colossus?

Ye Xiwen knew that there were many magical powers that could be used to change one's appearance. However, it was very hard to believe that this old man wasn't at par with that extremely cruel

Star Colossus.

It was no fluke that Ye Xiwen had been caught by the old man, and had been entirely unable to fight back.

He could feel the power of sage on that old man's body. However, he would've died innumerable times by now if he was only a sage expert. The True Martial University used to have many experts of the Great Sage realm. Hence, a Star Colossus of sage realm shouldn't have been able to pose any challenge to the True Martial University.

The old man seemed to be aware of Ye Xiwen's doubts. He faintly smiled and said, "You've guessed it right. This is not my main body. It is only the incarnation of a wisp of my primordial soul!"

Ye Xiwen didn't heave a sigh of relief as one would expect. He was instead shocked further. How dreadful would his main body be if just a part of his soul had such power! This was just beyond the scope of his imagination.

Ye Xiwen had suddenly started to believe those legends. This was a Star Colossus which had once turned the entire True Martial University upside down.

"I don't know why senior has brought me here!" Ye Xiwen cupped his hands respectfully and said.

Ye Xiwen was secretly alert. This exceptionally evil god had

nearly destroyed the True Martial University once. He would certainly not find him for making reprisals. This was only a wisp of its soul, but it still had the strength of sage realm. Ye Xiwen didn't have the power to fight back.

“Does the senior wish for me to help him in escaping from this prison?” Ye Xiwen glanced at that old man and said. But Ye Xiwen wouldn't help him. In fact, he would rather die than helping him. It wasn't because Ye Xiwen wanted to take a moral high-ground. There might have been some room for negotiation if it were some other person... or some great devilish being. However, this Star Colossus was a different case altogether. The Star Colossi were known to eat stars as food. If they could swallow a star... then they should be able to swallow a planet too. And their strength would advance by leaps and bounds if they were to devour a world. Therefore, the entire True Martial World would be in danger if this evil god were to be released. This would be the so-called case of ‘covering the nest to save the eggs’. How would Ye Xiwen survive on his own if the entire True Martial World was destroyed? He would collapse with the True Martial World.

That old man shook his head and said, “My main body is sealed. As per your current strength... you will be of no use even if you practice for one or two thousand years. You're too weak!”

Ye Xiwen listened but he didn't show any indignation on his face. Indeed, he was too weak. At least in comparison to this wisp of the evil god's soul that still had the power of sage realm... He indeed didn't have such qualifications.

“However, someone has arrived here after countless years.

Therefore, I must bet on you. You should be able to practice to the Great Sage realm in this lifetime with your strength and talent. But only if you're favored by good luck!" That old man glanced at Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen clearly felt that he was being looked down upon.

Ye Xiwen didn't say anything in reply. Indeed, his innate talent and 'root bone structure' couldn't be regarded as top-notch. In fact, his ability was a far cry from those people with special physique, and even Luo Yi Hang. However, he hadn't been defeated yet. And that was the fact.

Ye Xiwen had always believed that people could have proud and unyielding characters. However, they must not be arrogant. People with lofty and unyielding character wouldn't admit defeat throughout their lives. Such traits in character were necessary to rise to the peak of martial arts. However, one must not succumb to arrogance. Arrogance had a tendency to 'carry' one away. One may not be able to understand the difference between right and wrong. They may not be able acknowledge the truth. Everything they would do could then be governed by arrogance. And this arrogance would only evolve over time.

Ye Xiwen had been very clear about the approach he must have. He had killed countless disciples. Many were superior to him in every way possible; they were more talented than him, and had better bone foundation. However, the sense of victory would get to his head if he would start to believe that he was better than them. And if one wasn't clear about themselves... then death wouldn't be far away.

# Chapter 359: Frightened At Every Step

---

However, Ye Xiwen had never been discouraged because of this. He had never relied on his inner talent and bone foundation because he knew how to foster his strengths and avoid his weaknesses. Therefore, he didn't care about this so-called weakness of his.

One could have good innate talent and strong bone foundation. However, these weren't enough to solve every problem.

The strength he possessed had undoubtedly originated because of his reliance on the mysterious space. However, it had depended far more on his efforts. How could he have survived if he hadn't practiced like a workaholic? And how could he possibly have achieved such strength?

That old man somewhat admired Ye Xiwen when he saw that he hadn't been discouraged by his remark.

“That man you killed was much stronger than you. Whether it was his bone foundation or innate talent — he was superior to you. I had thought to bring him here since I honestly didn't expect that you would kill him. That was beyond my expectation!” That old man said. It seemed from his tone that he hadn't been optimistic of Ye Xiwen's chances.

“I see... so the ‘sword code’ and the Divine Hou...” Ye Xiwen suddenly realized that this old man had used these trick to attract people. It was no accident that so many rare treasures and such an

unrivalled secret technique had appeared so abruptly. Ye Xiwen had found it strange in the beginning as well. However, he finally understood that these things had emerged from this place.

“Yes, it was I who sent those treasures out!” The old man nodded.

This old man had swallowed countless stars in his evil god form. A few treasures didn’t mean anything to him.

Hence, he had used these treasures to attract several geniuses.

“Ye Xiwen, be careful. I can see that this old man isn’t ordinary!” Ye Mo’s voice resounded in Ye Xiwen’s mind.

The concealment of the ‘Heavenly Source Mirror’ was very tight. This old man had no means to find Ye Mo’s existence.

“This is like fishing. He used those treasures to attract several geniuses. I don’t know what his purpose is... however... you must be careful!”

Ye Xiwen secretly nodded. He knew that he mustn’t let his guard down. This was an old habit of Ye Xiwen’s.

“You won’t be the only one I’ll select. Consider it an investment. You don’t have much strength at the moment. However, you can become very formidable in the span of a thousand or two thousand years. Then, I will not have wasted my energy for nothing!” that

old man indifferently said.

Ye Xiwen realized that this old man had used a long net to catch the big fishes. And these people would eventually become formidable experts. They could even set him free in the future. That would be enough as a return on his investment.

These people would leave in some time. However, a large number of the topmost disciples would arrive later from the future trials of the new disciples of the True Martial University. And the scope of choice would continue to become bigger. In fact, there would be a probability of many formidable experts gathering here in the future.

One might not see the result within a short time. However, one day these people would grow and become the backbone of the True Martial University.

It would take a very long time though.

“You’re the first one to arrive here. I must give you this gift even if we’ve been brought together by fate!” that old man said. A mass of extremely strong star power appeared in his hands. It then flew inside Ye Xiwen’s body.

Ye Xiwen suddenly felt as if he had bathed in a sea of stars as this mass of star power immersed inside his body. It was a very rich star power. He couldn’t have absorbed this much star power even if he had killed thousands or ten thousands of star beasts of legendary seventh or eighth stage.



“Hiss! Indeed, it’s really a massive amount of star power. Even a small planet won’t have this much of star power!” Ye Mo gasped.

This amount of star power was enough for Ye Xiwen to condense Mars. In fact, it was more than enough.

However, Ye Mo’s complexion suddenly changed. He said, “Humph! Ye Xiwen, this is a trap. It contains a magic seed!”

“This magic is a very malicious trick. It is mixed with the star power. The magic seed will get refined if you refine the star power. It will then get planted within your body. Then, you’ll become his puppet. He won’t just control you... he could exploit you as well!” Ye Mo said, “There are many ways of doing this in the Devil World. There are various complicated ways of doing it, and all methods offer different qualities. However, the essence is the same. You’ll become his slave if you refine it. You won’t be able to run away, and he’ll even be able to peep into your secrets. Everything you have will be dominated by him. In fact, it will be useless to become more powerful than him. His one whim will be enough to kill you!”

Ye Xiwen secretly gasped. A chill ran down his spine. Why was this evil Star Colossus being so polite? Only a part of his soul had transformed into human form. But one simply couldn’t treat him like a human. It was still an ominous monster. One couldn’t expect a terrifying star-eating creature like him to have good thoughts.

He was so kind-hearted that he had released such great amounts

of treasures, and had given away such an abundant star power. He had said that these people would become formidable experts in the future, and that they might set him free as a repayment of that debt. However, their intentions couldn't be predicted. The will of a person was the most complicated thing.

This Star Colossus had lived for countless years. Moreover, he was an old fox. How could he not have made preparations for this problem? Under no circumstances would he give away such great amounts of benefits without insurances. He was no idiot.

“However, this magic seed isn't some good thing to condense because it requires great amount of life essence from the user. Condensing one or two of such magic seeds can injure the user. One must do it only if it is extremely important. That is why very few people use magic seeds!” Ye Mo said, “It seems that he has chosen you after much consideration!”

Ye Xiwen was somewhat puzzled. It had seemed as if the opposite party must be in contempt with his ability. However, he had then used a risky method like the ‘magic seed’ on him.

“What should I do now?” Ye Xiwen asked secretly. Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo were using the soul search technique to communicate; very quickly at that. However, that old man arrived in front of Ye Xiwen in a split second. He then said, “You must refine the star power I gave you without any delay. Otherwise, you may have a problem in walking out from here alive!”

Ye Xiwen was suspicious. That old man waved his big hand and a screen appeared in front of Ye Xiwen's eyes. He could see that

groups of experts were involved in a death-match just outside this valley. One among them was the Sword Sage. He was leading the experts of the 'Sword Tomb'. It was hard to tell the advantage that the Sword Sage had obtained, but he had jumped to half-step legendry's great complete realm (1). His future prospects were limitless with such cultivation and strength. In fact, he would be regarded as the seed disciple (2) of the True Martial University.

However, that Sword Sage had been pushed into a disadvantageous position despite stepping into half-step legendry's great complete realm. He was running into danger one-after-another.

He had been pushed into this disadvantageous position by that Brother Fan of the Xuan Yuan Palace hall. Ye Xiwen had seen the memories of the Xuan Yuan disciple he had killed. Hence, he knew that this Brother Fan was an illustrious genius among the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. His name was Fan Ming. The Lord of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall regarded him as an extremely valuable genius. He had recently joined the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall under the care of the Palace Hall Lord, and had gained much prominence.

The Lord of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall held a higher position than the 'heads of the peak' in the True Martial University. In fact, it was considered as one of the most influential positions inside the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall.

The Sword Sage had stepped into the half-step legendry's great complete realm very recently. However, Fan Ming had reached the peak of half-step legendry's great complete realm. In fact, he was only a half-step away from entering the semi-sage realm.

He was only a half-step away from entering the semi-sage realm. However, there was a difference of heaven and earth on the either sides of this half-step. The Sword Sage was an exceptional talent, but he wouldn't be able to enter the semi-sage realm in less than five years.

Ye Xiwen suddenly noticed that the Sword Sage was some he had known. He was clad in a black robe. His sharp sword skill was world-shaking. He had excellent strength. An average person was no match for him. However, he was matched against that Fan Ming. This disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall was a terrifying existence in this session of disciples.

The Sword Sage was that black-robed powerhouse Ye Xiwen had seen on the ancient road.

Ye Xiwen had never seen the Sword Sage after entering the University. He had only heard about him. However, he had never thought that this Sword Sage would turn out to be that black-robed powerhouse. Ye Xiwen and the Sword sage used to have similar strengths. However, the Sword Sage had broken-through to half-step legendary's great complete realm in a very short period of time.

Ye Xiwen himself had been struggling within half-step legendary realm. Therefore, he knew that the promotion of every stage within half-step legendary realm was no joke.

Even Jian Wu Chen had only reached half-step legendary eighth

stage after obtaining an inheritance. But what kind of an outstanding backing did this Sword Sage have?

Ye Xiwen saw Jian Wu Chen and Mu Ling in the ‘Sword Tomb’s’ team. The wolf cub was also there. These three people had a very tacit understanding. However, the entire battle formation of the ‘Sword Tomb’ was under a firm attack from the experts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. In fact, it could collapse at anytime.

Only a few dozens of experts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall remained. They were nothing in comparison to the number the True Martial University had. However, the situation was very different since they were only faced with the disciples of the ‘Sword Tomb’. The number of disciples in the ‘Sword Tomb’s’ party was a bit higher than the ones in the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s. In fact, the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall were far behind in terms of quality as well.

However, the Sword Sage was being suppressed by Fan Ming. Therefore, the entire team of the ‘Sword Tomb’ was being suppressed.

However, Ye Xiwen didn’t get much time to think about it because that old man put away that screen and said, “I’ve seen everything you’ve done since you arrived here. I know that you’ll not survive against those disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. They wish to eradicate all disciples of your True Martial University. That’s why they’ve killed those people. You’ll die if he arrives here. You must not expect me to protect you because these disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall are also amongst these ones I’ve selected as potential candidates!

“I know that you’re practicing a power technique that requires star power. You may obtain the strength to fight back if you absorb this star power!” That old man’s sharp eyes started to compel Ye Xiwen.

Notes:

Half-step legendary ninth stage<Half-step legendry’s great complete realm

Seed Disciple: A special category of disciples who receive special benefits and resources from the Sect. They are nourished and cultivated just like a plant seed.

# Chapter 360: Double Breakthroughs

---

The old man's gaze was like a sharp knife. It felt as if the terrifying aura of a beast was firmly locked on Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen knew that this old man was afraid of the delay. The old man needed to make him refine the star power then and there. But the situation could worsen if Ye Xiwen didn't agree to refine it. He might also get killed. However, he would end being controlled by that old man if he agreed.

Ye Xiwen didn't wish to become the puppet of a Star Colossus. He would rather risk his life to fight with this creature. Then, Ye Mo's voice suddenly reverberated in his mind, "Ye Xiwen, say yes!"

"What are you planning?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"I suddenly remember that my master had once established a strange power technique. It is called 'Heart Seed Devil Method'!" Ye Mo said, "This great technique can grasp the essence and energy of the entire world, and constantly suck them within one's body through the pores. It can then transform into real elemental energy, and intensify the condensation of spirit. It can then control the target's mind. It is capable of seizing the world's good fortune, and plundering the universe's essence; ...it is such a mysterious power technique!

"The most important point is that this power technique itself is based on a magic seed!" Ye Mo said, "For this 'Heart Seed Devil Method' to work... the most critical step is to find someone with

outstanding innate talent and an excellent meditative mind. Then, you need to use them as your very own ‘practice furnace’ for practicing martial arts. You must dive in the depths of your target’s heart in order for this technique to work. This technique will be considered accomplished once the magic seed is sown after going through all variations. However, not everything is detectable in the utter vastness of one’s heart. The scenery is beautiful, and can be seen as far as one’s sight reaches. It extends to infinity; like the nature itself. Sometimes, the sun and moon shines when the sky is clear and windy. Thunder and lightning appear when the thick dense cloud rains. These represent the seven emotions and six desires of a person. They fluctuate unpredictably. Practicing this great technique is like steering a boat in a raging ocean. The boat will sink and people onboard will die if you’re not careful. It would be beyond redemption if it backfired. The body and soul will be extinguished entirely. This technique doesn’t succeed even if it is carried out hundred times after a backfire. However, your martial skill can increase sharply if it succeeds. Moreover, it is important that the magic seeds are sown in people’s bodies. You can obtain enormous benefits from those people with the help of those magic seeds. Then, you can have quick breakthroughs as well. In fact, you will soon breakthrough into the sage realm if you can sow the magic seeds on the bodies of several experts of sage realm!”

“However, the problem is that... where to find the people I can turn into ‘practice furnace’ in such a short time?” Only this old man was present in front of Ye Xiwen. However, Ye Xiwen couldn’t possibly be a match for this enemy. Therefore, he couldn’t sow a magic seed inside this enemy’s body. “Moreover, the most important thing is that I haven’t condensed this magic seed yet. It’s this Star Colossus who has condensed it within my body!”



“This magic seed is not a problem. The magic seed hasn’t taken root in your body. It hasn’t started to germinate yet. There won’t be any problem if you can erase his spirit imprint, and instead imprint your own on it!” Ye Mo said.

“The problem of ‘furnace’ cannot be resolved. There is only one way... you use yourself as a furnace. Then, the magic seed can grow by absorbing your power. This technique of yours will also be completed by the time this magic seed matures!” Ye Mo blurted out this crazy plan.

Ye Xiwen could use himself as a furnace to sow the magic seed. He could allow it take root, and then grow gradually using his power. However, this kind of method was also very dangerous — the person who had sown the seed would suffer heavy losses if it were to die. Even Ye Mo’s former master had only used his most loyal subordinates as his furnace. His martial skill had enhanced significantly after their deaths.

In other words — there would be enormous danger if this power technique was to be practiced in a deceptive fashion. One could die if they weren’t careful. Even if practiced properly... one could die because of the magic seed’s disintegration. This was so because... the person who had sown the magic seed must be willing for it to disintegrate it under these circumstances in order to prevent getting hit by a rebound. Then, the cultivation energies would be transmitted to the body of the person who had sown the magic seed. Therefore, it was often seen that only the most loyal servants were turned into practice furnaces since their masters could control the life and death of their loyal slaves.

There was no problem for Ye Xiwen to use himself as a furnace. However, the biggest problem was that he would die if he couldn't practice this power technique properly. In fact, he could die even if he did practice it right.

He didn't have a bright future ahead. This was a dead end for him.

Ye Xiwen's complexion turned ugly after he had listened to Ye Mo's explanation. But he didn't have any other option at this time...

Perhaps the Old Man would kill Ye Xiwen on the spot if he were to refuse refining the magic seed that was contained in the star power. However, he would become a puppet of this Star Colossus if he were to refine them; this would be no less than death. In fact, that the old man would be able to peep into his secrets... and whenever he would want Ye Xiwen to die... Ye Xiwen would die.

"Alright then!" Ye Xiwen clenched his teeth and said. His only options at hand were to either die or become a puppet. Hence, he decided to put his life on the line. There was could be a possibility of finding a-way-out if he could control the speed of the magic seed's growth.

"I would never dare to disobey your order!" Ye Xiwen cupped his hands in obeisance as he replied to that old man. He was hanging at the edge of a cliff. He would die if he wouldn't comply. Or, he might be left in a situation which would be no less than death. He

must fight on to postpone his death. He didn't have any other choice.

“Very good!” That old man's complexion turned benign once he saw Ye Xiwen complying with his command. Perhaps this old man's kind expression could've deceived Ye Xiwen well if he didn't know about this magic seed.

This Star Colossus had lived for 'god knows' how many years. In fact, he should've exhausted his life essence by now. Perhaps Ye Xiwen would've been deceived if it weren't for Ye Mo.

Ye Xiwen had no other choice but to sit cross-legged. Ye Mo had instilled the method of practicing 'Heart Seed Devil Technique' inside his mind. His mysterious space began to operate frantically. The 'Spirit Dans' that he had collected from Luo Yi Hang's body were brought into play. They began to burn frantically and decomposed into spirit energy. This energy then entered inside Ye Xiwen's mysterious space.

He mastered the cultivation method of this technique after burning more than five million 'Spirit Dans'— thanks to his mysterious space. 5 million 'Spirit Dans' was a staggering figure for most people.

Ye Xiwen started to operate the Heart Seed Devil Technique. He discovered that the spiritual power of the Star Colossus had been secretly attached to the magic seed which was wrapped inside the star power.

The magic seed hadn't yet planted itself into his body. However, nothing could be done once it did. Ye Xiwen's spiritual power came in contact with that of the 'wisp of the Star Colossus's soul', and it frantically began to move within Ye Xiwen. It became crazy and its eyes turned blood-shot.

Ye Xiwen snorted. He grabbed that little soul of the Star Colossus, and threw it into the blood pool inside the 'Heavenly Source Mirror!'

"Roar!" Intense rays of light were emitted inside the blood pool. The 'little' Star Colossus struggled and roared inside the pool. However, it had no scope against the suppression of the Heavenly Source Mirror. Its fate had been sealed as soon as it had entered the blood pool. It had no choice but to get refined.

The speed of refining of such a small soul was extremely quick. Ye Xiwen quickly refined it and created his 'personal' Star Colossus Blood Slave. Now, this blood slave would be thoroughly obedient to him.

There was a chance that the Old Man might become anxious if he didn't receive any messages from this wisp of his soul. Hence, Ye Xiwen promptly ordered this blood slave to transmit a message to the old man outside. The message would relay that everything was working out as per the Old Man's plan.

That Old Man watched Ye Xiwen attentively with his knife-like sharp eyes. He could see through that mass of star power that wrapped the magic seed inside. He continued to look at Ye Xiwen as he unceasingly refined this mass of star power. The trace of a

satisfied expression appeared on his face as he watched the magic seed's refining.

Ye Xiwen's universe began to transform as the star power was absorbed. Mars had been getting condense inside his solar system with the unceasing inflow of star power.

That luminous spot emitted exceptionally brilliant rays of light and attracted huge amounts of star power towards it.

“Bang!” It was hard to tell long it took, but Mars had been finally condensed inside his body. Clouds began to gather in the sky of the outside world.

The Heavenly Tribulation had arrived for Ye Xiwen yet again. His strength would advance by leaps and bounds if he were to successfully cross this Heavenly Tribulation.

Ye Xiwen didn't move. Rather, he continued to absorb that mass of star power. He hadn't even absorbed 1% of it so far. Its quantity was comparable to the star power present inside a small planet. It would fetch an unimaginable price if it were to be sold. In fact, most people wouldn't even be able to touch it.

Ye Xiwen had been unceasingly operating the fifth layer of 'Tyrant Body Technique'. This was the so-called norm of poor people opting to study civil arts whereas rich opting to study martial arts. Wealth brought enormous benefits to a martial cultivator. The lack of wealthy meant that one wouldn't have sufficient energy to support any type of 'body tempering'

technique. For example, Ye Xiwen might've barely managed to perfect the first layer of 'Tyrant Body Technique' if he had only relied on his 'real elemental energy' to temper his body.

However, Ye Xiwen had been running low on 'Spirit Dans' these days. He had collected many 'Spirit Dans' from Luo Yi Hang's body, but he'd need them for other things. However, this mass of star power had helped him in resolving his immediate-energy-crisis. The star power could be considered as far better than the spirit energy derived from 'Spirit Dans'. And it was far better for tempering his body.

Star power was so precious that one couldn't buy this even if they wanted to. This was like the so-called 'rare iron meteorite'. This iron meteorite was like a foreign object that had fallen into this mortal world. The iron essence would be extracted from it later. And the iron molded from it would be hundred times better than the ordinary one. That is because the former has been extracted from a meteorite and contains the power of the stars.

Ye Xiwen had such an enormous mass of star powers before him at present. So, how could he not rush to temper his 'tyrant body technique'?

Ye Xiwen had started to operate the fifth layer of his 'tyrant body technique' along with the absorption of enormous amount of star power. More and more rays of light started to emanate from his body.

Even that old man was a bit amazed. A trace of greed could be seen in his eyes. He tried to conceal it, but it still flashed in his

eyes.

Suddenly, the fierce roars of demon beasts faintly reverberated in the sky. A group of robust and vigorous beastly figures had appeared in the clouds. That lightening beast from last time had returned. And he had brought along ten more. They looked so frightening that anyone would be terrified to see them.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's terrifying aura began to boil up. The fifth layer of the 'tyrant body technique' had been perfected.

# Chapter 361: Half-Step Legendary Seventh Stage

---

Ye Xiwen's aura started to boil, and a strong power galloped within his body.

Ye Xiwen had successfully reached the fifth layer of the 'tyrant body technique'. His gestures had become many times stronger even though he hadn't made a breakthrough. The first layer of the 'tyrant body technique' involved perfecting the skin and strengthening it to the toughness of steel. The second layer involved perfecting the flesh and muscles. The third layer involved perfecting the bones. The fourth layer involved perfecting the internal organs. Even if someone were to use their martial power to launch a surprise attack — it would still be impossible for them to injure Ye Xiwen's internal organs once the fourth layer had been perfected. And the fifth layer involved perfecting the meridians. Every martial technique involved the release of 'Real Elemental Energy' to some extent. The more 'real elemental energy' is released — the stronger the might of that technique is. However, the meridians wouldn't be able to withstand the rush of energy and would burst open if they were too weak.

Therefore, it was very important to strengthen the meridians. The deduction of the fifth layer of 'tyrant body technique' would be considered 'completed' once the meridians were perfected. He had only practiced this layer to the preliminary level. However, his meridians had become extremely strong — more than double compared to earlier.

Now... Ye Xiwen's same techniques would be able to unleash



more than double the power.

Ye Xiwen had a lot of assurance in his heart compared to the time he had faced the previous heavenly tribulations.

The Heavenly Tribulation had battered him well the last time. He had been thoroughly exhausted, and had been put in a difficult situation. However, his strength had increased more than ten times. Hence, he wasn't worried much.

The thought of having a breakthrough had made Ye Xiwen excited. And he was eager to cross this Heavenly Tribulation.

That Old Man looked at Ye Xiwen in astonishment from the side. Any living creature would be scared to cross this Heavenly Tribulation. However, Ye Xiwen looked eager to face it. This had transcended the Old Man's expectation.

The Old Man wasn't aware that Ye Xiwen had been miserably oppressed by this Heavenly Tribulation the last time. In fact, he had never been oppressed so miserably in his entire life. However, he had somehow beaten it. Therefore, the Heavenly Tribulation had returned to settle scores.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Heavenly thunders had started to billow in the sky. A group of golden figures appeared in the clouds. The Heavenly Tribulation looked simpler this time; it didn't resort to unnecessary elements. It had just produced several dozen lightning apes. Their imposing aura had spread across the sky. Their ice-cold 'killing intention' was locked on Ye Xiwen. This horde of several dozen lightning apes was mightier than a magnificent army. This Heavenly Tribulation was tougher than all previous ones.

That Old Man was somewhat surprised to see this Heavenly Tribulation. He didn't expect that this Heavenly Tribulation would be so strange. What kind of person could cross this Heavenly Tribulation? The more terrifying the person... the more terrifying the Heavenly Tribulation would be. An ordinary Heavenly Tribulation would mean that... the person it had come for... also possessed limited potential. However, a more terrifying Heavenly Tribulation meant that the person had unlimited potential.

Such Heavenly Tribulations were very frightening, but there was always a way-out. There would always be an opportunity to escape death. In other words... such a Heavenly Tribulation wouldn't have appeared if Ye Xiwen's strength hadn't reached such heights.

This Heavenly Tribulation was quicker than the one that arrives when an average expert enters the sage realm.

"Come on!" Ye Xiwen clenched his fist. This Heavenly Tribulation would follow him wherever he'd go. Therefore, he needed to settle this here itself. He took a step and turned into a golden streamer of light. He then penetrated into the tribulation

clouds. He hadn't only planned to cross this tribulation... he had also decided to take the first initiative.

Ye Xiwen took the initiative and flew towards that horde of lightning apes. This provoked the Heavenly Tribulation. They roared and rushed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him.

Ye Xiwen realized that these lightning apes were somewhat different from the one he had fought earlier. They were far more powerful. Each of them had put forth simple but extremely terrifying martial arts. They had swords, spears, blades, halberds, and also knew fist techniques. They exhibited a power so terrifying that it went beyond one's imagination.

Ye Xiwen sneered. His strength had increased several times after deducing the fifth layer of the 'tyrant body technique'. He didn't fall weak while he faced the attacks of those lightning apes. He rushed into that horde of lightning apes without any hesitation.

Ye Xiwen didn't use any powerful martial arts. An ordinary punch or kick could carry great force as well. This was the so-called 'act of giving-up affectation to regain one's natural state'. Ye Xiwen had reached a level of strength wherein his kicks and fists were in-line with the principles of Dao (1). Hence, his attacks were far more terrifying than those of the lightning apes.

Ye Xiwen wasn't the strongest in the younger generation, but his understanding of Dao wasn't less than anyone. The reason was simple. He possessed the mysterious space, and he kept deducing the Dao principles. Thus, his understanding of Dao enhanced with each passing second. It was impossible for others to have this

factor. However, Ye Xiwen had been relying on it for some time now.

He had condensed Mars, as well as deduced the fifth layer of 'tyrant body technique'. His strength had become tyrannical, and his understanding of Dao had reached an inconceivable extent.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen raised his hand to block the attack of a lightning ape. The lightning ape slashed its lightning blade horizontally. And a dreadful power began to boil upon Ye Xiwen's arm. An ordinary person would've been cleft into two by this blade attack.

However, that lightning blade couldn't injure Ye Xiwen. It could only send ripples on his armor of golden divinities. They seemed to spread as if they were on the surface of water.

Ye Xiwen turned around and shot his fist. The entire atmosphere started to boil due to the terrifying pressure of the punch. It seemed like it would suppress the heaven itself.

"Bang!" a lightning ape's body had been burst open by Ye Xiwen. It quickly respawned at a different place, but its size had visibly decreased. That was because some of its lightning energy had been absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen's strength had increased a little, and that lightning ape's had been weakened.

“Bang!” a lightning ape rushed forward and launched a kick. It literally trod the space and shattered it into pieces. It arrived in front of Ye Xiwen and trampled with a terrifying strength.

Ye Xiwen reflexively turned around and grabbed that lightning ape with his hands. The lightning energy scattered from its body but couldn't injure him. Ye Xiwen threw that lightning ape; it almost seemed as if he had treated the ape as a weapon.

“Bang!” another lightning ape was struck by the one thrown-away by Ye Xiwen. It was then split into two halves. Ye Xiwen's new-found strength was truly horrifying.

This scene could've scared anyone to death. The Heavenly Tribulations were extremely terrifying for most people. They usually practiced for a long time before encountering one. However, the Heavenly Tribulation turned out to be deadlier every time.

All strange Heavenly Tribulations were extremely terrifying. One could see that each of these lightning apes were exceptionally dreadful. They upheld the will of the 'Heavenly Law'.

Each of these lightning apes could beat the experts at the peak of half-step legendary ninth stage. Their individual strengths didn't differ much from that of Luo Yi Hang. They rushed to kill Ye Xiwen; all at the same time.

Other experts wouldn't come across a Heavenly Tribulation like Ye Xiwen's. However, Ye Xiwen was playing with these lightning

apes as if they were weapons.

Ye Xiwen grabbed a lightning ape as if it were a large blade. The large blade danced in his hand and unexpectedly unleashed a blade technique. It then chopped the other lightning apes in half.

However, they were made up of lightning. They quickly respawned. However, Ye Xiwen wasn't discouraged because a significant portion of their innate energy would be absorbed by him every time they'd be chopped in half. They wouldn't be able to fight for long at this rate.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen brandished that ‘large blade’ and chopped-down those lightning apes; he did this countless times. Eventually, he managed to kill those lightning apes. He then absorbed the lightning ape he had been holding in his hand.

Ye Xiwen absorbed every last strand of energy inside the ape's body. He then gave-out a loud shout and extended a big golden hand. His hand rose against the wind, and turned bigger and bigger as it ascended in the sky. The entire Heavenly Tribulation clouds fell into his big-golden hand. He pinched it, and it exploded. It then turned into a tide of energy, and was then absorbed by Ye

Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen's martial power enhanced to a great extent after absorbing the tribulation cloud's energy. A massive amount of energy had gathered inside his body. His aura also rose gradually. He flew in the air and started to operate the 'Observing Person Scripture' endlessly.

An exceptionally intense star-light erupted inside Ye Xiwen's universe, and it illuminated his entire body.

His entire inner universe began to revolve. It had the ability to revolve on its own; just like a small galaxy. This was the reason why he wanted to condense the solar system. However, this merely was the first step and nothing more.

His strength would advance by leaps and bounds once he had condensed the entire solar system inside his body.

He had this 'lucky' knowledge owing to the virtue of his previous life. He wasn't a part of some high-tech research institute in his past life. He used to be an ordinary person. However, his previous life was set-in the era of a massive technical revolution. His knowledge and wisdom were much broader than the people of this world.

The indigenous people of this world didn't know the concept of the stars. The world was just... limited to the world in their view.

Ye Xiwen couldn't have created the 'Observing Person Scripture' without the knowledge from his past-life. It was the base of this creation.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen's imposing aura had been rising unceasingly. He eventually crossed the barrier, and stepped into half-step legendary seventh stage. That flood of energy had shattered the barrier of this stage.

Ye Xiwen opened his eyes after a long time. He had entered the half-step legendary seventh stage. He could easily contend with the experts of half-step legendry's great complete realm with his current strength.

---

Notes:

Dao/Tao: The absolute principle underlying the universe. It combines the principles of yin and yang, and signifies the way, or code of behavior within itself. Its principles are in harmony with the natural order.



# Chapter 362: To Transform A Star Colossus Into A Blood Slave

---

“Very good. I have chosen a worthy person!” a faint smile appeared on the Old Man’s face when he saw the manner in which Ye Xiwen had crossed the Heavenly Tribulation. “You’re more mysterious than I thought!”

“Come; I’ll transfer some of my power inside you. You’ll reach the heavens in a single jump. I will help you enter the half-step sage realm!” that Old Man said as an evil ray of light flickered in his eyes.

“Ye Xiwen, be careful!” Ye Mo reminded Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen nodded secretly. He couldn’t imagine why this Old Man would be so kind to him that he would help him level up to the half-step sage realm in one-fell-swoop. It was only half-step sage realm; but the word ‘sage’ was attached it. Ye Xiwen reckoned that it would take him at least five to ten years to enter the semi-sage realm(1).

But, did Ye Xiwen have any other option under these circumstances?

He had already accepted something as fishy as the magic seed. So, he wasn’t afraid of anything at this point.

Ye Xiwen arrived beside that Old Man and sat cross-legged. A

stream of blood was gushing out from the earth under his body. Boundless energy boiled in that blood which had moistened this stretch of earth. This very earth had given birth to those star beasts.

“Good; very good!” A strange evil light flickered in the eyes of that Old Man. “You’re good to go!”

That Old Man roared lightly. Then, he instantly shot his big hand, and it went inside Ye Xiwen’s mind.

Ye Xiwen sensed that something was wrong. He shouted, “What do you want?”

The Old Man had gone inside Ye Xiwen’s mind. He laughed evilly and said, “Ha ha, I never expected that a human like you would’ve possessed such a body. Barring those ancient human experts... I’m witnessing such astonishing flesh for the first time. I’ll have boundless future prospects if I can temporarily reside inside this body!”

“Ha ha ha, I’ll finally get out of this dam\*ed trap. I’ll break out of this trap and release my main body. Then, I shall swallow this whole da\*n world!” that Old Man laughed like a madman.

Ye Xiwen coldly looked at that Old Man. They were both inside his mind at the moment. Ye Xiwen stood on astonishing golden divinities. These golden divinities were surging as unceasingly as the waves in the ocean. There was a chaotic and dusky atmosphere as far as the eyes could see. This place appeared similar to a

Dantian.

It was well-known fact that the so-called human body had three Dantian regions. One was located in the lower abdomen; the second was inside the chest, and the third — inside the mind. And that's where Ye Xiwen had stored his golden divinities.

Ye Xiwen could feel the presence of his mysterious space in that dusky atmosphere. He clenched his fist.

“You have such an impressive amount of divinities. Have you slaughtered gods?” That Old Man was extremely surprised to find these many golden divinities rolling inside Ye Xiwen's mind. “He he, but these divinities will soon be mine!”

“Weren't you planning to turn me into your puppet? Why did you change your mind so suddenly?” Ye Xiwen coldly asked. It was needless to say that he was so angered that he had no reservations for giving face to the Old Man.

He had been very careful thus far, but he eventually ended-up speaking his mind.

“You knew!” the Old Man exclaimed in surprise. “It seems that you're no fool. I wanted to turn you into my puppet because the body you humans possess is too weak. I could barely instill a wisp of my soul into it. Therefore, the next best thing that I could do was to turn you into a puppet. But, I didn't know that your body was so strong. It's on par with the bodies of those ancient experts. I can instill my soul inside your body without any problems!”

The Old Man had only intended to control Ye Xiwen as a puppet. But the Old Man changed his mind after he witnessed Ye Xiwen's intrepid performance against the Heavenly Tribulation. He now wanted to seize control of Ye Xiwen's body through his mind.

"I hadn't wished to be on bad terms with you; I'm not kidding! So, you can only blame your luck for this!" that Old Man coldly said. His stature suddenly swooped towards Ye Xiwen. "Your death shall bring success to my supreme cause!"

The Old Man's terrifying attack swept-over.

Ye Xiwen had no choice but to mobilize his divinities to block this attack.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

The divinities under Ye Xiwen's feet reverse-transformed into a terrifying-ominous beast. The divinities Ye Xiwen had refined had come from different races. And these races were the descendants of the 'ancient races of beast-gods'. The divinities had reverse-transformed into a unique-ominous beast. It advanced towards that Old Man to bite him.

"Bang!"

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

That Old Man suddenly launched an attack. The divinities which had taken the form of an ominous beast were no match for him, and got crushed. He had unleashed the sage realm’s terrifying strength.

“Don’t struggle. Sincerely allow this Old Man to swallow you!” that Old Man laughed strangely and said.

“Ye Mo, begin!” Ye Xiwen retreated as he shouted. Suddenly, an astonishing scarlet light lased-out from the surrounding chaos, and maliciously crashed into the Old Man’s body.

“Bang!” the Old Man was caught off-guard by this surprise attack, and a section of his flesh was parched-off. However, he regained his composure. He then roared again-and-again as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen. His complexion had turned fierce. He stretched-out his big hand towards Ye Xiwen to grab him, and broke-through the protective layers of the golden divinities.

Ye Xiwen opened his devil wings, and avoided that Old Man’s attack.

They were pursuing and attacking each other inside Ye Xiwen’s mind. That Old Man was only a wisp of the Star Colossus’s soul, but he possessed the strength of sage realm. Ye Xiwen was no

match for him. But that Old Man was somewhat worried. He wanted to seize Ye Xiwen's body, but he didn't wish to injure Ye Xiwen inside his mind space; any injuries received in this part of the body could be very hard to restore.

This was a rarely-seen human body, and was capable of holding his soul. And he had made-up his mind to take over Ye Xiwen's body.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Their fight had been setting-off wild waves of divinities, and these waves kept rising unceasingly; one after another. It was an extremely terrifying scene.

Ye Xiwen retreated inside the mysterious space.

“Boy, you cannot escape!” that Old Man roared and followed Ye Xiwen inside the mysterious space.

“Die you Old Foggy!” Ye Xiwen shouted. A multicolored divine beam covered the entire area inside the mysterious space. It seemed as if the mysterious space had sensed a foreign invader, and had reacted to their presence. The mysterious space suddenly tensed-up and endless rays of light began to spread.

The Old Man realized that something was wrong. He figured that he might have fallen into Ye Xiwen's trap. He hadn't paid any attention to Ye Xiwen's strength. Any plan or scheme was like fleeting clouds in front of his sage realm's tyrannical strength. It was radically impossible for Ye Xiwen to injure that Old Man even if he were to have the strength of semi-sage realm.

That multicolored divine beam wrapped the Old Man. He couldn't free himself — no matter how much he struggled.

Meanwhile, Ye Xiwen was crazily burning 'Spirit Dans'. He was consuming more than 10 'Spirit Dans' every second. The strength of this Star Colossus was far beyond his imagination. Perhaps, he was only one step away from entering the Great Sage realm.

That Star Colossus was so strong that it would be very difficult to imprison him for long... even if Ye Xiwen were to push the mysterious space to its limits.

After all said and done... Ye Xiwen's strength was indeed far inferior to the Old Man's...

He had discovered that this mysterious space's intervention was little-to-none while he was fighting with the Old Man outside. However, the mysterious space would react ferociously whenever there was a psychic invasion.

"Shua!" a red-colored shackle flew-out and penetrated that Old Man's body. It locked around that Old Man's collarbone. He

bellowed, but he was entirely wrapped in that multicolored divine beam; he couldn't move. It seemed as if he was caught in quagmire. There was no way for him to move.

He roared repeatedly. However, he couldn't do anything since his collarbone had been locked by the red spirit-chain. His magical powers had also been sealed by the chain. His real form had been revealed since his powers had been subdued. He was a giant monster; fish-like black scales covered his entire body. Its massive tail was waving vigorously. It had four strong hooves. Fortunately, this was his soul state. The size would've been beyond imagination if it had been its real body.

Ye Xiwen found it hard to imagine the real size of a monster that could devour stars.

Ye Xiwen heaved a sigh of relief once he saw that the Old Man had been chained. He then shouted, "Ye Mo, I'm throwing him inside the blood pool. I'd like to turn him into a blood slave!"

Ye Xiwen had been forced into tough situations by this Old Man; again and again. So much so that he had turn himself into a furnace to practice 'Heart Seed Devil Method'. He had been set down a road from where he couldn't return... So, he was furious and couldn't restrain his anger anymore.

"Young man, you will die a dog's death once my true body comes out. I'll massacre your entire True Martial World!" the Star Colossus's prototype roared. He was unwilling to give-up. He had always known everything to be in his control. He had lived for thousands of years. He wasn't 'some' young and inexperienced



creature. He was skilled in planning rigorous schemes and possessed deep foresight. He would calculate and fortify every step of his plan before he'd proceed with it. He had put all his effort even while facing Ye Xiwen; a youngster whose strength was much inferior to his own. He had never believed in leaving loopholes. However, he had never calculated that something like this mysterious space would exist inside Ye Xiwen's mind. An item like this mysterious space went against the Heaven's will. It had jeopardized his plan and had pushed him into a very perilous situation.

“You're paralyzed. Yet you dream of coming out? Try in the next life!” Ye Xiwen kicked him. Ye Xiwen's kick wouldn't have budged him if it had been his real body. However, this was a wisp of the beast's soul; nothing more. Hence, he restrained himself from kicking the Star Colossus to death.

Ye Mo pulled at that Star Colossus after he heard Ye Xiwen's words, and threw him into the blood pool.

“Roar!”

The Star Colossus roared in pain as he entered the blood pond. His constant struggles set-off gigantic waves in the blood pool. But, how could Ye Mo possibly allow him to escape? The Star Colossus had been shackled in the chains. The chains had pierced his body, and had made several large holes in it. And the Star Colossus's energy was being gradually transferred from these holes — and into Ye Xiwen's body — through the chains.

Half-step legendary ninth stage < Half-stage legendary ninth peak

< Half-stage legendry's great complete realm < Semi-sage realm < Half-step sage realm < Sage first stage

Treat 'half-step legendary realm' as 'Legendary realm' itself. That's because true geniuses choose to stay within half-step legendary realm and treat it like a replacement for legendary realm.

The pinnacle of half-step legendary realm is 'Semi-sage realm'.

It's called semi-sage realm because the next breakthrough will basically take you across 'ten stages at once' and you will directly reach the pinnacle of legendary realm. But what's the pinnacle of legendary realm? Checkout the hierarchy below:-

Legendary first stage < ..... < Legendary ninth stage < Legendary ninth peak < Legendry's great complete realm < Half-step sage realm

Yes, the pinnacle of legendary realm is Half-step sage realm. In other words, the Old Man is offering Ye Xiwen to help him insta-reach the Half-step sage realm. Then he will be only half a step away from becoming a Sage expert.

## Chapter 363: A Great Plan

---

There was a fight ensuing between two groups of experts on the outside. The experts of the 'Sword Tomb' had gradually fallen into the disadvantageous position under the relentless and strategic attacks of the experts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. In fact, the Sword Tomb was on the verge of defeat. However, the Sword Tomb's experts were usually very aggressive. Perhaps they would've been routed by now if not for the consistency of their fierce sword attacks. But their situation didn't seem very optimistic despite their vigor.

The Wolf Cub had sustained many wounds on his body. He was experiencing battles which were far more brutal compared to the others' since the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had brought various ominous beasts as their mounts. These beasts had joined forces, and had thereby increased their group's overall strength.

Dangers sprang-up at the Wolf Cub from everywhere since he was faced with the attacks of those ominous beasts. Meanwhile the other people of the 'Sword Tomb' were too busy in taking care of themselves... and were failing at it as well.

The experts of the 'Sword Tomb' were all 'sword experts'. A sword expert's only companion was their sword; other things could be considered as burdens. Hence, their demeanor was naturally understandable — you might have all sorts of tricks and methods... but my sword can break through ten thousand techniques.

A mount wasn't necessary for the sword experts. Consequently, the Wolf Cub was forced to single-handedly resist the attacks from those ominous beasts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. His miraculous abilities had surprised everyone. One must know that the ominous beasts which had been brought by these Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's disciples didn't have blood relations with the ancient mythological beasts; they didn't carry the blood of ancient ominous beasts. Yet, each of them was extraordinarily wise, and it was difficult to find their match. However, they had found a fierce, weird and foul-mouthed opponent in this Wolf Cub. In fact, he was so ferocious that even the slightest lacks in caution had costed their lives in this fight.

The Wolf Cub had miraculous abilities, but the opposite party many ominous beasts. Therefore, it was bound to be difficult for him to deal with so many enemies at once. Soon, the Wolf Cub had sustained various wounds, and blood had started to gush out from them.

“Motherf\*ker! These guys are despicable. They launched a sneak attack on this prince!” the Wolf Cub commented in his usual foul-mouthed manner.

However, this hadn't slowed him down. Thanks to his outstanding agility skill... he was ahead of those ominous beasts. In fact, he might've been dead by now if he didn't possess such an amazing agility skill.

In fact, many disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had started to harbor thoughts of catching the Wolf Cub. They wanted to raise him as a pet. After all, he was the descendant of an extraordinary

demon beast. To raise him as a pet would be a matter of pride.

Jian Wu Chen and Mu Ling were completely invested in dealing with their respective opponents. Therefore, they couldn't assist the Wolf Cub. Other people didn't even think of helping it since their own opponents were very formidable.

But, it was the Sword Sage who was in the most dangerous situation. He was constantly under attack by Fan Ming. The Sword Sage had entered half-step legendry's great complete realm. But Fan Ming was at the peak of half-step legendary great complete realm; he had attained a higher cultivation level. However, the Sword Sage had somehow survived owing to his outstanding abilities. An average person of the same level would've been dead by now.

"Welcome your death obediently. No one can save you!" Fan Ming coldly announced to the Sword Sage.

"Isn't your Xuan Yuan Palace Hall worried that the True Martial University will find out about this?" The sword sage asked in reply. He had fallen into the disadvantageous position, but he didn't show a shred of weakness.

"Humph, no one will ever find out that this was the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's doing once you guys are dead!" Fan Ming responded in a carefree manner.

No one would be able to determine that this had been done by the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall once these people had been killed and the

clues were wiped-clean. In fact, it was possible that the True Martial University might never come to know about this underground world. The matter of these people's demise would become an eternal secret in that case.

“It's a grand plan indeed!” a loud voice suddenly sounded. It was followed by a startling sword intention that appeared out of nowhere.

“Buried Person Sword! (1)” a loud shout resounded. The sword intention released countless principles of Dao, and turned into a sword light. It then swept down.

This scary sword intention had torn the space open. It had swept down ferociously and had set-off a terrifying energy-storm.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's disciple who came in its path got cleft into two; they died on the spot. Several experts didn't get any time to resist; they perished in an instant. They didn't have the strength to fight back. Five among these slaughtered people were at half-step legendary ninth stage. These experts were considered as elites among elites in the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. They didn't have the reputation equal to that of Fan Ming, but they were

considered ‘seed’ disciples nonetheless.

It was not because they were one-step behind a first grade genius like Fan Ming. It was because they might never be able to fill this gap of one-step. ...it was a disparity between their talent and opportunity.

They’d be considered top-notch talents if they could cross this step; they’d then enjoy the best treatment. However, they’d only be considered as ‘second grade’ geniuses if they weren’t be able to cross this step.

Moreover, there was a huge difference in strength.

“Who was that?” Fan Ming shouted in a cold voice. He was startled by that sudden sword-light attack. He didn’t know who had attacked him from behind; he couldn’t fathom who’d dare to disturb him.

“You ‘Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’ disciples are too arrogant!” a strong voice reverberated. Then, a slim figure emerged from behind the layers of space. He towed the long sword intention that had cut open the space.

The Sword Sage saw Ye Xiwen, and a bright light flashed in his eyes. However, he didn’t say anything. His entire body was clad in a black cloak. Therefore, one couldn’t see his facial expression.

“Who are you?” Fan Ming looked towards Ye Xiwen and asked.

“You don’t need to know that. A dead person doesn’t need to know much!” Ye Xiwen sneered and replied.

“Boy, thank god you’ve arrived at the right time. Otherwise, this prince would’ve been ganged-up, and killed, by these shameless bastards!” Wolf Cub stated in his usual full-mouthed manner.

Ye Xiwen ignored the Wolf Cub. Jian Wu Chen and Mu Ling were pleasantly surprised to see Ye Xiwen.

Only Bao Qin Wang’s expression turned complicated upon seeing Ye Xiwen in the Sword Tomb’s team. He was happy and ... confused. He was happy because he knew that Ye Xiwen possessed terrifying strength. Everyone had witnessed the manner in which Ye Xiwen had struck-down those disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall in one move. However, the enemy commander looked even more terrifying.

Yet... those enemies had been killed by Ye Xiwen in one move. The Sword Tomb’s chance of winning would increase greatly if Ye Xiwen were to lend help.

However, he was confused because they had an enmity with Ye Xiwen. And now they needed to rely on Ye Xiwen for the sake of their lives. Hence, he had no choice but to feel confused.

In fact, Ye Xiwen didn’t have a favorable opinion of the Sword Tomb. The Sword Tomb had a reputation of being an organization for sword cultivators. However, he had had too many differences



with them. Ye Xiwen bore these things in his mind as well. He wasn't on good terms with either of the two sides. Hence, he didn't want to help either. In fact, he might've waited till one side was annihilated if Jian Wu Chen, Mu Ling, and Wolf Cub weren't in the Sword Tomb's team.

“How courageous!” Fan Ming smiled instead of getting furious. No one had dared to speak to him in this manner since the time he had set foot on the road of martial arts. And those who did... were already dead. It had been a long time since someone had dared to be disrespectful towards him.

“Bang!” Fan Ming shot the long spear he had held. The tyrannical spear point pierced through the space as it rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

“Whoosh!” the terrifying spear point had cracked the space, and it broke apart into countless pieces; it was almost as if the space was made of the same material as that of glass.

Ye Xiwen shot his sword intention in retaliation. It swept out an incredible sword light in the sky.

“Bang!” the world between the Heaven and Earth had been shattered. The terrifying battle between these two had swept-away more than half of the space; the gray-colored chaos on the ‘other-side’ had started to leak in.

This battle was more terrifying than the one between Fan Ming and Sword Sage. The individual strengths of these two were far

more than that of the Sword Sage. Fan Ming had reached the realm of 'Man-Spear Unification'. In fact, he himself seemed like a long spear.

Ye Xiwen hadn't achieved the realm of Man-Sword Unification, but his sword attacks were more powerful. He wasn't holding a real sword in his hand. He had merely created a sword using Dao.

Ye Xiwen followed the Dao of martial arts, whereas the 'sword art' was only one of the many 'arts' in the way of martial arts. Hence, the sword art was incapable of dominating Ye Xiwen's future practice.

The sword intention danced vertically and horizontally in the space. It seemed powerful enough to break the Heaven.

Fan Ming's killing intention had started to produce real fire. Every time the spear rotated in his hands — it would cut open the vast sky and collapse the surrounding space. He was extremely powerful. He had unleashed the entire strength of half-step legendry's great complete realm.

He had forced the Sword Sage into a disadvantageous position. However, he hadn't displayed his full strength.

Sword Sage was the top sword expert of this generation. He had entered half-step legendry's great complete realm at a very young age. He had boundless future prospects. However, the Sword Sage had induced-out even more terrifying power from Fan Ming than usual because he was an outstanding genius. Consequently, the

‘outstanding’ Sword Sage had been suppressed by Fan Ming.

Fan Ming’s ice-cold eyes were extremely scary. His chilling long-spear could make people tremble with fear. It caused the destruction and rebirth of the space it passed through.

Even an ordinary spear would display the greatest might if placed in his hands since he had practiced his spear-skill to the pinnacle. In fact, his skill was very close to the Dao.

His spear was just like a wheeling disk that was set to grind the living creatures of this entire world.

However, Ye Xiwen couldn’t be taken lightly. His strength had increased enormously after he had condensed Mars in his inner solar system. Increasing strength was far more difficult for Ye Xiwen than it was for an average person. However, his strength increased far more than an average person’s would upon a successful encounter.

The Sword Sage was at the half-step legendry’s great complete realm, but his strength couldn’t be compared with Ye Xiwen’s.

“Clang!”

“Clang!”

“Clang!”

Fan Ming's wheeling spear clashed against the long sword that had been condensed from Ye Xiwen's sword intention. Sparks flew about. Their attacks were extremely fast. It was difficult to track their movements with naked eyes. However, the clash of their attacks unleashed a destructive force large-enough to smash mountains into pieces.

The Sword Tomb's people promptly retreated to a safe distance. They were dumbstruck by this battle. They didn't dare to approach the two fighters since their battle strength was astonishing, and their might was extremely terrifying.

Notes:

Buried Person Sword: It is the first move of 'Buried Sword Secrets' which is also called 'Sword Code'.

## Chapter 364: Slaughters Fan Ming

---

The strength of these two individuals was far beyond everyone's imagination. These people were elites in their own accord. But their strengths were far inferior to these two fighters. They were even stronger than the Sword Sage. Naturally, there was a difference of Heaven and Earth in the strengths of other people when compared to these two. These people wouldn't be able to block a single move if they were a part of this fight.

Everyone present on the scene wasn't just dumbstruck. They were scared and apprehensive in their hearts. Those two were experts of the younger generation, yet there still existed such a huge disparity between their strength and that of the others.

The space was fluctuating like the water surface due to the attacks of both parties. They were putting the entirety of their efforts, and were unleashing their incredible powers. The 'Real Elemental Energy' was boiling majestically within their bodies.

Everyone had realized that their life and death was dependent on Ye Xiwen. They would perish if he were to be defeated and killed. But, would they remain safe if he were to come out victorious?

Their attacks had thoroughly shattered the space. They weren't regarded as great lofty figures yet. But they had set-off huge vibrations in the space. They were constantly attacking each other and were unleashing their miraculous powers. It seemed as if a sea of energy had surged to engulf everything.

“Bang!”

The vault of the heaven had been cracked-open and their attacks were breaching the space. Fang Ming’s facial expression had turned exceptionally fierce. He had always been considered as the topmost young figure in the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He had never been treated this way. The look of disdain flashing on Ye Xiwen’s face was unacceptable to him.

“Die!” Fan Ming swept-out his spear. An endless amount of spear energy rushed forth and blotted-out the entire sky. Countless ‘energy spears’ made-up of Dao started to patrol at his side... these spears opened-up black cracks in the sky wherever they went. Each of these black cracks was extremely terrifying. And they rushed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him.

“You’re at a wrong today. And I’m doing the ‘good’ deed. You’ve killed so many our disciples. You’ve committed a crime that cannot be forgiven. You must die!” Fan Ming roared.

Ye Xiwen saw the energy spears blotting-out the sky, but his complexion didn’t change. He seemed a bit excited on the contrary. His entire body got covered in golden light and started to glow like an ancient god.

“I’ve killed many geniuses. But I’ve not killed the top geniuses in this territory yet!” Ye Xiwen burst into laughter. He then launched an attack while surfing on the golden divine waves.

It could be said that their skills had reached close to the concept

of Dao. The complementary waves generated during their battle were powerful enough to split the space. Their powers had reached the pinnacle of the half-step legendary realm. In fact, they exhibited a trace of the power of the sage realm.

Ye Xiwen's divine waves boiled under his foot. Every step he took made the space tremble; it seemed as if he could cause a quake in the empty space. The space was gradually trod to pieces by Ye Xiwen's steps. The long sword in his hand released astonishing sword energy in every direction.

His aura was so scary that it would make people believe that the 'sword god' himself had taken birth. An average slash of his sword had split-open the thick layer of earth. The crust of earth was first stirred-up, and then quelled by the attack.

It had seemed like an average sword move without much style. Yet its massive power had crushed a thick layer of earth. Nothing could resist this attack. This was the second move of 'Buried Sword Secrets'; it was called the 'Buried Earth Sword'!

Ye Xiwen wasn't parsimonious in burning the 'Spirit Dans' since there wasn't much time. But he had managed to deduce only up to the second move of 'Buried Sword Secrets'. However, he was far from the level of perfection. His understanding of the move had reached a considerably high-level at the most.

The power displayed was extremely dreadful even though he had only achieved the high-level.

Nothing could survive under the crushing impact of this terrifying sword move.

The spear technique practiced by Fan Ming was also difficult to deal with. He would shoot the energy spears, and they would spread like starlight. They'd cause the surrounding space to collapse. Then they'd fly far-away into the distance and tear the endless abyss of darkness.

“Bang!”

A horrifying explosion resounded, and the surrounding space began to tremble.

Many disciples of ‘Sword Tomb’ were dumbstruck by this. They couldn’t have withstood such terrifying attacks. They might’ve been just one or two levels inferior to these two, but this was enough to create a difference of Heaven and Earth.

“These two are terrifying. They are the experts of the younger generation, but we’re no match for them!”

“Coming across such individuals in this lifetime... I’m not sure whether we’re fortunate or unfortunate!”

“We’re not the strongest ones. We’ll most likely end-up becoming the bones to pave their road to invincibility!”

Their discussion hadn’t finished yet. However, the fight between



Ye Xiwen and Fan Ming had entered a super-heated stage.

Fan Ming held his long spear as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen like a peerless warrior. He forged ahead as he destroyed everything in his path. His boundless imposing aura had set-off an incredible storm.

Ye Xiwen's 'sword intention' began to wrap-up in his divinities. The 'sword intention' integrated with the divinities, and began to boil. It then shot towards Fan Ming.

"Bang!" this was a world-shaking attack. The two insanely powerful energy storms collided in the sky and scattered in every direction. Many half-step legendary seventh stage experts of the Sword Tomb were blown-away by the fearful force of the shock wave.

The terrifying shock wave swept towards Ye Xiwen's body, but couldn't budge him. That was because his comprehension of 'tyrant body technique' had reached the fifth layer.

Fan Ming retreated several steps. He had sustained some internal injuries due to that terrifying shock wave, and nearly spurted-out blood from his mouth.

Ye Xiwen recovered very quickly. Consequently, he quickly rushed-over. He attacked again, and went all-out this time. The 'sword intention' condensed into a sword, and swept down. The 'Buried Earth Sword' conveniently appeared in his hand in the blink of an eye, and rolled downward to crush its target.

Fan Ming only got enough time to block. However, how he could block such an attack? He was pressed down by the terrifying power, and was sent flying.

“Bang!” he went flying into a mountain, and came to a halt only when he crashed into the mountain’s peak. Several of his bones had been crushed into fine powder by Ye Xiwen’s sword power.

The experts of Sword Tomb became excited as they witnessed Ye Xiwen gain the upper hand. They would survive only if Ye Xiwen would have an upper hand in the battle.

The mountain was severed and crushed into pieces. The dust and smoke soared up into the sky. Fan Ming was baffled since he had never thought that his attack would be so destructive. He had never imagined that it would leave him in such a miserable state.

He was confident that he was un-matched in the younger generation. Even the prominent experts in the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall weren’t worthy opponents in his eyes. He considered himself invincible, and thought that he would be able to obtain the supreme position while he walked this road; sooner or later.

However, he had never expected that this attack would help Ye Xiwen to obtain the indisputably advantageous position.

Fan Ming had looked down upon Ye Xiwen. He had never imagined that Ye Xiwen would suppress him like this.

He was arrogant prior to this attack, and had carried an aloof appearance; as if he was the best in the world. He didn't even consider the disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall of his generation as worthy of his acknowledgement. Let alone the disciples of the True Martial University... he merely considered them to hail from a university that had declined long ago.

In fact, he was aware that several famous disciples of the True Martial University weren't present here. The Sword Sage or Luo Yi Hang weren't even close to being his opponent since they were only at half-step legendary ninth stage. This had made him look down on the True Martial University even more. He naturally hadn't thought that he'd end-up suffering such a heavy defeat at the hands of Ye Xiwen.

However, he didn't have the luxury to think more on this topic at this juncture. He moved slowly since the severe pain made him gasp. He promptly used his secret healing technique to restore some of his injuries. Then, he held his spear and rushed towards Ye Xiwen again.

The long spear became bigger and bigger in the sky. It soon started to appear like a giant dragon. It rushed towards Ye Xiwen, and applied its massive suppression force on him. This resulted in sonic boom which reverberated in all directions. One could tell that Fan Ming hadn't held back this time. It was needless to say that Ye Xiwen's terrifying strength had forced into taking this action.

Anyone with eyes could clearly see that he no longer dared to

underestimate Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen was very calm. But he wasn't willing to go easy on Fan Ming. Ye Xiwen had managed to thoroughly suppress, but with great difficulty. He couldn't possibly allow Fan Ming an opportunity to make a comeback. The 'sword intention' appeared in his hand, and emitted 'sword energy' that swept-out towards Fan Ming and pressed him down.

"Boom!" the terrifying clash between the two set-off layer-upon-layers of energy waves. They swept across the surroundings and applied a suppression which caused the space to collapse.

The shock waves also swept-out towards those two. Ye Xiwen didn't care since his body was extremely tyrannical. He charged inside those shock waves of energy and crossed it unhurt.

However, Fan Ming was prepared this time. He drew back to avoid these terrifying energy waves.

Ye Xiwen started to chase Fan Ming again. His body was far more tyrannical than Fan Ming's. He was fiercer and unbridled because of this. Fan Ming had to pay attention to several aspects while Ye Xiwen was constantly tempting him to fight. However, he didn't dare to engage Ye Xiwen head-on. Ye Xiwen's approach was different on the contrary; he was trying to find way to engage the enemy in a decisive face-to-face battle.

Ye Xiwen firmly believed that he should be able to defeat his opponent in a few moves. The outcome of a battle depended on

several aspect; strength being one of them. But Ye Xiwen had an overwhelming advantage since he possessed an intrepid body.

“Poisonous Dragon Impales!” Fan Ming shouted angrily. Suddenly, his spear evolved into a poisonous dragon. A massive amount of spirit energy congregated on the long spear as it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen to bite him to death.

Suddenly, a fine light flickered in Ye Xiwen’s eyes. He had finally spotted Fan Ming’s flaw. It was obvious that Fan Ming hadn’t practiced this ‘Poisonous Dragon Impales’ move to the pinnacle. It contained massive power, but it had exposed his weakness. Indeed it was merely a very small flaw, but this little chink was big enough for Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen brandished his long sword. It blossomed into a sword beam and routed the incoming ‘Poisonous Dragon Impales’ attack. It then pierced its way through the spear energy and advanced forward.

“Puchi!” the ‘sword intention’ eventually impaled Fan Ming’s body. His body exploded, and poured down as a rain of blood.

# Chapter 365: Becomes Famous In The University

---

Half a month's time had passed. A major event of the True Martial University had taken place. The university's original intention was to test the new disciples' abilities in the trials organized in the foreign battlefield. However, this trial had ended-up in the discovery of the sealed underground place where 'Star Colossus', the main offender who was responsible for the decline of the True Martial University, was imprisoned.

The nearby space had been sealed since then. It would've been possible to use transportation portals to go inside that underground world. However, the entire place had become the True Martial University's restricted zone.

It became clear from oral accounts of the disciples who had managed to come out alive that the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had sent a faction of their disciples into the True Martial University's territory, and had slaughtered many of the True Martial University's disciples. This matter had made the entire higher authority of the True Martial University furious. They had furiously decided to launch a full-scale attack on the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. However, later the envoy of the the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's faction arrived to meet with the Lord of the university in private. The price they had to pay in order to quell the True Martial University's rage remained a mystery.

The strength of the True Martial University and the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall was almost the same. Moreover, the True Martial University was within their rights in this situation. Therefore,

nobody would stand-on the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's side since they had acted very cheaply.

Many forces had risen abruptly after the decline of the True Martial University. These forces had mutually divided their territories. And they could not invade each other's area of dominion. Moreover, the very core of this 'Newcomer's Trial Competition' was to determine who among these new disciples would become the pillars of the True Martial University in the future.

But the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's disciples had slaughtered many disciples of the True Martial University. How could this not have increased their anger to the utmost?

The Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's loss was naturally greater. The mere loss of Fan Ming was equal to the overall losses of the True Martial University since such disciples were very rare to come-by. The True Martial University had lost a very few capable disciples. But the Xuan Yuan Palace's losses were much higher in this regard. Yet, people had ignored this point in its entirety. And the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had to face the consequence of their bad deeds. They could only blame themselves for blowing-off their cover by failing to carry out this task in secrecy.

These trials were supposed to continue for years' time. But the unexpected discovery of the underground seal caused this terms' trials to end ahead of time. And everyone earned points and rewards in accordance with their performance.

The tyrannical disciples had been promoted to core disciples.

Those with outstanding performance were made inner disciples. And those with average performance were made outer disciples.

Only the powerhouses of sage realm were eligible to become core disciples under normal circumstances. But Ye Xiwen was promoted to the rank of core disciple since his outstanding performance had single-handedly ruined the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's plot.

In fact, there were some among the upper echelon who had demanded to make an exception and promote Ye Xiwen to the rank of a 'true disciple' since his contribution had been very deserving. It could be said that he had single-handedly thwarted the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall's elaborate plan. This demonstrated that his meritorious service was indeed enough. It was sufficient to make an exception and make him a true disciple.

However, a part of the higher authority collectively criticized this idea. Meritorious service was one thing, but his current strength was far insufficient to become a core disciple. Only the disciples of sage realm could be made core disciples. They were literally breaking the rule by making this exception and ranking him as a core disciple. But the proposition to make him a 'true disciple' was insane in their eyes. Only the experts of Great Sage realm could become true disciples and enjoy the distinguished treatment. The disparity in Ye Xiwen's strength when compared to theirs... was too big.

However, the most important thing was that Ye Xiwen hadn't yet displayed his full potential. This was his flaw in this regard. The disciples in the half-step legendary stage were tested to see if they could become peerless geniuses in the future, and how big their



accomplishment would be. The Half-step legendary realm was to test the disciples and make a prediction about their future prospects. The more tyrannical a genius was — the farther he could walk. Ye Xiwen had merely reached the half-step legendary seventh stage. He still had to cultivate further in order to be treated as an elite disciple according to the standards of True Martial University.

A person could be considered as a ‘genius worthy of investing resources into’ if they could reach the half-step legendary ninth stage. Many resources would incline towards the said-individual then; but only then. The True Martial University would incline many resources towards them to help with their cultivation if one would match this criterion of university. He could then make a breakthrough into half-step legendry’s great complete realm. This was done with the intention to nurture them into the future pillars of the university.

Ye Xiwen’s strength had skipped levels to beat a far stronger opponent. It had attracted the attention of some higher authorities, but none paid much attention to it. After all, what kind of a genius wouldn’t have the ability to display the power of higher cultivation level? Many experts had done this during the battles on the ancient road on their path of join True Martial University. Ye Xiwen’s strength had indeed skipped a few levels with respect to his real cultivation level, but it wasn’t impossible to achieve. Some people relied on divine tools, and some relied on various others means to achieve a considerable rise in their power. In fact, some could even achieve the same degree of rise in their power as Ye Xiwen had. Taking the help of external means to reduce the gap in levels wasn’t the right path in the eyes of high-level authorities — nor did it represent that Ye Xiwen had enough potential. There was a possibility that he would get stuck at half-

step legendary seventh stage forever. Then, his future achievements would be negligible since the pinnacle of Great Sage realm would be out of his reach.

There could be a verifiable possibility of stepping into the Great Sage realm once he made a breakthrough to half-step legendary ninth stage. Moreover, one could get a hint of a person's future potential in the half-step legendary realm. It couldn't be guaranteed that the future would be the same as anticipated since every person had their own fortuitous encounters to credit. However, these guesses turned out to be accurate most of the times.

Ye Xiwen had made a great meritorious service. However, many high-level authorities believed that he hadn't displayed enough potential. It wouldn't be appropriate in their opinion if he would be hastily promoted to the rank of a 'true disciple'.

The high-level experts of Law enforcement hall had especially made every effort to prevent his promotion. Eventually the topic to make Ye Xiwen a 'true disciple' had been left unsettled.

Of course, these were just gossips. Different people had different opinions on the matter. No one knew what the higher authorities had discussed. However, Ye Xiwen's fame sky-rocketed after the news spread out.

His reputation had risen steeply inside True Martial University; it had come to rival the fame of those genuine disciples who were called 'heaven's pride'.

“Ha ha, I am really happy. Ye Xiwen didn’t have big reputation before. However, he killed a formidable expert of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. The Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s plan backfired this time, and they’ve suffered a huge loss. They have no choice but to swallow their pride and bear it!”

“Indeed, the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had made an elaborate plot. All the disciples of the True Martial University may have perished if Ye Xiwen had been there!”

“Fan Ming was used as a stepping stone. It has raised our True Martial University reputation. We now have two formidable geniuses of the ‘heaven’s pride’ level. First one is that ‘Sword Sage’ who has established the ‘Sword Tomb’ ground. He made a breakthrough into half-step legendry’s great complete realm to enter the level of the ‘heaven’s pride’!

“And the second one is that Ye Xiwen; he is clearly a monster. Fan Ming had an illustrious reputation inside the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. He was a prominent disciple of the ‘heaven’s pride’ level. But even he died at Ye Xiwen’s hands. I can tell that Ye Xiwen will have boundless future prospects!”

“We have disciples like the ‘Titan body’ guy, the one with Heavenly Phoenix body, Han Bin Wang, honorable Senior Guang Ming, Qin Wang, Huangjin Shi, Sword Sage, and Ye Xiwen. There are a total of eight ‘heaven’s pride’ disciples, and they all possess the strength of half-step legendry’s great complete realm. There has never been this many in the previous generations!” (1)

“It is too early to say that. Ye Xiwen’s fighting strength is equal to half-step legendry’s great complete realm. It is astonishing, but his future is uncertain. What will be the use of his present strength if he fails to make a breakthrough into the half-step legendry’s great complete realm? His strength is comparable to that of those other experts of the ‘heaven’s pride’ level... but what will happen if he fails to make further breakthroughs? The gap will only widen in the future. Then, he’ll end-up becoming a laughing stock!”

Some people were discontented with the sudden rise in Ye Xiwen’s reputation. So, they mocked his name around.

Ye Xiwen didn’t care about the ups-and-downs because he was too busy with something else. Countless people had challenged him in the days following his rise to fame. The other members of the well-known ‘eight peak experts’, who were called ‘heaven’s pride’, were confirmed to have reached the half-step legendry’s great complete realm. Moreover, they could even challenge people above their own level. They would only find trouble if they would come across an expert of semi-sage realm. But they were unmatched in their level.

Consequently, everyone knew that they couldn’t go to them asking for trouble. However, Ye Xiwen was the exception. He had been designated the title of ‘heaven’s pride’. But, he was only at half-step legendary seventh stage. There were many new disciples with the same strength. And many people couldn’t bear the sudden rise of his fame. In fact, there were many who believed that he didn’t deserve this fame.

These people were top-geniuses of their regions. They were okay

with disciples of half-step legendry's great complete realm being called 'heaven's pride'. But, they couldn't accept that someone like Ye Xiwen had obtained the same title. Who was he in front of them? He wasn't even that famous earlier. How did he become so famous suddenly?

Ye Xiwen had risen to fame because he had killed Fan Ming. The man used to be a 'heaven's pride' level disciple of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. However, everyone thought that Ye Xiwen had grabbed a cheap bargain because Fan Ming had been injured by the Sword Sage.

Ye Xiwen didn't have any outstanding abilities in their eyes. He was no big deal.

It was hard for them to accept this fact. Many people thought that they could surpass Ye Xiwen. They wanted to use him as their stepping stone. However, how he could allow them to succeed that easily? He was no pushover to begin with. He tidied-up about a dozen elites who boasted illustrious reputation in order to scare the others off. In fact, he had wiped the floor with these elites.

The experts who had posed as so-called elite geniuses weren't even able to withstand a single move of Ye Xiwen's.

More than a dozen people of half-step legendary ninth stage were unable to stop Ye Xiwen's one move. Their strength was marginally lower than that of Luo Yi Hang and Sword Sage. However, they hadn't been able to withstand even a single move of his. This had frightened everyone.

Ye Xiwen got several days of peace after this incident.

Ye Xiwen didn't pay any little attention towards those rumors and slanders. In fact, he wouldn't have bothered to engage them if not to deter and scare-off the others.

Ye Xiwen had a desire to fight with experts from all over the world, but only if the enemy would be a top-tier powerhouse. He had no interest in fighting average experts.

However, he wasn't disturbed after this incident. He might not have great fighting strength like those other 'heaven's pride' title holders. But, he could easily tidy the rest of them up. Everyone had come to understand this clearly.

Ye Xiwen didn't care about the rumors. He continued to refine that Star Colossus into a blood slave.

Ye Xiwen's overall strength had at-most reached the half-step legendry's great complete realm. And his real cultivation was at half-step legendary seventh stage. The refining process of this Star Colossus went far beyond the scope of his present cultivation level.

Notes:

Han Bing Wang = Cold Ice King

Da Guang Ming = Great Radiance

Huangjin Shi = Golden Lion

# Chapter 366: Very Rich 'Hidden Star City'

---

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

Violent roars emanated from the blood pond. The Star Colossus' body twisted and turned in the boiling blood pond. Layer upon layer of blood waves splashed-out from the pond.

"Dammit! Boy, I won't forgive you for this!" the Star Colossus roared.

Ye Xiwen stood outside the blood pond. He stared at that Star Colossus with his ice-cold eyes. His refusal to accept defeat wasn't very surprising. It would've been impossible for Ye Xiwen to capture the Star Colossus without the mysterious space's intervention. Moreover, he couldn't kill it even though he had caught it. He could only use this method to scrape-off its power; bit by bit.

Ye Xiwen recalled how he had been forced by this bastard to refine the devil seed inside his body. Suddenly, anger flourished in his heart.

"Try to say it again once you come out. I'll turn you into the most loyal blood slave!" Ye Xiwen clenched his teeth as coldly looked at



the Star Colossus.

“How long will it take to refine it?” Ye Xiwen turned around and asked Ye Mo.

“It’s only a wisp of the real Star Colossus’s soul, but its strength is at the pinnacle of the sage realm. It’s one step away from the Great Sage realm. It can be possible to refine it only if you’re in the sage realm!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen slightly frowned. Even five years wouldn’t be enough for him to enter the semi-sage realm at to his current speed of progress.

“You cannot kill me. I’ll cause a bloodbath in your damn world once my main body comes out!” the Star Colossus roared.

“Is there no other way?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“There is a way. You can use this Star Colossus’s energy to refine it into your blood slave. That’s a possible way because this wisp of its soul is connected to its real soul. So, you can draw energy from its real body. It is quite simple. But, you’ll need great amount of ‘Spirit Dans’ for that. In fact, more than 50 million ‘Spirit Dans’ are required to refine a mere semi-sage level blood slave!” Ye Mo spoke after doing a bit of calculation.

Ye Mo obviously knew that Ye Xiwen wasn’t looking to refine a blood slave of semi-sage realm since there wouldn’t be much

difference in its strength with respect to Ye Xiwen's. Moreover, he didn't wish to produce many blood slaves either. In fact, blood slaves of legendary level were out of question since he himself could kill many experts of that level.

However, a blood slave above semi-sage level was valuable to him. But, even a semi-sage level blood slave was enough to bankrupt him. He only had about 30 million 'Spirit Dans' in his stock along with some rare treasures. And items weren't the kind one would wish to sell. So, Ye Xiwen naturally didn't wish to sell them.

He had plundered many 'Spirit Dans' from the body of Fan Ming and other disciples of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. Otherwise, it would've been impossible for him to save up so many 'Spirit Dans'; especially when considering his quick consumption-rate.

"You can do this. You'll need to consume a lot of 'Spirit Dans', but it is advantageous to have it. You can continue to strengthen it. You can advance it to sage realm as long as you have enough 'Spirit Dans'; even further until you've sucked this Star Colossus dry!" Ye Mo grinned and said. Its lips turned dark red. He had once followed the Devil King for countless years. What kind of cruel and bloody methods had it not seen? Human beings could be considered at the 'top' when it came to displaying sinister and cunning attitude. However, when it comes to cruelty and brutality... the Devil race was ahead of any other race, "You could let him wail himself to death!"

Ye Xiwen looked towards the Star Colossus. He didn't say anything... other than this, "I'll leave everything in your hands!"

Ye Xiwen was only focusing on the end result. A blood slave of semi-sage realm would be of great help to him. However, it was important for him to find a way to earn 'Spirit Dans'. Presently, he needed to fill the gap of 20 million 'Spirit Dans'.

Semi-sage realm meant that one had taken a half-step into the sage realm; however, it had the word 'sage' attached to it.

Ye Xiwen could quickly enter the sage realm if he had a Star Colossus of semi-sage realm by his side. He could go to many places and have lots of adventures if he had one by his side. He wouldn't have to remain confined to a limited number of 'safer' places.

Ye Xiwen emerged from the space inside the Heavenly Source Mirror. The 'Hidden Star Peak' was deserted at this time. The Master and Big Brother weren't present. The Second Sister was undergoing a closed-door training. The Third Brother had gone to look for the Big Brother and the Master.

The Fourth Brother Yang Wen Jun and the Fifth Sister Deng Shui Xin weren't present at the peak either. The 'Hidden Star Peak' didn't have many people to begin with. Therefore, it felt as if everyone had fled while taking a walk on this peak.

Not far from there — the wolf cub was scurrying behind a spirit beast on another peak. The wolf cub's strength was far higher than that spirit beast's. The wolf cub was doing this 'just' to enjoy the adventure of the chase; nothing more. He was a good for nothing freeloader.

Ye Xiwen looked at the incomparably spacious and isolated 'Hidden Star Peak'. He couldn't help but sigh. The road to the revival of the 'Hidden Star Peak' was long and seemingly endless; it was very far away from its revival.

Suddenly, a streamer of light flashed in the distance. The shadow of a person fell onto the peak. He was a disciple of the Complete Truth level. He could be regarded as a genius in the outside world. However, he was merely a trivial disciple here.

"Greetings, Brother Ye!" that disciple promptly cupped his hands in greeting as he saw Ye Xiwen. He was older than Ye Xiwen, but strength was everything in this world. Supreme strength could gain respect from everyone; irrespective of their age.

"What happened?" Ye Xiwen asked as he noticed the look of anxiety on the youth's face.

Very few people used to visit the 'Hidden Star Peak'. Its own disciples were handful in number. It had declined long ago; so not many people arrived here nowadays. In fact, it was normal to not see anyone on this peak for an entire day.

"Brother Ye, I'm a merchant from the 'Hidden Star City'!" that disciple introduced himself.

The True Martial University's campus was nearly as big as a large country's. Several disciples even held jobs inside the university. There were merchants, farmers, etc. Obviously, the nature of their

jobs was entirely different. These farmer-disciples were different from ordinary farmers. They used to plant various kinds of spiritual fruits. The merchant disciples traded divine materials and the most precious rare treasures. And the nature of their trade was also different.

The True Martial University was surrounded by a large city; in fact, the city was an agglomerate of many smaller ones. These cities belonged to various inheritances. Basically, every 'Top 100 Inheritance' had a huge city of its own. And every city was privately owned by an inheritance.

One mustn't underestimate them by taking them for ordinary cities. They were the most flourishing cities. The experts of truth realm or above used to trade items between themselves in these cities. This wasn't an ordinary thing. A humongous amount of tax was collected by these cities every year. In fact, each city was capable of collecting more tax than a small country since.

Initially, the subordinate cities of the 'Top 100 Inheritances' were only open for their own disciples. Each of these inheritances had nearly hundreds-of-thousands of people. Some even had up to a million disciples. They obviously didn't have space to rent to outsiders.

However, the 'Hidden Star Peak' was different. It had a handful of disciples. No one had any dominance on this peak; apart from its six disciples. Moreover, none of them was good at managing things. Therefore, Hidden Star Peak had only one way to survive, and that was to rent the city's places to outsiders. Various kinds of booths and houses had been rented out.

This wasn't an issue for other inheritances. They had several hundred-thousand disciples; with some having over a million. Hence, there would always be some people who were good at managing things or running businesses. Even if one were to count the everyday-revenue for such an inheritance — the number would reach astronomical figures.

However, the Hidden Star Peak's 'Hidden Star City' didn't have an excellent internal management system. In fact, their taxation rate was about 1% of other cities' taxation rate. However, the annual collection was still over than 2 billion 'Spirit Dans'. So, one could imagine how terrifying its annual trade must've been.[1]

This was because... the 'Hidden Star City' had a low tax rate. Therefore, many small inheritances that didn't have an independent city had immersed themselves inside the 'Hidden Star City', and flourished due to lesser trade taxation. This boosted the city's collections, and made it livelier than other cities. Other cities might have some vacancies, but 'Hidden Star City' was always overcrowded. In fact, it could be considered an extremely expensive land.

These cities inside the True Martial University were built to accommodate millions of disciples in its peak time. The current population residing in these cities was nothing in comparison. It had been many years since the university's decline, and it was rare to see these cities fully-occupied.

However, this 'Hidden Star City' was an exception since the overall taxation rate was only 1% of other cities'. Therefore, the tax

rate could be said to be extremely low. This was impossible to happen in other cities. Hence, many disciples had migrated to the 'Hidden Star Peak', and this had given rise to an overcrowded situation. After all said and done, the city's overall revenue was ahead of several others despite the low tax rate.

Other inheritances had millions of disciples. However, this peak only had a handful of disciples who'd inherit the 'Hidden Star Peak' someday. It could be said that they'd die with happiness when the time came.

Notes:

Understanding the concept behind the city's success would require some knowledge on the institution that was followed in ancient societies. Taxes were often fixed despite the volume of business one carried out. Meaning... a guy making a million would have to pay the same tax as guy making just ten. The chapter would make more sense on an economical level if one were to read it with this concept in mind. [This isn't mentioned in the text though; just a bit of economic history.]

# Chapter 367: Which Bastard Dares To Cause Trouble?

---

Only the ‘heaven’s pride’ level experts were capable of obtaining expensive resources in any inheritance, while the majority of disciples could only obtain very limited resources. However, this wasn’t a problem for the ‘Hidden Star Peak’. Its annual revenue was astronomical. But, there were only a few disciples on whom it could spend this revenue. They basically had everything that they required in Hidden Star Peak’s storage. Moreover, the relationship between the fellow disciples was very friendly. They didn’t fight or scheme against each other like the disciples of other inheritances.

“Brother Ye, you must come quickly; see what’s happening! Those people of ‘War Dead Star Peak’ have gone too far this time!” that disciple spoke with a trace of anger in his voice.

Ye Xiwen scanned the information about the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ stored in his mind. It was considered among the extremely tyrannical ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ at one point. However, it had fewer people since the times had changed. There was a huge difference between its overall might and that of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ at present. So, it had been thrown out of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ list since it had been replaced by some other inheritance.

However, ‘War Dead Star Peak’ had been in the limelight since the last one-thousand years. It was an inheritance with a heritage that had been passed down for ten-thousand years. Its rich heritage was slowly flourishing with the passage of time. And it was striving to enter the ranks of ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ again.



The reason was simple. The ‘Top 100 inheritances’ were the real foundation of the True Martial University. Every peak’s chief and every city’s Lord inside these ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ had the power to decide all kinds of affairs of the True Martial University.

An inheritance in the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ list held 50% veto-power in all matters. Even the University Head was incapable of overruling their decision. This rule had persisted inside the True Martial University since countless years. Generally, the responsibility of every matter of the ‘True Martial University’ lay upon the chiefs of ‘Top 10’ Great Inheritances and the University Head. In fact, they would only conduct a general-meeting if they had come across a big matter.

The ‘War Dead Star Peak’ wouldn’t dare to expect that it could enter the ranks of ‘Top 10’ Great Inheritances. However, it had more-than-enough strength to snatch a place for itself in the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’.

However, the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ only had 100 positions. One would have to eliminate the other inheritances in order to occupy a position among them. Consequently, the ambitious inheritances used to compete quite fiercely with the ones hanging towards the end of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’.

However, quite unfortunately, ‘War Dead Star Peak’ was one of the top inheritances which held the strength to challenge the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’; whereas ‘Hidden Star Peak’s’ case was opposite to it. It was hanging at the bottom of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’. Hence, it was the target of several strong inheritances which

aspired to gain position among the Top 100 Inheritances. The ‘War Dead Star Peak’ especially wasn’t very far from ‘Hidden Star Peak’, and had been eyeing its position.

Joining the list of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’ wouldn’t just greatly increase their power to voice their opinion in the affairs of the True Martial University... it would also give them the power to monopolize a big city. The ‘Hidden Star City’ earned astronomical revenue. How wouldn’t one be jealous of it?

“The disciples of ‘War Dead Star Peak’ have blockaded the ‘Hidden Star City’. They aren’t allowing anyone to go inside or come outside. Anyone who tries gets attacked!” that disciple added, “They inflicted serious injuries to Brother Yang and Sister Deng!”

“What!?” Anger flourished inside Ye Xiwen’s heart as soon as he heard this. The ‘War Dead Star Peak’ had been continuously coveting ‘Hidden Star Peak’ in the recent years. However, this was the first time that they had gone this far. They had blockaded the city-gate and had injured the disciples of the same Sect. This matter particularly involved two inheritances. They must keep aside their prestige to deal with it.

“How can this be?”

“The disciples of ‘War Dead Star Peak’ said that their chief has rejected the qualifications of your ‘Hidden Star Peak’ to remain as one of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’, and has applied to be a replacement. They will take over the ‘Hidden Star City’ once they replace your inheritance!” that disciple’s complexion turned ugly

as he replied. People like him would side-with the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ in this case.

No other city apart from the ‘Hidden Star City’ gave such favorable business conditions. In fact, it was become impossible for these people to obtain a front-positioned store. This was because the frontal stores were in the possession of each peak’s own experts. In fact, a sage realm or great sage realm expert would usually be standing behind a storefront.

They didn’t have enough space for themselves. So how could they possibly rent it out to the outsiders? However, the situation was different in the ‘Hidden Star City’ since it only had a handful of disciples in total. Therefore, the city was openly accessible to the other people. Moreover, it had very little tax. Such ideal business conditions couldn’t be found anywhere.

These people coming from small sects and small family backgrounds would be swept-out of the city if the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ were to gain control of the city.

“Brother Yang and Sister Deng tried to argue with them. They were injured by those guys as a result!” The disciple said, “I was in disarray, and ran here to inform Brother Ye about this!”

Ye Xiwen heard that and suddenly became angry. He hadn’t opened his mouth to reply when the foul-mouthed wolf cub arrived beside him. “Ye Xiwen, let’s go clean them up. We’ll beat them in one fell swoop; we ought to teach those bastards a lesson!”

The wolf cub was overexcited at the prospect to stir up trouble.

Ye Xiwen didn't hesitate either. He trod on the rainbow light with the wolf cub, and rushed towards the 'Hidden Star City'.

The entire 'Hidden Star City' was in a chaotic mess. Many legendary or truth level experts had opened shops for their livelihood in the city. Some of these shops were owned by genuine powerhouses, but they had hired some legendary or truth level experts to run these shops since they didn't wish to spend their personal time and energy on this matter.

'Hidden Star City' had never come across such a situation since the day of its establishment — its own people had been stopped outside the gate. Over a hundred experts of the 'War Dead Star Peak' had blockaded the gate. Even the weakest among them was an expert of the legendary eighth stage. Many experts were at legendary ninth stage, and a few were at legendry's great complete realm. This wasn't the strongest lineup. However, the 'Hidden Star City' lacked a proper backup on their side. Hence, it had no means to deal with such powerful enemies.

Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin had been wounded. They were lying in a pool of blood.

"This place will belong to our 'War Dead Star Peak' soon. You people will have to depart. You only have five days. Pack your stuff and get out of here. This place will be known as 'War Dead Star City' in the future!" an expert of legendry's great complete realm shouted loudly. The sound wave soared like a dragon's roar and spread across the entire 'Hidden Star City'.

The experts of 'War Dead Star Peak' weren't afraid of the residents and merchants of this city because these people had come from small inheritances. They didn't have a strong backing. So, forcing them to leave was just a matter of a few words; nothing more.

They didn't even bother to pay attention to 'Hidden Star Peak'. In fact, it had declined and fallen from its status as one of the 'Top 100 Inheritances' as far as most people were concerned. It was an insignificant inheritance that only had a few disciples. This wasn't a cause of concern for them.

It didn't have much strength. However, the 'Hidden Star City' still occupied the status of the most populous and affluent city. There was no way this wouldn't make people envious.

However, these people wouldn't need to be envious anymore because this city would soon be ruled by 'War Dead Star Peak'.

"What? The 'War Dead Star Peak' will have the control over the 'Hidden Star City'? How is this possible? The ownership of this city hasn't changed since the last ten thousand years. It cannot be changed!"

"Yes. The 'Hidden Star Peak' has a very few disciples, but it has a lot of wealth. How will it not make people jealous?"

"Indeed! Not to mention that the chief of 'War Dead Star Peak' has applied to replace the 'Hidden Star Peak' in order to become

the new member of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’. This has happened numerous times in the past. The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ was once amongst the ‘Top 10’ Great Inheritances, but it has declined. It will eventually be substituted...!”

“No outstanding disciple has joined ‘Hidden Star Peak’ in the past several hundred years; besides the surprising entry of Ye Xiwen this year. Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin are quite strong compared to us. However, they are far inferior when compared with those heaven’s pride level experts. And both of these disciples are over hundred years old, but they still haven’t entered the semi-sage realm!”

“The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had been destroyed long ago. It doesn’t have any outstanding disciples anymore. No wonder it has declined!”

There were many old disciples of several-hundred-years of age who considered it unworthy, and hence expressed their disdainful views.

“These people think that it’s too weak. Can’t they open their eyes and see that ‘Hidden Star Peak’ has been able to maintain its rank for so many years despite such a small number of people in it? There has to be something up their sleeves. Many people have jealously looked at the wealth of the ‘Hidden Star City’ in the past as well. However, not many people have dared to launch an attack on it. The ‘War Dead Star Peak’ is so impatient that it dared to pick a fight!”

“Ha ha, we’ll have a good show this time!”

“‘War Dead Star Peak’ is very strong. The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ isn’t easy to deal with either. This is going to be interesting. However, it will be better if the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ retains the charge of the city. If the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ were to take the charge... where will we have our foothold?”

Everyone was discussing among themselves when they suddenly heard a sound. A massive rainbow light fell down swiftly from the horizon. It was accompanied by a loud shout, “Which son of a b\*tch dares to cause trouble for our ‘Hidden Star Peak’?”

Then, an astonishing ‘sword intention’ took form in the sky. It condensed into a ten thousand feet long double-edged sword and swept towards the group of ‘War Dead Star Peak’ disciples to chop them. The ice-cold killing intention was scary, and the terrifying ‘sword intention’ left the people with an illusion of getting cleft into two halves.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Those experts of legendary eighth and ninth stages didn’t have the strength to counter this terrifying power. They were sent flying in the sky. They spurted-out mouthfuls of blood and went flying for more than a dozen kilometers. It was as if a baby was facing an adult; they had no strength to counter this power.

Only five experts of legendry's great complete realm were able to resist this 'sword intention'. They had collaborated to block the incoming sword attack.

Suddenly, that astonishing rainbow light fell down. The rainbow light dispersed to reveal the figures of a man and a wolf.

Many sharp-eyed people recognized that invincible figure.

"It's Ye Xiwen. His name and fame have spread throughout the university since he has joined 'Hidden Star Peak'!"

"Indeed; he really lives up to his reputation. He has tyrannical strength. That one sword attack defeated those experts of legendary eighth and ninth stage, and sent them flying. They aren't people with low abilities. In fact, they are considered as strong disciples in the 'War Dead Star Peak'. Excluding the core disciples... these disciples have enjoyed a good reputation!"

"Are you Ye Xiwen?" one of those five disciples of legendry's great complete realm stepped forward and asked. He was clad in a fire-colored robe. There was a frown on his face.



## Chapter 368: Completely Victorious

---

“Get lost!” Ye Xiwen didn’t reply. His complexion turned ice-cold as he shouted coldly.

That expert clad in the fire-colored robe felt embarrassed by this. His complexion turned ashen. He clenched his teeth and said, “Ye Xiwen, who do you think you are? Do you really think you’re a heaven’s pride level expert?”

“Get lost!” Ye Xiwen coldly squeezed out these words from the gap between his teeth yet again.

“Ye Xiwen, you’re going too far!” another expert stepped forward and shouted.

They hadn’t paid much attention towards Ye Xiwen from the beginning. According to the rumors — Ye Xiwen had the strength of half-step legendry’s great complete realm. However, these people also had considerable strength since they were at legendry’s great complete realm. Moreover, they were five of them and Ye Xiwen was alone. He couldn’t possibly do anything to them on his own.

They would’ve already launched an attack on Ye Xiwen if they hadn’t been dominated by his sword attack a moment ago.

“Get lost!” Ye Xiwen repeated the same words again. He didn’t say anything else. He had said those words very faintly. However, these people suddenly couldn’t bear to see the look of contempt in

his eyes. They weren't as good as those other heaven's pride level experts who received everyone's attention and were considered as treasure by the entire True Martial University. But, they were still considered top-tier experts among the inner disciples. An enemy of semi-sage realm or sage realm expert would've been a problem. However, their enemy wasn't even an expert of half-step legendry's great complete realm, and had still dared to pull such a stunt before them.

The battle between Fan Ming and Sword Sage had dragged on for a long time. That had exhausted both of them. Ye Xiwen had merely taken advantage of that. This thought had deeply-rooted itself inside everyone. The fact that Ye Xiwen had just defeated some experts of legendary ninth stage hadn't changed their perception of him. That was because there was a difference of heaven and earth between the experts of legendary ninth stage and legendry's great complete realm.

“Ye Xiwen, you think that you're outstanding because you've made a great name for yourself or something? You simply cannot imagine the difference between your 'Hidden Star Peak' and our 'War Dead Star City'. Soon, this 'Hidden Star City' will be a property of our 'Dead Star Peak'. Therefore, it's in your best interest to leave right now!” that expert stated in anger. However, Ye Xiwen didn't pay attention towards the sullen mannerism of these handful-of-disciples of 'War Dead Star Peak'.

“Get lost!” Ye Xiwen's words were as cold as before. His imposing aura had started to surge.

“F\*k you, Ye Xiwen. You refuse a toast... only to be forced to

drink a forfeit. Today you shall die without a burial site!” a legendry’s great complete realm expert of the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ shouted. His countenance had turned dark red. He brandished his long blade and launched an attack at Ye Xiwen. An incomparably terrifying and sharp blade-attack cut-through the vast sky and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

“Ye Xiwen, let’s beat these guys-up and crush them to pieces!” the wolf cub shouted as he scurried beside him.

Ye Xiwen sneered and stretched-out his big hands. He didn’t need anything else... his hands forged ahead to face the incoming attack.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s hands grabbed the sword attack of that expert of legendry’s great complete realm. The two terrifying attacks shook the sky as they collided. It seemed as if two raging waves had crashed against the shore.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen coldly snorted. His hands started to emit endless golden light. Suddenly, that long blade was ripped apart by the golden light. Then, an exceptionally terrifying power surged-up as spiraling energies rushed forth.

“Puff!” the arm of that expert of the legendary great complete realm was turned into a group of blood fog. His bones were broken into fragments and were sent swirling in the air.

“Aaah!” that expert screamed due to the unbearable pain. His loud screams transformed into layers of sound waves and diffused in the surroundings. The surrounding space began to distort

severely. Fortunately, the ‘Hidden Star City’ had a fine array of defensive barriers. Otherwise, it would’ve sustained considerable damage.

“Stop!” An expert of the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ was extremely shocked to see the manner in which his comrade had been thoroughly suppressed by just one move of Ye Xiwen’s. Hence, he promptly roared to stop Ye Xiwen.

However, a lot of anger had accumulated inside Ye Xiwen’s heart. It couldn’t possibly have reduced in such a short time.

Ye Xiwen pretended as if hadn’t heard anything. He released a golden light from his body and trod on the rainbow light until he arrived in front of that expert of legendry’s great complete realm. He then twisted his waist backward and shoved a kick into that expert’s body.

“Bang!” that expert was sent flying in the sky by his kick. The bones in his entire body had been broken by the kick. He went flying and crashed against a mountain peak several kilometers away.

“Bang!” he collided against the mountain peak with a force so terrifying that it severed the structure. It was hard to tell whether that expert had survived the collision or not.

Ye Xiwen’s one attack had deterred everyone. He had effortlessly defeated an expert of legendry’s great complete realm. Moreover, no one knew if the victim had survived or not. Ye Xiwen’s

tyrannical strength had left everyone baffled.

“Humph, you guys are acting recklessly!” Ye Xiwen sneered. His ‘sword intention’ frantically condensed into a long sword. It rose against the wind and turned bigger-and-bigger in the sky. Eventually, it transformed into a very big sword and then rushed towards that young man clad in fire-colored robe to chop him.

“Bang!” that young man promptly retaliated to block the incoming attack. However, how he could be Ye Xiwen’s opponent? That huge sword crushed the bones of his hands into fragments. His entire body pounded into the soil of the ‘Hidden Star City’; just like an artillery shell. Only his head remained sticking-out of the ground, and blood gushed-out unceasingly from his mouth.

Ye Xiwen grasped the startling great sword in his hand as he mercilessly looked towards those remaining three experts of legendry’s great complete realm. His gaze was ice-cold, unforgiving and full of killing intention. The opposite party had blocked Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin at the gate of ‘Hidden Star City’, and had then severely wounded them. Anger had flourished inside Ye Xiwen’s heart because of this matter.

Ye Xiwen hadn’t been a part of the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ for long. However, he harbored an extraordinary sense of belonging towards this peak. The reason was simple. The fellow disciples on this peak got along well with each other, and shared a harmonious relationship. They didn’t fight and scheme against each other like the disciples of other inheritances did. Ye Xiwen liked this atmosphere very much.

The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had a very few disciples. Therefore, they were very much united.

“Ye Xiwen, what’re you doing? Do you wish to provoke our ‘War Dead Star Peak’, and break-out an all-out conflict between our inheritances?” An expert of legendry’s great complete realm looked at Ye Xiwen’s cold eyes with a hint of fear in his own. He seemed afraid of looking into Ye Xiwen’s eyes.

He had climbed-up a stack of corpses and swam out of the sea of blood to get here. He was regarded as a genius. He was a well-known figure among the inner disciples. However, even someone like him didn’t dare to look into Ye Xiwen’s eyes.

The fighting strength that Ye Xiwen had displayed was too tyrannical. The rumor wasn’t false. But the rumor about him picked-up a cheap bargain because of the Sword Sage’s bullsh\*t. The disciples of the ‘Sword Tomb’ who had witness the scene when Ye Xiwen had killed Fan Ming didn’t dare to say that he had obtained any help from the Sword Sage. However, the other people had refused to believe it. Rather, they had chosen to believe in the ordinary explanation present in the other rumor to console their hearts.

However, it had become clear that how ridiculous that rumor was. One simply couldn’t say that Ye Xiwen would need any help considering his current strength. Suddenly, that expert recalled the first edition of the rumor – it wasn’t Ye Xiwen who had obtained help from the Sword Sage. On the contrary, he had saved the Sword Sage.

“Get lost; you motherf\*kers!” Ye Xiwen’s slender arm lifted the great sword and brandished it towards that expert.

“Bang!”

Another expert was pounded into the ground by Ye Xiwen like a radish. One couldn’t say whether he was alive or not.

Ye Xiwen didn’t care about the possible outbreak of a conflict between the two inheritances and bullsh\*t like that. These people had arrived here and had blockaded the entrance gate... so they had it coming. Moreover, he had given them a prior warning, but they gave him no face and seemed prepared to fight it out. Therefore, it naturally didn’t matter to him now. Ye Xiwen’s sword would’ve slaughtered them all by now if there were no witnesses to this scene.

“I don’t give a crap whether the two peaks have friendly relations or not!”

“Get the hell out of here!”

Ye Xiwen’s two loud sonic booms resounded as the two experts fell from the sky and plunged into the earth like two artillery shells. Their bones were shattered by Ye Xiwen’s attack.

“He is extremely ferocious. He has effortlessly defeated five experts of legendry’s great complete realm. Now nobody can say that he isn’t a heaven’s pride level expert!”

“He has the fighting strength of great complete realm. However, there was a huge gap between his fighting strength and theirs!”

“This is a difference between top-notch talents and mediocre people. That’s why they’re called heaven’s pride experts!”

“Now I believe that Ye Xiwen must’ve really killed Fan Ming with his own strength. That Fan Ming might have gone against the heaven’s will in the future if he hadn’t been taken care off!”

“Just you wait! I told you that we’d get to see a good show. The ‘War Dead Star Peak’ has scaled enormous growth in these past years. However, the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ cannot be taken lightly either. It seems that it has been gradually covering-up its shortcomings!”

“I still want the ‘Hidden Star City’ to win. If it were to lose... then I’m afraid we’ll have to leave this place. I’ve lived here for hundreds of years. I tell you... no place can be better than this city!”

Ye Xiwen turned around and descended next to Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin; they were lying unconscious on the ground. Yang Wen Jun had sustained more severe wounds among the two. Deng Shui Xin had been a bit fortunate in comparison.

Ye Xiwen promptly took out some medicinal pills from the ‘Heavenly Source Mirror’ and hastily fed them to his injured fellow-disciples.



The two of them began to breathe heavily soon enough, and eventually gained some respite.

“Dammit! You’ve done a good job. Now kill these bastards!” Yang Wen Jun opened his mouth and roared. His own roar affected the wounds on his body, and he grimaced in pain.

“I haven’t been that badly injured by these people. Let Big Brother come back. He’ll pick-up a fight with that ‘War Dead Star Peak’. How dare they bully ‘Hidden Star Peak’?” Deng Shui Xin was quite intrepid as well.

Ye Xiwen came to know everything from their mouth. The situation had been bad from the beginning. The opposite party wasn’t ready to retreat, and was using every method to block them outside the city. But these two had remained extremely stubborn. However, the opposite party was stubborn as well. These two experts were unlikely to suffer the losses since they were experts of legendry’s great complete realm. However, the opposite party had five experts of same realm. They combined and attacked Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin, and defeated them severely. In fact, these two had come close to getting killed.

“Who is Ye Xiwen?!” a loud sonic-boom-like shout sounded from afar.

# Chapter 369: Big Brother Shows Up!

---

“Who is Ye Xiwen!?” a loud sonic boom sounded from afar.

Ye Xiwen saw dozens of astonishing rainbow light coming towards him. Dozens of intrepid figures were treading on those rainbow lights. They were being led by an old man clad in black robe. His hair was crowned-up like the head of a Siberian crane. There was a hint of a pleasantly surprised look spread across his face. It seemed as if he was unable to hide this look.

Dozens of strong figures followed him on those terrifying rainbow lights. The emblem of Law Enforcement Hall was embroidered on the clothes of these people.

Ye Xiwen frowned slightly. The wolf cub was beside him; he whispered to Ye Xiwen, “What are these people doing here?! I’m certain that they’re up to no good!”

Ye Xiwen flew up and stated, “I am!”

Ye Xiwen glanced at those people. Everyone’s body was brimming with vitality. This indicated that they were ridiculously strong. In fact, the weakest among them was an expert of legendry’s great complete realm. It was hard to estimate whether they were experts of semi-sage realm since many of them had restrained their auras.

That old man in the lead was undoubtedly a powerhouse of the Sage realm. Ye Xiwen sneered inside his heart. Several strong

disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall had arrived at once. How could this be a good sign?

Their ill-intent could be sensed from such a powerful lineup of experts.

“Humph. Someone told me that you’ve brutally injured fellow disciples of the same sect. Therefore, I’ve came here to inspect. As I see, that’s really the case. You’ll have to come with us!” that old man looked coldly towards Ye Xiwen as he spoke. A sinister smile had appeared on his face. How would Ye Xiwen not know what might happen to him if he were to go to the Law Enforcement Hall with them?

They had plenty of ways to forge evidences against Ye Xiwen and frame him.

You sisterf\*ker!

Ye Xiwen secretly cursed in his heart. Who would believe that he rushed here after the incident had occurred? They would most likely be fooled by his external appearance.

“You say that I’ve injured fellow disciples of the same sect? Well, excuse me. I don’t know what you’re talking about. These people started it. They wanted to instigate disharmony between the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ and the ‘War Dead Star Peak’. They can’t be forgiven for this deed!” Ye Xiwen said coldly. These people of the ‘War Dead Star Peak’ had injured the disciples of the ‘Hidden Star Peak’. They had had used the excuse of sending in an application to

replace Hidden Star Peak in the ‘Top 100 inheritances’. However, their actions couldn’t be justified since a decision was yet to be made on that application. Yet, they had still arrived here. It would’ve been fine if they hadn’t done anything. However, they had caused this incident. So, the argument was on Ye Xiwen’s side.

The opposite party had been too rampant. That was because they had underestimated the ‘Hidden Star Peak’; though, that was justifiable since the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had a very few disciples. The Master and Big Brother would be perennially absent. The Second Sister cultivated like a mad person, and would undertake closed-door training all-year-round. So, there was nothing to be afraid of.

Ye Xiwen didn’t have to be afraid of anything as long as he’d stick to this logical argument. Anyway, he hadn’t killed anyone.

The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had declined, but an ordinary person couldn’t take it lightly.

“Nonsense; you wish to argue?” that old man shouted in a cold voice. He didn’t wish to give Ye Xiwen any opportunity to defend himself. “It is evident that you’ve injured the disciples of the same Sect. Don’t try to quibble!”

Then, the old man stretched-out his hand. It condensed into a big hand made up of energy in the sky. It rose against the wind, and it got bigger-and-bigger in the sky. It was exceptionally terrifying. The tyrannical might of the sage realm firmly locked on to Ye Xiwen, and made it difficult for him to breathe.

The experts of sage realm had surpassed the realm of mundane life to some extent. If an expert of legendary realm could be said to be a legend... then an expert of sage realm would be considered a myth. In short, sage experts were people who had transcended the mortal world, and didn't associate with ordinary mortals.

A sage expert was such a frightening existence in the ten countries of the Southeastern region that they could frighten any major influence, and emerge as a deterrent-force in the entire scope of the region.

The experts of sage realm were considered as core disciples inside the True Martial University. The core disciples had the same intelligence-quotient as that of true disciples. However, they held a prominent position in the university. If the true disciples would be treated as the pillars in the hierarchy of disciples.... then the core disciples would be treated as the foundation.

The higher authorities didn't care too much about the outer and inner disciples. Their attention was mainly fixed on the core-level disciples.

Ye Xiwen felt as if his entire body had been paralyzed. His muscles had become rigid. Indeed, it was the so-called massive suppression effect of the 'Life Control Level'. It had transcended the mortal world. The legendary realm consisted of legends, but it was merely a realm of mortal-level and belonged to the mundane world. However, things changed in their entirety after one stepped into the Sage realm since they'd achieve an entirely different level called 'Life Control Level'.

It seemed as if a sheep had bumped into a lion; such was the disparity created by the ‘Life Control Level’.

That big hand tightened its grip as it got closer. Ye Xiwen’s golden divinities began to surge-up frantically.

“Roar!” the divinities surged-on Ye Xiwen’s body and rushed into the sky as he raised his hand. The divinities broke the strong grip of that sage realm expert, and allowed Ye Xiwen to evade from getting shackled.

Ye Xiwen had used his explosive power to break-free from the shackles. He then opened his devil wings and dodged to avoid the incoming big hand.

“You dare to resist the arrest!” The black-robed old man’s complexion turned ashen. He hadn’t thought that he would lose control over Ye Xiwen. He had estimated that he’d effortlessly seize Ye Xiwen. He felt that it would’ve been impossible for Ye Xiwen to dodge since he was extremely confident of his sage level strength. He would be useless as an expert of sage realm if he couldn’t even catch a trivial expert of half-step legendary seventh stage. However, unfortunately even he didn’t know how Ye Xiwen had managed to break-through his sage level suppression.

“Grab him and bring to me. I can’t believe that I couldn’t bring him under my control!” that old man ordered coldly. A terrifying chill spread-out in the air.

Several experts flashed into action like a puff of smoke after they heard that old man's words. They extended their big energy-hands towards Ye Xiwen to capture him.

"You pigs! You have so much courage that you dare to lay your hands on my Hidden Star Peak's disciples!" suddenly, a loud shout exploded like a sonic boom. It had come from a distance. Then, a terrifying divine beam swept-over from afar.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

A loud sound of explosions reverberated. The divine beam trailed after those big energy-hands and exploded them into pieces. Those big energy-hands transformed into a mass of energy and dispersed in the air.

"Aaah!"

"Aaah!"

"Aaah!"

Those experts of the Law Enforcement Hall screamed one-after-another. Their arms had been swept away by that divine beam and

had been transformed into blood fog. Even the experts of semi-sage realm couldn't evade the attack. In fact, that sage level expert of Law Enforcement Hall was no exception.

They held onto what remained of their arms as they continued to wail and scream. The black-robed old man covered his wound and shouted, "Who dares to attack the members of Law Enforcement Hall? Who wants to die?"

"Humph; you have a lot of courage. How in the world did you gather the courage to dare cause trouble for the 'Hidden Star Peak'?" a figure appeared in front of everyone after that loud shout resonated. He was a young man clad in black clothes. He was approximately 27 or 28 years old. He appeared tall and sturdy. His hair made it seem as if he had worn a jade crown. His eyebrows were slanting into his temples like two swords. He seemed to be brimming with a heroic spirit.

Ye Xiwen didn't recognize this person. However, he knew the man who stood behind this person. It was the Third Brother – Bai Jian Song.

That person's identity was on the verge of coming-out in open. It was the same person the Third Brother Bai Jian Song had mentioned earlier; the Big Brother – Huang Wuji.

He was an outstanding genius. His reputation had shaken the entire True Martial University once.

"Are you Huang Wuji?" that old man looked at Huang Wuji and



asked. A trace of panic flashed in his eyes. Huang Wuji; this name had flourished for a long time. These new disciples might not know that his name had once shaken the True Martial University. However, the old man knew this because he had heard legends about Huang Wuji's extraordinary prowess, exceptional martial knowledge and elegant demeanor.

“You Law Enforcement Disciples are very courageous. You took the advantage of our absence, and you've tried to cause trouble for our Hidden Star Peak's disciples!” Huang Wuji sneered and looked towards that old man. He said, “One thousand years have gone by, but you don't show any signs of growth!”

“Shut your mouth...” The old man clenched his teeth and said, “Huang Wuji, do you wish to go against our Law Enforcement Hall? Don't forget that we've been given the authority to enforce law by the University Head!”

“Don't give me that crap. Who allowed you to come here and arrest our people?” Huang Wuji asked coldly.

“Our Lord has personally allowed us to take this action!” that old man answered as he gritted his teeth.

“But did I allow it?” Huang Wuji asked lightly. It was a simple sentence, yet it was domineering without exception. “You've dared to come here and cause trouble. Not to mention, my Sixth Brother is innocent. He is not at fault here. It's your fault since you've failed to handle this situation!”

Huang Wuji stated indifferently. His eye emitted a fierce and bright sheen as he looked into the distance. He was talking to that black-robed old man, yet he was looking towards the remote sky. The principles of Dao were flashing upon his figure.

That old man in black hadn't expected that Huang Wuji would ignore him in this manner. In fact, he had disregarded the entire existence of the Law Enforcement Hall. No one would ever dare to ignore Law Enforcement Hall in the entire True Martial University. But this man had. He might have seemed ordinary, but he held the power to destroy the world if he wanted to.

"Huang Wuji, do you think that your 'Hidden Star Peak' is still in its peak time? How dare you act so rampantly?" that old man asked as he clenched his steel-like teeth.

"You think that 'Hidden Star Peak' has declined, and so anyone can step on it?" Huang Wuji sneered and squeezed out these words from the gap between his teeth, "Get out of here! I don't want to kill you right now!"

"Damn! This guy is even more rampant than me!" wolf cub laughed and mumbled. He was usually an extremely insolent character and a full-blown attention-seeker. Most people couldn't tolerate him. However, he had just seen someone who was even more arrogant than him. He felt as if he had met his natural enemy.

Ye Xiwen looked at the tyrannical figure of this Big Brother. He couldn't help but admire the man in his heart. The Big Brother had given no face to the Law Enforcement Hall. He was certainly more

rampant than Ye Xiwen.

“Humph; Huang Wuji, your ‘Hidden Star Peak’ will face a great catastrophe very soon!” the old man clenched his teeth and said. However, he didn’t dare to argue with him any further. Huang Wuji’s cultivation was countless times more profound than his own. In fact, it would’ve been difficult for him to determine whether Huang Wuji was a martial art expert or not if he hadn’t seen Huang Wuji flying in the sky.

The old man could only say ruthless words in response before he turned around and bitterly fled with that group of law enforcement disciples.

Everyone ran away one after another. Their departure set-off a wave of dust and ‘whistling’ sounds.

## Chapter 370: Heard That You've Comprehended The 'Hidden Star Scripture'

---

That black-clothed old man and the group of law enforcement disciples started to leave bitterly. Ye Xiwen couldn't help but heave a sigh of relief as he saw this. Ye Xiwen would've had to fight a desperate battle with his entire strength if the Big Brother hadn't arrived in time. There would've been no other way out for him since he wouldn't have allowed them to arrest him. A desperate battle at the risk of his life was the only hope he had. However, there wouldn't have been any hope if he would've been taken away by those Law Enforcement disciples. The Law Enforcement Hall was indeed the True Martial University's most fierce and violent organization. It had as many experts as the clouds in the sky. Its members belonged to various powerful inheritances, and were elites among elites. Each one of these experts was ferocious. And there were so many of them that it felt as if there were experts raining down from the clouds. The experts of sage realm were not rare in the Law Enforcement Hall. There were many experts of great sage realm as well. In fact, it was believed that the Lord of the Law Enforcement Hall was even more tyrannical than the terrifying experts of great-sage realm.

Would he still believe that he could run from the Law Enforcement Hall?

That was impossible.

The opposite party would've effortlessly suppressed him, and concocted fake evidences against him. Ye Xiwen had seen some shady organization play dirty tricks to trap people in his previous

life. The main thing was that once the leaders desired for something — they'd do anything to obtain it. Ye Xiwen believed that things were the same inside the True Martial University as well.

In case Ye Xiwen was caught on solid charges and put on trial... even the Master wouldn't have been able to save Ye Xiwen if he were to show-up in-time and take action.

In fact, Ye Xiwen had even consider to unleash the Star Colossus and cause full-on chaos if he was about to suffer a major loss. The noise produced would've surely reached the ears of higher authorities, and they may have looked into this matter in detail.

Of course, that would've been his last resort. He wouldn't choose this road as long as he had some other way out.

However, the Big Brother had arrived; fortunately. His tyranny had gone far beyond everyone's imagination. He had cut an arm of every Law Enforcement disciple as a warning.

Everyone could see that Big Brother Huang Wuji had invincible tyrannical strength. He could've killed them effortlessly. However, he had only cut-off their arms. This showed that he hadn't shed all pretenses of cordiality.

Ye Xiwen finally realized why the 'Hidden Star Peak' didn't have many disciples but still had such an exceptional solidarity. Yes, it was the feeling they carried in their heart; they covered-up each other's shortcomings. If one were to commit a mistake... the other

would protect them like a doting parent.

Ye Xiwen wasn't guilty of causing this incident. However, Big Brother wouldn't have allowed them catch him even if he had committed the crime.

Such protective nature and watching each other's backs secretly disseminated a warm feeling inside Ye Xiwen's heart.

"Fourth Brother, Fifth Sister, are you okay?" the Third Brother Bai Jian Song flew down and asked.

"I'm all right. I felt very good as I watched those bastards admit their defeat!" Yang Wen Jun burst into laughter and said. However, his wounds were still affecting him. He couldn't help but grimace in pain.

"That's right. Our Hidden Star Peak cannot be messed with!" Deng Shui Xin brandished her small fist and said.

"Sixth Brother, you've done quite well this time!" Bai Jian Song looked towards Ye Xiwen and said. His eyes were full of delight and appreciation. The true strength of the 'Hidden Star Peak' lay in its unity. They must rely on each other and keep watch on each other's backs. They must protect each other. The few remaining disciples must stand unanimously as a group against any foreign threat.

Ye Xiwen had joined them very recently. However, his way of

doing things had brought him a lot appreciation from others.

“I did what I should’ve done; nothing more!” Ye Xiwen shook his head and said. Bai Jian Song and the other people had appreciated him for his deeds. He really liked the behavior of the disciples of the Hidden Star Peak. A great sense of belonging had started to emerge inside his heart.

The Big Brother Huang Wuji flew down. He laughed out loud as he patted Ye Xiwen’s shoulder and said, “Yes, Yes, you’ve done a very good job. You deserve to be a disciple of our Hidden Star Peak!”

A pleasant smile appeared on Huang Wuji’s face. It was very different from the ice-cold murderous look that he had worn on his face a moment ago. He had addressed Ye Xiwen as a fellow disciple without any hesitation. This was his real temperament.

“I did only what I should’ve done to deal with this matter,” Ye Xiwen replied with a smile. This was the first time he was meeting the Big Brother, and he very much appreciated this so-called logic of staying together in a group. It was same as the saying – birds of a feather flock together.

There wasn’t a single person in this ‘Hidden Star Peak’ who’d readily accept defeat. In fact, the Master of the peak was the most rebellious and untamed man. He couldn’t tolerate even the slightest loss. His motto was simple – ‘I won’t provoke you. However, if you dare to provoke me —I will kill you!’

“Ha ha, right. You did what you should’ve done. I believe that many people have understood what they should’ve done earlier!” Huang Wuji smiled and said, “Come, let’s go back to the Hidden Star Peak!”

The five fellow-disciples of the Hidden Star Peak and the wolf cub tread on the rainbow lights, and disappeared from the ‘Hidden Star City’ in front of everyone’s eyes.

Discussions started to boil throughout ‘Hidden Star City’ as soon as they left; it seemed as if the city had become a boiling pot.

“That Huang Wuji guy was so terrifying. Who’s he? How come I’ve never heard of him? I felt as if it was the end of the world when I saw him treading on his rainbow light across the sky!”

“Indeed. Those disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall are experts with supreme talent. However, they couldn’t stop a single move of that guy’s. They would be dead if he had intended to kill them!”

“That’s true. The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ has such a terrifying expert...? How come we never knew? I thought that Ye Xiwen was the only famous expert here. That Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin had risen to fame in the previous batch of new disciples. However, they can be barely be ranked toward the end among the top-tier disciples. But where did such a terrifying expert suddenly appear from? Even the chiefs of several inheritances don’t possess such terrifying strength!”

“That is rightly so. Many of you geniuses have arrived here a few



years ago only. Some people have arrived less than hundred years ago. Some have arrived two hundred years ago. How can you possibly know him?”

A middle-aged man with twirled moustache said in a somewhat contented manner. He clearly seemed very proud of himself since he had recognized Huang Wuji.

“Do you know him?”

“Hurry up and tell us about him if you know; hurry up and tell!”

Many young disciples surrounded him and began to ask questions somewhat excitedly.

“You people are very young. It’s only natural that you don’t know. Huang Wuji used to be extremely tyrannical back in the day. Frequent conflicts used to break-out between him and the law enforcement disciples. It was almost a thousand years ago... the Law Enforcement Hall couldn’t catch him... just like the present-day Ye Xiwen... The Law Enforcement Hall had used many methods to eliminate him. However, he would survive every time. The scale of the battles between both the sides grew fiercer and fiercer over time. It soon reached an extent that Huang Wuji once recklessly killed an elder of the Law Enforcement Hall. He hadn’t killed an ordinary elder, but an elder of great sage realm who held a high position. The higher authorities exiled Huang Wuji for three hundred years since they sensed an imminent war. He was forbidden to return until-after the three hundred years had passed. No one back then knew that he would become so powerful one day!” that middle-aged man calmly explained.

Everyone suddenly held their breaths after they heard this. He had killed a powerhouse of the great sage realm. His strength was indeed enough to leave people dumbstruck. No one had expected that such a ferocious expert had been lurking beneath the surface of the 'Hidden Star Peak'. Suddenly, it wasn't surprising that so many inheritances had been eyeing the position of the Hidden Star Peak but hadn't been able to seize it.

"Humph, it seems that some people are too eager to launch an attack on the 'Hidden Star Peak'. However, it's not that easy to do so since it isn't made-up of pushovers. Even the second and third disciples of the 'Hidden Star Peak' aren't easy to deal with. They're well-known experts as well!" that middle-aged man said somewhat disdainfully.

Ye Xiwen followed Huang Wuji and the others to the Hidden Star Peak. Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin hadn't sustained normal injuries. Ye Xiwen had given them healing medicinal pills that had stabilized the condition of their injuries. However, they'd require some time to recuperate completely.

Hence, they left to heal their wounds. Ye Xiwen followed Huang Wuji and Bai Jian Song to the main hall. This main hall used to be the center of high level discussions on the Hidden Star Peak. This place had strict protection. It was surrounded by an enchantment barrier so that people couldn't hear the conversations from outside. However, this main hall had become desolate ever since the decline of this peak.

Ye Xiwen looked at Third Brother Bai Jian Song. Ye Xiwen knew

that Third Brother wasn't on the peak back when he was in the Great Trial Competition. He was aware that the Third Brother had gone out to look for the Big Brother and the Master. The enemy might have considered this point as well... otherwise, the disciples of the 'War Dead Star Peak' and Law Enforcement Hall wouldn't have arrived looking for trouble on the same day.

"Nice to meet you, Sixth Brother. You're a very talented person. I've heard about your previous exploits. It's been a while since such a genius has joined our Hidden Star Peak!" Huang Wuji looked towards Ye Xiwen and grinned as he said. His face had a heroic expression on it. Huang Wuji hadn't been present all-year-round. However, that didn't mean that he didn't know anything. He knew a lot of things, and that too more clearly than other people.

"Big Brother is over-praising me. The consequences would've been too dreadful if Big Brother hadn't arrived so timely. I've finally come know what a person from outside 'the well' is really like. But I'm nothing but a frog that sits idly at the bottom of the well... still as ignorant and conceited as ever!" Ye Xiwen said with a sigh. He was regarded at the top of the younger generation strength-wise. He had been ranked as the heaven's pride level expert. However, he had merely faced the experts who had practiced for a few decades. He didn't have enough strength to face the expert of the older generations; especially the ones who had been practicing for centuries or even a thousand years. He felt incompetent in front of such experts.

This incident had erased the little ego that had recently cropped-up inside Ye Xiwen's being.

His cultivation could be regarded at the top among new disciples. However, he couldn't be named as a mighty expert. Not to mention that when compared with those old monsters... he was far-away from being a top-tier expert. He had nothing to be proud of.

Ye Xiwen had unconsciously allowed an arrogant mindset to take root in his psyche. However, it had been entirely obliterated after this incident.

“You don't need to be modest. You've accomplished many things for your age. I hadn't done this well when I was your age!” Huang Wuji waved his hand and said. However, his star-like eyes firmly locked on Ye Xiwen as he asked, “Sixth Brother, I've heard from Third Brother that you've comprehended the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’?”

# Chapter 371: Martial Arts Competition To Be Held In Five Years

---

“Sixth Brother, Third Brother said that you’ve comprehended the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’? Huang Wuji stared at Ye Xiwen. A trace of excitement appeared on his face. Yes, he was excited. The news he had heard from the Third Brother that the newly arrived Sixth Brother had possibly comprehended the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’ had compelled him to return to the True Martial University.

This new disciple was another addition to the people on this peak who had comprehended the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’. One must know that this comprehension had nothing to do with one’s talent; nor with one’s strength. It was purely dependent on one’s luck. In fact, a person might be able to mysteriously and inexorably comprehend it.

The Hidden Star Peak had a huge population back in time. They had experimented by allowing millions of people to try and comprehend it. The ‘Hidden Star Scripture’ had been successfully mended to some extent countless years down the line. It may not have been the complete version, but it was usable.

However, the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had a very few disciple at present. Their Master was the only one to have comprehended some of it from his generation. He was the sole line of descent in several of the past generations’ to have accomplished this. He had begun the process of mending it with all his effort ever since. Then, the Big Brother Huang Wuji turned up several years later. Afterwards, they’d mutually verify each other’s comprehension of

the scripture to reach a better understanding. They had been looking for the whereabouts of a real copy of the 'Hidden Star Scriptures' in the foreign territory.

Therefore, he couldn't help but be excited with the unexpected addition of the Sixth Brother. This could be regarded as a huge day for the Hidden Star Peak. In fact, only a handful of disciples would be able to comprehend the 'Hidden Star Scripture' even when the inheritance was at the pinnacle of its glory.

They had less than ten people on this peak at present. However, three of them could comprehend the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. How could this not be the biggest day for the Hidden Star Peak?

"En!" Ye Xiwen nodded. He didn't conceal anything. He read aloud his entire comprehension of the scripture; little by little.

Huang Wuji didn't find anything-off in the beginning. However, he became rather astonished as Ye Xiwen continued to describe further. He soon found himself pleasantly surprised since Ye Xiwen was reading-out the 'complete' version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'.

The 'Hidden Star Scripture' that he and the Master had comprehended was incomplete. They hadn't even comprehended one-third of it. In fact, many things were unclear to them. Not everything had been mended. The outstanding ancestors had tried their best to comprehend and patch the existing 'incomplete' version of the scripture. But, the 'patched' version couldn't be compared with the 'original' one.

The incomplete version was like a piece of cloth. But it had many holes. The low-level experts had been able to patch it here-and-there and repaired it little-by-little. However, it was covered with patches in its entirety. Even the high-level experts who understood it better could only use flowery-patterns to patch the ragged cloth. Therefore, it was riddled with patches, and couldn't possible compare with the 'original' version.

The Big Brother hadn't seen the complete version of 'Hidden Star Scripture'. However, he could sense it with his vision. He had figured-out the extent of Ye Xiwen's comprehension by listening to him. Everything had suddenly become clear to Huang Wuji; it was like a burst of enlightenment. Initially, parts of it had been hidden and uncertain. But, everything had suddenly become clear and coherent. His knowledge had been vague in many places, but that had become clear suddenly. He had understood everything. It seemed as if the Real Elemental Energy had been divided to separation inside the body. But it had suddenly condensed to form a huge cycle.

Huang Wuji's aura surged-up slightly, and became more and more ethereal.

Huang Wuji was extremely shocked. However, Ye Xiwen was unaffected since he knew the 'complete' version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. Therefore, he had understood the profound mysteries of the scripture. In fact, missing a single point would make it impossible for one to practice it.

However, Huang Wuji and the Master whom Ye Xiwen had never

met had mutually relied on their own incomplete comprehensions to attain such a big fighting prowess. Moreover, they had been able to mend one part of 'Hidden Star Scripture' while going-about their own cultivations. It was impossible for an average person to have achieved these feats.

Ye Xiwen barely finished when Huang Wuji left in a hurry. His doubts had suddenly cleared-up after he had listened to the complete version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. Several inconsistencies in his understanding had been smoothened-up and had instantly become coherent. There wasn't enough time for him to say anything. He needed to proceed for a closed-door training to prepare for the incoming breakthrough.

Ye Xiwen had to admit that it was astounding to have come across a genius who could reach on the verge of a breakthrough by merely listening to a compilation of concepts.

The Third Brother felt excited. He said, "Sixth Brother, you've done a great service towards our Hidden Star Peak. Ha ha, I can see the Master passing on the position of the chief disciple to you!"

Ye Xiwen's complexion turned a bit dark. He had no interest in the position of the chief disciple. In fact, he had no interest in the entire Hidden Star Peak. It was one of the 'Top 100 Inheritances', but none of the members looked serious. Their Master was perennially absent. The same went for the Big Brother. In fact, it would've been hard to tell their whereabouts if it weren't for the mending of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. The Second Sister was a 'closed-door training maniac'. The Third Brother was always in predicament to manage the peak, and couldn't leave even if he



wanted to. The Fourth Brother and Fifth Sister were merely at legendry's great complete realm, and hadn't even entered the sage realm despite their ages. There would be no one to guard the Hidden Star Peak if Bai Jiang Song would be gone. He must've thought of putting this burden on Ye Xiwen's shoulder since the newcomer was very talented genius.

"I have the least of qualifications amongst all. I cannot carry this burden!" Ye Xiwen promptly refused.

It seemed as if Bai Jian Song had seen through Ye Xiwen's mind. He smiled brightly and said, "No matter what; you've comprehended the complete version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. If the Hidden Star Peak is to revive in the future — then it will be remembered as your achievement!"

"This brother has been greatly benefited by you. I shall begin the closed-door training in two days' time. I shall do my best to step into the great sage realm!" There was a look of perseverance on Bai Jian Song's face.

If the legendary and sage realm were as distinguished as the Heaven and Earth... then the difference between sage and great sage realm was beyond that. The powerhouses of great sage realm held true value and status inside the True Martial University. They had authoritative powers. Many among the 'Top 100 Inheritances' had great sage experts as their chief disciples. However, having a sage realm expert as the chief disciples was a big-thing for several of the other inheritances.

Ye Xiwen secretly pondered. This Hidden Star Peak didn't have

too many people, but every person was as elusive as a crouching tiger and as powerful as a hidden dragon. The Third Brother had reached the peak of the sage realm. The Second Sister had been undergoing closed-door training. She was said to have crossed the threshold of the great sage realm. The Big Brother had once killed an expert of great sage realm a thousand years ago. It was hard to predict his current strength. And the Master might have surpassed the great sage realm altogether.

But Ye Xiwen hadn't seen them. So, he could only guess.

Suddenly, it was no wonder that the 'Hidden Star Peak' had been steadily ranked among the 'Top 100 Inheritances' all those years. It wasn't without a reason. It would be wrong to think that the Hidden Star Peak was a push-over since it had fewer disciples.

However, it wasn't surprising why many of the low-ranked disciples were unable understand this fact. Most people were used to seeing Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin only, and these two were merely at the legendry's great complete realm. Bai Jian Song would appear from time to time, but he wasn't much of a deterrent force either.

Bai Jian Song wasn't talking nonsense. The 'Hidden Star Scripture' obviously held great importance for the Hidden Star Peak. The martial art techniques of the 'Hidden Star Peak' and the Daoist concepts had evolved from the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. It was their foundation.

Not everybody on this peak could comprehend the 'Hidden Star Scripture' even in its most flourishing time. However, the

powerhouses who had walked on this peak, and comprehended it at that time, were said to have been completely transformed by it.

The ancient Masters of successive generations had successfully mended the ‘Hidden Star Scripture’. It was then ranked one of the top five ‘biggest internal achievements’ of the True Martial University. Thereafter, the martial arts arteries (1) of the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ had evolved over-time and had spread out. This had splendidly stirred-up the entire True Martial University. That used to be the glorious phase of the ‘Hidden Star Peak’.

“But before that... I have to tell you some important things!” Bai Jian Song stated. “There is going to be a martial arts competition between the new disciples of our university, Xuan Yuan Palace Hall, East Sea’s (2) Muddy Sky Island, and the South Barbarian Fire Cloud Cave in five years’ time!”

“With the same Xuan Yuan Palace Hall from the underground world...?” Ye Xiwen asked. It was needless to mention that the True Martial University and the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall had been furious at each other. How could they convene for a Martial Art Competition?

It seemed as if Bai Jian Song had understood the issue Ye Xiwen was stuck-on. He smiled and said, “The relations are poor, but it’s important to conduct such competitions in the True Martial World. It doesn’t matter whether it’s Xuan Yuan Palace Hall, True Martial University, or East Sea’s Huntian Island. These are colossus foundations... with each having tens of millions or even more in their ranks of disciples. The probability of the outbreak of a war isn’t large even if one harbors enmity for the other... lives

would burn like charcoal if these colossus forces started a real war!”

“Therefore, these small scale Martial Arts Competitions occur often. They are means to probe each other’s strengths. It’s like a small battlefield for young geniuses. You’re one of the young geniuses of the True Martial University. One can try to test-out the strength of the other forces. One can try to kill the young disciples of the opposite party in this process if possible... to limit their growth. In fact, this is the real reason for conducting this Martial Arts Competition. An ‘open-war’ situation is unlikely to happen, but this trick can still be used to weaken the strength of the opposite party!” Bai Jian Song explained, “Of course, the other parties carry the same idea. Thus, our outstanding young geniuses become thorns in the eyes of the enemies. You will be at the top of their list! You’ve killed many of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall’s experts; in fact, the list included that heaven’s pride level expert Fan Ming. How will they not hate you? They may try to ambush you when the time comes!”

Ye Xiwen nodded. He knew that Bai Jian Song was telling the truth. It was public-knowledge that he had killed the experts of the Xuan Yuan Palace Hall. Hence, it was bound to bring such fate upon him. However, he had no other option at that time. If he had not killed them... then they would’ve killed him instead. It was a ‘you die or I die’ situation.

“I’m not some weakling. I will butcher them if they so much as try to mess with me!” A mysterious light flickered in Ye Xiwen’s eyes.

Arteries (in this context) mean the influence, name and fame of the peak that spreads via its alumni.

East China Sea: This sea is called the East Sea in Chinese, being one of the Four Seas of Chinese literature. There are three other seas, one for each of the four cardinal directions. In Chinese literature, the Four Seas are a metaphor for the boundaries of China. It contains modern day East China Sea as well as the Yellow Sea and Bohai Sea.

In Chinese mythology, East Sea is the domain of Ao Guang ‘the Dragon King of the Eastern Sea’ who is responsible for controlling its storms and tides. Supposedly, the Dragon King resides in a large ‘dragon palace’ located at its bottom.

# Chapter 372: A Whole New Level Of Respect

---

“Yes, our ‘Hidden Star Peak’ doesn’t need to be afraid of anyone with this imposing aura!” Bai Jian Song smiled and said, “However, you shouldn’t worry too much. Considering your current strength... you will attain an invincible position so long as you can enter the initial phase of semi-sage realm within five years!”

The division of semi-sage realm wasn’t as complex as half-step legendary realm. It was divided into three stages – initial, intermediate, and late stage. However, the division of sage realm was again complex. It was divided into initial stage, intermediate stage, late stage, peak stage, small complete, and great complete realm. Then, the half-step great sage realm was divided into three stages – initial, intermediate, and late stage. Bai Jian Song was at the late stage of half-step great sage realm. He was one step away from stepping into the great sage realm.

It was quite possible for Ye Xiwen to enter the semi-sage realm in five years given his present progress pace. In fact, he’d be able to protect himself without any difficulty if he were to enter the semi-sage realm.

Ye Xiwen had a lot to catch-up-with to attain his goal. He wasn’t the supreme genius of the younger generation. There were many core disciples of sage realm... as well as true disciples of great sage realm.

“En!” Ye Xiwen nodded. These martial arts competitions and trials were like small scale battles between major forces. They were

usually very cruel in nature, and followed the simple principle of ‘you die, I live’.

Every major force would hope for their own heaven’s pride experts to slaughter the ones on the opposite side since it would settle their grudges and badly hurt the rival force. This wouldn’t seriously affect a major force since a large number of new disciples joined these forces every hundred years. But it was sufficient to leave them anxious, and in heart-wrenching pain.

“Our True Martial University has suffered severe losses in the recent-few Martial Arts Competitions!” Bai Jian Song said. “Our True Martial University used to rule the entire True Martial World at one point. Then, those other forces rose abruptly. One could say that they’ve stepped on our True Martial University’s corpse to climb up!”

Bai Jian Song couldn’t help but clench his teeth in anger as he said this. These forces were merely the subordinate forces of the True Martial University at one point. However, they had risen to power one after another with the aid of the True Martial University’s decline. Each of these forces and the True Martial University bore immense and deep-seated hatred for each other since their rise was based on the pile of corpses of countless ancestors of the True Martial University.

In fact, no matter when and how the True Martial University had declined... it was still considered at the top. This was the so-called case of the — ‘even a skinny dead camel is bigger than a horse’. No matter how the True Martial University had declined... it was still considered as an outstanding major force in the True Martial

World. However, several other forces had risen; they had besieged it from all sides. This had led to the complete decline of the True Martial University. It ended-up transforming from the topmost major force of the True Martial World to merely an ordinary tyrannical force. It had countless disciples, but the number was far less compared to its times of glory.

“Therefore, these forces unite together in order to suppress us whenever the Martial Arts Competition takes place. But only the new comers will participate in the competition. So it won’t be a huge matter. However, it would’ve been a lot more fun if all the geniuses of the True Martial World were to clash!” Bai Jian Song sneered, “They’re afraid of the reemergence of our True Martial University!”

The True Martial University had once ruled the entire True Martial World as the undisputed number-one major force for countless years. It may have declined, but the other forces couldn’t match its rich heritage. The various kinds of ancient books it had in its possession could scare the other sects to death. It had continued to dominate the southern region for so many years, but it hadn’t been able to return to its previous glory. This was mainly because the other forces had collaborated to suppress it. Everyone was afraid of its reemergence and subsequent retaliation.

Ye Xiwen wasn’t afraid. Instead, his blood somewhat began to boil. The road of martial arts was difficult to walk on. The most exciting and wonderful thing was the contest between experts. The mere number of geniuses in the True Martial University was very large. But, if the experts from the five regions and four oceans of the entire world were to gather at one place... the mere thought of this had made Ye Xiwen’s blood boil.



Bai Jian Song suddenly shook his head and laughed as he watched Ye Xiwen become excited instead of getting worried. This young disciple was similar to the other members of the Hidden Star Peak.

“He he, don’t worry. You’ll have plenty of opportunities to get stronger!” Bai Jian Song said. “You must prepare properly for the next few years. You must try your best to enter the semi-sage realm before the Martial Arts Competition starts. You will acquire an invincible position if you were to enter the semi-sage realm!”

Ye Xiwen nodded. He would be able to deal with the other experts of the same realm if he could stride into the semi-sage realm. That would more than help him in defending himself.

“Anyway, there are still many years to go. You have plenty of time to prepare!” Bai Jian Song said. The time of several years was long enough for an average person. However, it wasn’t too long for the experts with over a thousand years of cultivation time.

“En!”

“This is just the warm-up time!” Bai Jian Song said, “The main game will start when the top players of the younger generation of the five regions of the world, four oceans, and four desolate lands appear for the big competition. Your name and fame will shake the entire world if you can rise above the others. The Big Brother had risen above others in this competition. His achievements would’ve been far more than now if it wasn’t for the incomplete ‘Hidden

Star Scripture'!"

Ye Xiwen nodded. In fact, it hadn't merely limited Big Brother's growth... it could be said that the entire 'Hidden Star Peak' had suffered because of the practice of this incomplete 'Hidden Star Scripture'. They had several doubts and were uncertain about several aspects of the scripture. However, everyone's strength on this peak would increase by leaps and bounds within no time since Ye Xiwen had comprehended the complete version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'. Their foundations and heritage had been enough to support them. But their cultivation had remained suppressed due to the flaw in the martial principle they had practiced. They had taken every step very carefully until this point. However, they could now advance by leaps and bounds since they had been rid of these shackles.

"First of all... I must undergo the closed-door training. I can finally cross this threshold of the great-sage realm after so many years of wait!" Bai Jian Song looked somewhat excited as he spoke.

Bai Jian Song went for the closed-door training; Ye Xiwen began his preparation as well. The Martial Arts Competition of the new comers would take place after five years. The top experts of the younger generation of the True Martial World would take part in this competition. Ye Xiwen's current strength was insufficient to deal with those experts. In fact, he would only end-up serving himself as food to be devoured by others if his strength would remain same after five years.

What he lacked the most were 'Spirit Dans'. He was in need of those; all the time. Especially now... since he needed to refine that

Star Colossus into a blood slave... but his current strength wasn't enough. Moreover, he lacked a large amount of 'Spirit Dans'.

He must deduce the flaws of his 'Coiling Dragon Palm', 'Observing Person Scripture', and so on in these five years. The thought of the astronomical number of 'Spirit Dans' he'd eventually require had given him a headache. Fortunately, he had five years. Otherwise, it would've been impossible for him to earn the required number of 'Spirit Dans'.

The estimated amount of 'Spirit Dans' that Ye Xiwen required might even surpass the needs of a sage expert.

The members of the Hidden Star peak were either undergoing closed-door training or resting to recuperate. However, the storm hadn't yet passed. It wasn't going to die down that easily because it was related to the prestige of two inheritances.

The 'Hidden Star Peak' had been among the 'Top 100 inheritances'. And the 'War Dead Star Peak' had been aiming to seize a rank among the 'Top 100 Inheritances'. The impact of this matter had given rise to a rumor that began to spread outside the bounds of these two inheritances.

Several people watched these two inheritances closely. They didn't know how fierce their collision would be, but they believed that the 'Hidden Star Peak' would fall from its position among the 'Top 100 Inheritances'. It had hung at the bottom of the ranking list for innumerable years; nobody had been able to shake its position even though it had declined.

Nobody would presume that those inheritances that had been covetously eyeing the position of the Hidden Star Peak for so long had good intentions... or would deliberately let it off. However, they couldn't think of a reason why the Hidden Star Peak had been able to maintain its position. But, after the rumor about this matter spread... people began to understand that it was hard for an average person to predict the background and heritage of the Hidden Star Peak. Huang Wuji's return had suddenly removed the veil before their eyes.

Everyone had believed that Ye Xiwen was too arrogant and despotic since he had killed those disciples of Law Enforcement Hall. The Law Enforcement disciples may not have occupied the just-side, but daring to kill them had explained a lot about Ye Xiwen's temperament.

However, then Huang Wuji appeared. And everyone realized that Ye Xiwen was merely a juvenile in comparison. Huang Wuji had chopped-off the arms of an elder of the Law Enforcement Hall. He hadn't killed anyone, but everyone knew that he could... if he wanted to... but he didn't bother to.

The legends about Huang Wuji started to flip-over one-after-another after his return. Everyone knew that an elder of sage realm was like a feather for an audacious man like him. He had killed an expert of great sage realm thousand years ago. He was akin to an evil god. Who would dare to mess with him?

However, the people who had been looking forward to the clash of the two inheritances were greatly disappointed. This was

because... the 'War Dead Star Peak' didn't want an investigation to be held. Their so-called demand to replace the Hidden Star Peak from the ranks of the 'Top 100 Inheritances' had also disappeared without a trace.

Then, the news spread out. It turned out that the 'War Dead Star Peak' had thoroughly enraged Huang Wuji. He had attacked the 'War Dead Star Peak' in-turn. He had rushed inside the territory of the War Dead Star Peak, and had chased their chief-disciple around; as if he were a dog. His attacks had caused the entire territory of the 'War Dead Star Peak' to collapse into pieces. Even the respectable elder, the predecessors as well as the chief of predecessors didn't turn out to be Huang Wuji's opponents; they were slapped into the sky.

Huang Wuji had reached the great complete level of Great Sage realm... according to the hearsay. This news had suddenly pacified countless forces which were readying themselves to make trouble. His intrepid strength had made everyone harbor an entirely new level of respect for him. People had been jealous of the Hidden Star Peak for many years. The Hidden Star Peak didn't have many people, but this Huang Wuji was enough to frighten anyone. Moreover, the mysterious Master of the Hidden Star Peak was even more unfathomable. Therefore, people didn't dare to look down on the Hidden Star Peak anymore.

They had realized that it would be for their own wellbeing to behave properly... unless they wished to experience the same fate as the 'War Dead Star Peak' at the hands of Huang Wuji.

# Chapter 373: Mission With The Highest Reward

---

Ye Xiwen's requirement of 'Spirit Energy' had gone beyond the limit of exaggeration. He needed the support of 'Spirit Energy' for various aspects. If there would be no 'Spirit Energy' at hand... then he could only rely on time and absorb it slowly. He'd be able to gradually accumulate it, but Ye Xiwen didn't wish the speed to be so slow... nor did he look forward to such slow cultivation speed.

Ye Xiwen's cultivation had enhanced by leaps and bounds, and his progress-speed was faster than others. However, it was very different from the progress of others. That was because he had an invincibly robust foundation. Every step that he took was more difficult than an average person's. He had to shoulder a terrifying amount of pressure... the kind that was hard for other people to imagine. He had continued to walk step-by-step though he was burdened with so much pressure. Therefore, his foundation was bound to be more profound than the majority of people.

His 'Heavenly Tribulations' had always been more terrifying as well. In fact, he might've been killed by those tribulations if he hadn't built a sufficiently profound foundation. This had compelled him to unceasingly work towards building a more and more profound foundation.

However, Ye Xiwen needed a great amount of 'Spirit Dans' at the moment. He thought for a moment. The fastest way to obtain such a huge amount of 'Spirit Dans,' would be to complete the missions deployed by the True Martial University.

The rewards for these missions were often very lucrative. These rewards were naturally on an entirely new level when compared to the Yi Yuan School.

The True Martial University also had one specialized ‘Merit Palace Hall’ (1) in order to issue and keep track of the status of various kinds of missions; just as the Yi Yuan School. Some missions were issued by the university itself, while some were requested by the outsiders. However, the missions issued by the university were usually better than personal requests.

That was because the university missions were more on the ‘normal’ side on contrary to the personal requests... which usually came with ‘strange’ requirements. Some people often made weird requests too. However, such strange personal requests would often bring more generous rewards.

Countless disciples used to visit the ‘Merit Palace Hall’ to undertake missions.

Ye Xiwen stepped into the ‘Merit Palace Hall’. The tables had been arranged in rows. A disciple with profound cultivation was seated behind each table. Several of these disciples were experts of semi-sage realm. The most inferior among them were the experts of legendry’s great complete realm. In fact, there were many sage realm experts to keep an eye on the other disciples of the ‘Merit Palace Hall’. Just like in the case of the Law Enforcement Hall — the disciples of the ‘Merit Palace Hall’ were comprised of elites, and they hailed from different inheritances.

The ‘Merit Palace Hall’ was a very large force inside the True

Martial University. Its influence was no less than the Law Enforcement Hall's. These two were the key organizations of the True Martial University; one to give rewards... and the other to inflict punishment. It was as if the university had a stick in one hand, and a carrot in the other. The Law Enforcement Hall would inflict punishments. Therefore, it could be considered as a stick. And the 'Merit Palace Hall' was the in-charge of distributing the rewards; so, it could be considered as the carrot. Everyone undoubtedly had a favorable opinion of the 'Merit Palace Hall' as opposed to the notorious Law Enforcement Hall.

Ye Xiwen arrived in front of a table. An expert of legendry's great complete realm was seated behind it. His unrestrained aura was extremely profound. His cultivation seemed countless times superior to that of the experts of legendry's great complete realm whom Ye Xiwen had so far come across. He wasn't one bit inferior to the heaven's pride level experts.

This was fairly normal. However, this didn't mean that these disciples were fiercer than Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen's cultivation time was nowhere near theirs. These people had practiced for at-least 300-400 years. Several of them didn't have the means to step into semi-sage realm. In fact, many might not be able to venture into the semi-sage realm their entire lives. This was the harsh reality.

Their strength might not be inferior to Ye Xiwen's. However, there was a difference of Heaven and Earth between their statuses. They were merely the inner disciples, but Ye Xiwen had been ranked as heaven's pride level expert. He was a core disciple, and was supposed to be the primary focus of the University. There was no comparison between them and Ye Xiwen.



The reason was simple. The difference between their potentials was similar to the one between the Heaven and Earth. These people might make a breakthrough into the sage realm in the future... if, and only if they were lucky. However, Ye Xiwen had boundless future prospects.

However, one could clearly see that Merit Palace Hall's background was very profound by merely looking at these strong experts being assigned to such duties. Perhaps, its overall strength was no less than that of the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Young fellow, which mission do you wish to pick?” that expert of legendry's great complete realm asked. It was difficult to judge someone's age from their external appearance. But there were several methods by which one's approximate age could be guessed. Ye Xiwen could see that they weren't too young... similarly, they could spot that he was very young.

“Is there any suitable mission that matches legendry's great complete realm?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“Young fellow, you're at half-step legendary seventh stage. You're not qualified to undertake a mission of legendary great complete realm's level!” That disciple of the Merit Palace Hall didn't seem like a bad person. He merely reminded Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen's strength was at half-step legendary seventh stage in his opinion. A legendry's great complete realm's mission wouldn't be of ordinary difficulty for someone of this strength.

“You're one of this year's new comers, right? You don't know the profoundness of this world. You should choose an ordinary

mission of your level!” an expert next to that legendry’s great complete realm’s expert opened his mouth and suggested. His aura was incomparably profound. It wasn’t inferior to Ye Xiwen’s current power.

“Aren’t you Ye Xiwen? ...The one who killed Fan Ming?” A disciple at the reception recognized Ye Xiwen. This suddenly attracted the attention of several people, and they looked towards him.

Every session’s heaven’s pride level experts were widely famous. This session’s heaven’s pride level expert had been chosen very recently. How they could not be well-known?

These experts of the Merit Palace Hall could be considered as elites. Their strength wasn’t inferior to those of the newly anointed heaven’s pride level experts. However, there was a difference of heaven and earth in their status. One could determine this by drawing a comparison between their respective cultivation-years.

These heaven’s pride level experts could become outstanding figures of their respective inheritances in the future... so long as no mishap would occur. They could even compete for the position of the chief. They could easily become the top-tier experts of the ‘Top 100 Inheritances’. Then, they would stand above millions of people in the True Martial University. Not to mention that they’d rule the population of the entire southern region.

Ye Xiwen’s reputation had transcended that of the others in this session’s heaven’s pride level expert. He had dared to look down on

the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall. An average person wouldn't have the courage to do this.

Moreover, his reputation had been boosted by the manner in which the Hidden Star Peak had recently come to limelight. It had suddenly become world-famous despite being at the bottommost position in the list of the 'Top 100 Inheritances'. It had started to shine as brightly as a meteor.

"So... this is Ye Xiwen. No wonder he has such an unrestrained aura, and such profound martial power; he's as strong as us!"

"Yes. The heaven's pride level experts are incomparably tyrannical. It'll be impossible for an average person to face them. They lead a pious life and cultivate for many years. This Ye Xiwen couldn't be more than 50 years old, but his martial power is comparable to mine. However, I became a disciple of the Merit Palace Hall to obtain more resources than average disciples. I used to be known as a genius once. However, I've become another ordinary disciple in front of these heaven's pride disciples!"

Ye Xiwen's expression didn't change. It seemed as if he hadn't seen those surrounding disciples of the Merit Palace Hall. He didn't pay any attention to the other disciples who had either arrived to pick missions, or get paid for completion of their tasks.

"Since, it's Brother Ye... there's no problem!" That disciple didn't exaggerate this issue any further. Ye Xiwen was merely an expert of half-step legendary seventh stage. However, he had slaughtered a heaven's pride level expert. The number of levels he had skipped to achieve that feat was beyond an average person's imagination.

That disciple lined-up the mission of the rank of legendry's great complete realm. The missions of legendry's great complete realm and ordinary legendary realm mission weren't same. The most trivial mission had a reward of 1 million 'Spirit Dans'. And the rewards gradually increased with the difficulty level. Ye Xiwen searched through the list of missions, and noticed that the one with highest reward offered 9 million 'Spirit Dans'. It was a personal request... for the assassination of a person. It offered 5 million 'Spirit Dans' extra than the second-highest paying mission. The reward for this mission was on a whole new level when compared to the others.

The description of the mission made it seem as if it required the assassination of a man named Guan Yuan Wu. He was a well-known 'obscene thief' in the Southern region. It was hard to tell how many respectable families he had looted. He had stolen the innocence of many women. However, no one had ever been able to catch him. He was merely at legendry's great complete realm. However, he had practiced an extremely outstanding agility skill. Even the experts of semi-sage realm couldn't catch him. Several sage experts had failed to catch-up with him in the past. There was a note attached to the mission's file. It clearly indicated that this mission had been assigned to the experts of semi-sage realm and above in the past. However, Guan Yuan Wu had always succeeded in escaping.

"Young fellow, do you wish to take up this mission to assassinate Guan Yuan Wu?" that disciple of legendry's great complete realm asked. "The surviving disciples of the Flower Butterfly Valley had personally requested our True Martial University to take-up this mission!"

He explained further since he realized that Ye Xiwen hadn't understood his reference properly. The Flower Butterfly Valley was a small martial arts school. It constituted of female disciples only. It was far inferior to Yi Yuan School strength-wise, but it was famed since it had several pretty women. However, the Flower Butterfly Valley was destroyed by Guan Yuan Wu fifty years ago. The Valley-Head, as well a large number of disciples were plundered by him. Consequently, the Flower Butterfly Valley was wiped-out. This mission had been listed here by the disciples that had managed to run away from the valley at that time. The Flower Butterfly Valley wasn't a big school. And everything had been robbed by Guan Yuan Wu. These 9 million 'Spirit Dans' were the entirety of the savings of the surviving disciples of Flower Butterfly Valley. And they had assigned it all for this mission.

However, Guan Yuan Wu had intrepid strength. An ordinary expert of legendry's great complete realm couldn't even withstand one move of his'. In fact, most experts weren't even able to catch-up with him. And those who did... were suppressed by him. The remuneration was enough to entice higher-level experts. Therefore, not many people showed interest in this mission, and this mission had been pending for decades.

"Young Ye, I think that Guan Yuan Wu practices some evil technique to absorb the Yin Yuan (2) of females, and then uses it for his practice. His martial power must've enhanced by leaps and bounds in the past decades. You must consider carefully before you choose this mission!" that disciple reminded Ye Xiwen.

"En! I have decided!" Ye Xiwen desperately needed 'Spirit Dans'. He would receive a great reward if he were to undertake this

mission since it happened to be the highest-paid of all.

---

Notes:

Merit Hall Palace = Gongde Palace (used in earlier translations)

Yin Yuan: Yin is the negative principle of 'Yin-Yang theory'. And it is usually associated with women in a feminine sense. Yuan usually means original, primary etc. In this context, it may mean 'soul'.

# Chapter 374: Mission Accomplished

---

Ye Xiwen accepted the mission and left. The rumor about this started to spread soon after.

“What? Someone has taken the mission to catch Guan Yuan Wu? Who’s he? No one has picked this mission in over 10 years. Guan Yuan Wu is a bad news. Several people want the reward of 9 million ‘Spirit Dans’, but many have lost their lives at the hands of Guan Yuan Wu!”

“Gee, it seems that Ye Xiwen is running low on ‘Spirit Dans’... that’s why he has chosen this mission. But, isn’t it true that the Hidden Star Peak is very rich?”

“The Hidden Star Peak is obviously very rich. But, it’s Hidden Star Peak that’s rich... not Ye Xiwen. It may be possible that he’s looking to accumulate enough ‘Spirit Dans’ to step into the semi-sage realm. These heaven’s pride level experts have been recently guided by the elders of their respective inheritances to secret places for cultivation. And Ye Xiwen is very pitiful compared to them!”

“Yes. The disciples of the Hidden Star Peak are very strong. However, it had declined many years ago. And the most important thing is that it has a very few people. Moreover, its only elder remains outside all-year-round. So, there’s no one to guide him. And people say that Huang Wuji has been looking for the lost treasures of the Hidden Star Peak. The Hidden Star Peak might see a revival someday if it was found!”

“How can it be so easy when so many ancestors of the Hidden Star peak have failed to find it over the years?”

Ye Xiwen was unaware of what the people were discussing behind his back. He knew that Hidden Star Peak was very rich. However, it couldn't afford to divide its annual income among the disciples. It gave 3 million 'Spirit Dans' to each of its disciples on an annual basis. This was a good figure. That's why many people were jealous of this peak since the annual income of an average person was about 10,000 'Spirit Dans' per year in the other inheritances. After all, every inheritance had nearly hundreds-of-thousands of people. Even the smaller inheritances had tens-of-thousands of disciples. On the other hand, the Hidden Star Peak only had a handful of disciples. They obviously benefited from it. However, it wasn't as if the annual income would be entirely divided among the disciples. The ancestors of the peak had always wished to find a means to revive it. That was why the majority of the income was collected and stored for the future revival of the Hidden Star Peak.

10,000 'Spirit Dans' a year was far-from-enough for an expert of the legendary realm. Therefore, the sage realm and great sage realm experts obviously required many more 'Spirit Dans'.

Therefore, to count on the inheritance for one's income wasn't logical. One mustn't think that they'd get a great share. Their share would be like a drop of water in the bucket. Therefore, even sage and great-sage level experts only had the option to take various kinds of missions to earn the required amount of 'Spirit Dans'.



This was a genuine problem. It was impossible for the Hidden Star Peak's monthly revenue-share of disciples to satisfy Ye Xiwen's needs given his consumption rate. The total monthly income of less than 300,000 'Spirit Dans' wasn't enough. Even coupled with the high-level reward of 20 million 'Spirit Dans' for exhibiting an outstanding performance in the 'Newcomers Big Trial Competition'... it still wasn't enough for him. However, one could say that this was a great sum of money for other people.

Such an amount of 'Spirit Dans' could be considered as sufficient for a heaven's pride level expert like Fan Ming. However, it was barely enough to satisfy Ye Xiwen's immediate needs. He needed over 50 million 'Spirit Dans' to refine a blood slave of the semi-sage realm. It was an astronomical figure given his current situation.

Moreover, Ye Xiwen's breakthroughs and practice of several martial arts techniques were inevitably linked to the 'Sprit Dans'. It was hard to imagine the shortage he was currently faced with. However, an issue such as this... couldn't be solved in one-go.

The scorching sun was situated overhead a valley of the Southern region. However, the sunshine couldn't illuminate the valley. The entire valley was filled with the unpleasant miasma of peach blossoms. Whoever was to inhale this miasma... would submerge in endless lust.

A middle-aged man clad in a long loose robe was indulged in obscene pleasure above a tall platform in the valley. A beautiful woman was on top of his body; she was moving up and down. Her face revealed a painful expression. But, she couldn't stop.

If examined carefully... one would see that this beautiful woman was an expert of the legendry's great complete realm.

“Ha ha ha ha!” That middle aged man stretched-out his hand to grab the plentiful chest of that woman's and started to rub it at a whim.

He was the infamous obscene thief — Guan Yuan Wu.

Countless young women were being forced into degenerate pleasures by an evil group of young warriors under the tall platform. Those were the many youngsters whom Guan Yuan Wu had received as his disciples. He would often find himself being chased-after by the authorities in the beginning, but the people who showed interest in catching him had grown fewer and fewer over time. Moreover, he had grown stronger over time. Therefore, this strenuous and unrewarding mission was no longer worth the risk. He eventually opened a school of martial arts and named it ‘Peach Blossom Valley’. This school itself was an exceptional magic tool. It held the endless might to restrain the freedom of people inside its domain.

Soon that beautiful woman discharged her Yuan Yin, and weakly limped to the side. Guan Yuan Wu sat cross-legged and began to refine the Yuan Yin that he had just absorbed. His martial power seemed to have enhanced vigorously.

His disciples began to shout; they had started to make a big ruckus.

“Congratulations to the master. Your martial power has enhanced enormously. You’ll enter the sage realm sooner or later!”

“Master, we’re tired of toying with these young women. It’s better that we go back and catch more!” a warrior flew-up and cautiously suggested.

“Yes, you may!” Guan Yuan Wu touched his chin and said. “My Peach Blossom soul control technique has been perfected to the most critical point. I will certainly enter the semi-sage realm if you can catch and bring one thousand virgin maidens for my practice. And when that time comes, humph... even the experts of sage realm won’t be able to catch me. The world is so big! I could go anywhere!”

“Master’s martial arts are outstanding; simply invincible. But we’ve grown bored of these legendary level women. We shall capture several semi-sage level beauties once master enters the semi-sage realm. We’ve never played with a woman of semi-sage realm or above. He he, we would like to know the taste of woman moistened with the tag of the word ‘sage’ on them, and see how different they really are!”

“How will I not know the thoughts you scoundrel monkeys harbor? You’ll get what you desire when the time comes!” Guan Yuan Wu said with a smile, “Even the True Martial University isn’t maintaining a strong surveillance on me. So we can go about our business without any problem. Isn’t the Jiangshan city nearby? Slaughter everyone, and bring the women. I don’t know how many women you’ll find, but there should be enough for you boys to taste the fresh women too!”

The disciples burst into a wicked laughter after they heard Guan Yuan Wu's words.

"You deserve to die for this heinous crime!" Suddenly, a loud sound reverberated in the valley, "Humph! 'Buried Person Sword'!"

A startling sword-light appeared from outside the valley. It split-through the sky and opened countless Dao principles as the sword light came lasing down from the sky.

Those disciples, who were indulged in pleasure a moment ago, were killed and turned into blood fog by the sword light. They screamed pitifully and disappeared without any trace.

"Who has the impertinence to kill my Peach Blossom Valley's disciples?" Guan Yuan Wu crushed the Dao principles with his bare hands and flew past the sword light.

"I am Ye Xiwen from the True Martial University. I have especially come here to send you on your way to hell!" A figure broke-through the layer of unpleasant Peach Blossom miasma and appeared inside the valley. Ye Xiwen showed no trace of excitement as he looked at the shining-white naked bodies that lay on the ground. Instead, he only had endless fury in his heart. He had finally understood why everyone called this obscene thief a 'heinous villain' who had committed countless sins.

Rap\*sts were considered sinister in his previous life as well.

“Go to hell! Boy, you don’t know how profound this world is!” Guan Yuan Wu didn’t pay any attention to Ye Xiwen. He assumed that Ye Xiwen didn’t know how profound this world was in reality. He was an expert of the legendry’s great complete realm. However, one couldn’t tell how many people he had killed... or the number of women he had played with. Many of those women were at legendry’s great complete realm. Even the lord of a martial arts school was among them. However, no one had been able to catch him for these heinous crimes. Perhaps he would’ve retreated if Ye Xiwen was an expert of semi-sage realm. However, he was confident of his victory since Ye Xiwen was merely an expert of legendary realm from the looks of it.

Ye Xiwen was merely a young boy; he was nothing in front of him.

An exquisite peach-colored folding fan emerged in Guan Yuan Wu’s hand. It was a magic weapon that had stayed with him throughout his life. It was called – Ying and Yang Peach Blossom Fan.

The fan suddenly emitted an unpleasant Peach Blossom miasma. This miasma interweaved together to form an inescapable net. It advanced towards Ye Xiwen to envelop him.

The Peach Blossom miasma shrouded Ye Xiwen, and then turned into a beautiful woman. However, Ye Xiwen couldn’t see her face very clearly. Guan Yuan Wu would kill a woman after he was done playing with her. He would then capture her soul and integrate it into this Peach Blossom fan.

“I’ll break it!” Ye Xiwen sneered. An astonishing sword light emitted from every hole of the net, and lased-out in all directions.

That woman condensed from the Peach Blossom miasma was slaughtered by the sword light, and the net was torn-open in an instant.

“You’ve managed to escape for so many years. But it’s time for you to die!” Ye Xiwen said coldly. “Those other legendry’s great complete realm experts were idiots if they couldn’t kill some like you. Do you think that I can’t kill you?”

“Clang!” suddenly a ‘sword intention’ emerged from Ye Xiwen’s hand. It then condensed into a longsword. It shattered the space and momentarily rushed towards Guan Yuan Wu to kill him; just like a streamer of light.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen didn’t hold back. He had merely brandished his sword. That had split-open Guan Yuan Wu’s protection layers.

“How can there be such a terrifying expert in legendry’s great

complete realm? I'm about to step into semi-sage realm! How can I be of no match to you?!" Guan Yuan Wu shouted in disbelief. However, he didn't hesitate to turn around in retreat. It seemed as if he trod on Peach Blossom flowers as he rushed-out at an extremely fast speed. He left the Peach Blossom Valley.

"You wish to enter the Semi-sage realm huh... dream on!" Ye Xiwen sneered and pursued him. He opened his devil wings and turned into a golden streamer of light as he chased-out.

The entire Peach Blossom Valley began to issue a rumbling noise. It then exploded towards Ye Xiwen. This valley was indeed a very good tool.

Ye Xiwen didn't stop; nor did he hold back. The Heavenly Source Mirror flew-out of his body and released a scarlet light. The scarlet light spread-through the entire Peach Blossom Valley, and disintegrated it into pieces.

Ye Xiwen quickly caught-up with Guan Yuan Wu. Guan Yuan Wu's agility technique had granted him incredible speed. He appeared similar to a peach-colored figure as he tore through the space. An ordinary expert of legendry's great complete realm couldn't have caught-up with him.

However, unfortunately he had come across Ye Xiwen and his devil wings. Ye Xiwen overtook him within a moment. The 'sword intention' condensed into a big sword, and advanced towards Guan Yuan Wu. He didn't have the ability to resist... he was chopped-down and turned into blood fog.

(To be continued).



# Chapter 375: Missions Nobody Dares To Take

---

Ye Xiwen used his soul search technique to check Guan Yuan Wu's memory after he killed him. Ye Xiwen found-out the location of the place where he had stored the looted wealth from all those years. Then, Ye Xiwen crushed his soul mercilessly. Mere death was insufficient for such scums. This was Ye Xiwen's attitude towards such people.

Then, Ye Xiwen returned to the Peach Blossom Valley. The entire Peach Blossom Valley had been nearly destroyed. The unpleasant miasma of peach blossoms had leaked out as well.

Those ordinary truth level women came to their senses once the miasma of peach blossoms had been fully eliminated from the valley. Ye Xiwen looked away since those women were wearing their clothes. They then embraced each other and started to cry.

"Thanks a lot, savior. You've rescued us from the sea of fire!" those women said. These women were extremely beautiful. They had earth shattering beauty. It was touching to see the tear stained faces of these beauties.

They would've been sucked dry of their Yuan Yin if Ye Xiwen hadn't arrived. They would've then turned into dried-up human beings. This was the fate that awaited them.

"You don't need to thank me. Hurry up and leave this place. Hey, wait!" Ye Xiwen sighed. His big hand stretched-out and grasped the

spirit energy that lingered in the surrounding radius of tens of miles. He then sprinkled that spirit energy throughout the sky. It seemed like a rain of spirit energy had fallen from the sky upon those wounded and traumatized women. Their mental as well as physical injuries were quickly restored once they came in contact with the rain. In fact, some of them even made breakthroughs. This was the magical ability of the large-scale healing that Ye Xiwen had learned from Phoenix Regeneration technique. However, he had never been given the chance to use it.

“Many thanks to the savior!”

“Thanks a lot, savior!”

Those women thanked profusely. Ye Xiwen had found out from Guan Yuan Wu’s memory that his treasure trove was hidden inside the valley. He had buried it somewhere in this Peach Blossom Valley; in fact, the valley itself was a great magic tool. There was no way to open it since the Peach Blossom Valley would explode if one would try to open it by force. This showed how sinister Guan Yuan Wu was.

However, none of his plans were useful anymore. His entire wealth had fallen into Ye Xiwen’s hands. He had looted many martial arts schools over the years. However, he had squandered the loot quite fast. He had spent most of his wealth and wasn’t left with much. Treasures worth only 20 million ‘Spirit Dans’ were left. Only 10 million were left in ‘Sprit Dans’, while the rest were some rare treasures and so on.

There were only 10 million ‘Spirit Dans’, but they could be

counted as a small bonus. This trip had at least harvested 20 million ‘Spirit Dan’s for Ye Xiwen if this loot was added to the reward of 9 million ‘Spirit Dan’s’ for this mission. It had turned out to be a worthwhile trip in the end.

Ye Xiwen didn’t show any modesty as he grabbed those ‘Spirit Dans’ with his big hand. He then began to burn them. They transformed into a long river of spirit energy as they flowed in the sky, and then got absorbed by Ye Xiwen’s body.

Ye Xiwen’s body began to boil up as the long river of spirit energy started to gallop within his body; especially the mysterious space. His body began to emit colorful rays of light since he had absorbed great amounts of spirit energy. Ye Xiwen consumed the entire spirit energy to deduce the ‘Coiling Dragon Palm’ technique.

He had originally deduced the first three moves of Coiling Dragon Palm technique - ‘Hidden Dragon rises from the Abyss’, ‘Divine Dragon flings its tail’ and ‘Dense Rain Without Clouds’. This time he deduced the next two moves – ‘The shocking 50 km’ and ‘maybe jump into the Abyss’. Ye Xiwen’s entire body seemed as if it had turned into a golden dragon as he faced towards the sky and howled.

Ye Xiwen’s aura became even more intrepid than before. The ‘Coiling Dragon Palm’ technique had 9 moves in total. These nine moves coincided with the nine types of dragons that existed between the heavens and earth.

Ye Xiwen had nearly consumed the entire 10 million ‘Spirit Dans’ he had obtained in the process of deducing these two moves.

The nine moves of 'Coiling Dragon Palm' technique weren't superior to each other. However, there was no way to display its full might since he hadn't yet practiced it to perfection. Its might would become more terrifying with the deduction of more moves. And eventually, its true terrifying might would reveal itself.

It could be said that the deduction of the fifth move and the third move of the 'Coiling Dragon Palm' technique wasn't the same thing.

Then, Ye Xiwen absorbed the Peach Blossom Valley since it was a magic tool. It was inferior to a semi-sage level tool. However, it was only 'somewhat' lacking. The only thing it lacked was that a sage expert hadn't integrated their own principle into it. The 'Heavenly Source Mirror' was obviously different. It was a supreme Dao Tool, and that too an extremely outstanding one. But its restoration was nowhere near what should be... but it would automatically integrate whichever principle it wanted to... once it was restored to a certain stage. Therefore, Ye Xiwen didn't need to worry.

Ye Xiwen made the 'Heavenly Source Mirror' to swallow the Peach Blossom Valley without any hesitation. The mirror wouldn't make a suddenly breakthrough into the sage realm, but it would gradually advance towards it; one breakthrough at a time.

The 'Heavenly Source Mirror' emitted a burst of peach-colored light after it had absorbed the Peach Blossom Valley. It then got replaced by the usual scarlet light; this indicated that the 'Heavenly Source Mirror' had absorbed the Peach Blossom Valley.

“Ha ha ha, Ye Xiwen, it won’t be difficult for me to be restored to being a sage tool as long as I get to swallow several magical tools like this one!” Ye Mo laughed heartily and said.

Ye Xiwen smiled. He then opened his devil wings. His figure turned into a streamer of light and disappeared in the horizon.

Half a day later... Ye Xiwen returned to the True Martial University and went to report the mission’s status.

“What? You completed the mission?” that expert of legendry’s great complete realm who had assigned the mission to Ye Xiwen asked in an incredible tone. He couldn’t believe that Ye Xiwen had completed this mission in such a short time. He would no longer underestimate Ye Xiwen. He had understood why Ye Xiwen was ranked as a heaven’s pride level expert. An expert of such rank would never be ordinary. The reason why Ye Xiwen had seemed ordinary was because his cultivation time was too short; that’s all.

Guan Yuan Wu might’ve seemed like an ordinary expert of legendry’s great complete realm, but his reputation inside the legendry’s complete realm was very high. The most famous was his outstanding agility technique... An average expert couldn’t catch-up with him. Even the experts of semi-sage realm couldn’t catch him. This had allowed him to roam free and unfettered for so long.

What was the point of chasing him if they couldn’t even catch-up with him?!

“What, that Guan Yuan Wu has been killed by Ye Xiwen?”

“This Ye Xiwen is extremely ferocious. Guan Yuan Wu was a well-known figure inside the legendry’s great complete realm. Several semi-sage experts couldn’t catch him; he was very cunning. He would flee at the first sight of trouble. How can he be killed?”

“Indeed, each new generation excels the previous one. These heaven’s pride level experts are very ferocious. They are living-up to the rank of Heaven’s pride!”

“En!” Ye Xiwen nodded and took out the evidence. Guan Yuan Wu’s body had been reduced to dregs by Ye Xiwen. However, this had posed no difficulty while collecting the evidence.

That disciple of the Merit Palace Hall quickly took out the reward of 9 million ‘Spirit Dans’ and handed it over to Ye Xiwen once he had verified the evidence. He then said, “Young Ye, you’ve done a good job. That Guan Yuan Wu was evil, and should’ve been put down long ago!”

Ye Xiwen nodded and spoke, “I would like to take the next mission!”

“What, you wish to take another mission?” That disciple looked somewhat incredibly at Ye Xiwen. This mission must’ve been an extremely difficult one since the target was no pushover. He could be killed with one shot. One would have to suffer major losses in

completing such a dangerous mission. Most disciples usually picked a mission of this difficult only a few times in a year.

However, Ye Xiwen was different. Guan Yuan Wu couldn't even injure him. He couldn't even put a scratch on his body. So, there was no need to wait for recuperation or anything. In other words, Ye Xiwen shouldn't be compared with rest of the disciples in this regard.

“Young Ye's strength leaves us lost in admiration!” that disciple said. “It looks like Young Ye is running short on ‘Spirit Dans’. However, you've got an extremely intrepid strength. Let's do it in this way. I'll recommend you some missions that nobody has completed in last several years!”

The disciple took out a list of missions. Ye Xiwen glanced. He quickly understood why nobody had been able to complete these missions for so many years.

These important missions were marked for the experts of legendry's great complete realm. However, this realm was divided into several grades. These missions were for those old monsters who held the cultivation of more than 500-600 years; not for ordinary experts of the same realm. However, these old experts had gone past the bounds of legendry's great complete realm. Therefore, these missions had slowly accumulated over the years.

However, these missions were very lucrative. Most of them offered a reward of 10 million ‘Spirit Dans’. The highest reward was 30 million ‘Spirit Dans’. The biggest reason why this mission had the highest reward was that... a heaven's pride level expert

had been killed in this mission. A heaven's pride level expert had tried to complete this mission... but he had been killed on this particular mission. He used to have a big reputation at the time. He was merely an expert of legendry's great complete realm, but he could easily deal with the experts of semi-sage realm. Guan Yuan Wu was nothing compared to him.

“These missions are very dangerous. These missions are marked for the experts of legendry's great complete realm, but we only allow the experts of semi-sage realm to pick these missions for safety reasons. But your strength is extremely intrepid. Therefore, you can try these missions if you urgently need ‘Spirit Dans’!” that disciple explained. For an average person to take these missions — it could only mean he was courting death. However, he must've seen that Ye Xiwen was very strong. That's why he had recommended him these missions.

“I'll take these missions!” Ye Xiwen opened his mouth and announced.

“What? You'll take these missions? Young Ye, you're very strong... but can you handle so many missions?” the disciple asked. He seemed somewhat stunned by Ye Xiwen's response. Many illustrious people had come across these missions. However, even the ones with the most intrepid strength hadn't dared to choose these missions. Even if some did take up one of these missions... they did it as a group of disciples. However, Ye Xiwen wanted to single-handedly complete these missions. Would he be able to accomplish that?

That disciple opened his mouth to stop Ye Xiwen. However, he



suddenly remembered that Ye Xiwen had completed the mission of assassinating Guan Yuan Wu in a few days... and this was a mission that no one had completed in decades.

However, he didn't know that Ye Xiwen had made an easy game out of Guan Yuan Wu. Instead, he had wasted his energy and time in inquiring and finding information about the whereabouts of Guan Yuan Wu from Ye Xiwen.

“That's good. Then, I'll register your name!”

# Chapter 376: Two Years Later

---

“What, Ye Xiwen has completed the mission?”

...

“The Evil Demon of the Eastern Continent also died at his hands!”

...

“This is the first among several missions...”

...

Time flew by; day-by-day. 2 years had passed in the blink of an eye; it seemed as if time had slipped through one's fingers like sand.

A period of 2 years was a short time for a formidable expert with a long lifespan. However, Ye Xiwen had been very busy these two years.

He had undertaken the missions which no had wanted to pick. He had then been rushing here-and-there to complete them.

A time of two years was enough for Ye Xiwen to complete those missions with full devotion.

Ye Xiwen had completed several of these massive missions, and had earned over a 100 million 'Spirit Dans'. Everyone had become extremely jealous of him after hearing about this matter. However, no one dared to say anything because he had earned it by putting his life on the line.

This wasn't an exaggeration. Ye Xiwen had made several narrow escapes during those missions. He had understood why nobody had dared to pick these missions once he had set out on them.

The difficulty of these missions could scare a person to death. Even a heaven's pride level expert like Ye Xiwen had made narrow escapes during some of the mission; what could possibly be said for ordinary experts...

Many old monsters were associated with these missions. Some had even cultivated for more than 700-800 years. Many of them hadn't stepped into the semi-sage realm yet, but their strength was countless times more tyrannical than that of an ordinary expert of the legendry's great complete realm. In fact, one could say that their strength was very close to the tyranny granted by the semi-sage realm.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that escaping from the hands of those old experts hadn't been an easy task for Ye Xiwen; despite the fact that he held such incredible battle-strength.

Initially, Ye Xiwen had believed that his personal battle-strength was top-notched in the legendary realm... if not in semi-sage realm

as well. In fact, he had believed that he was strong enough to counter the strongest experts of legendary realm. However, he had understood that he had been too naïve once he had fought these monstrous old experts. Perhaps... it could be said that he had greatly underestimated the people of this world.

Back in the day... these people used to be considered peerless geniuses of their respective regions. They may have failed to enter the semi-sage realm with the passage of time, but they were exceptionally tough and hard to deal with. What was the significance of Ye Xiwen's cultivation time in comparison of theirs?

Ye Xiwen had sustained severe injuries during his first mission. In fact, he had been pushed to the fringes of defeat. He had relied on assistance from the 'Heavenly Source Mirror' to defeat the enemy in the end, and had thereby completed the mission. He had then come to realize that there's always someone better out-there... no matter how good one thinks they are.

This segment of the legendry's great complete realm experts could kill him with ease; let alone the semi-sage realm. Ye Xiwen restrained his pride in his heart, and began to conscientiously enhance his strength. It was rather difficult for most people to reach the pinnacle of half-step legendary realm or legendary realm. However, the legendary realm was a mere beginning for a majority of the ambitious experts... nothing more. If one had to transcend the mortal world and become a transcendent being — then this was akin to taking the first step into the temple of martial arts.

Legendary realm was merely designed to lay the foundation. If one aspired to walk farther in the future — they would have to lay a solid foundation in the legendary realm. Ye Xiwen understood this fact. Therefore, his objective of earning big-money from these missions had turned into a method of honing his skills and gaining practical experience. This was a very important transformation.

The missions were divided into three levels. They started from ‘easy’, and then gradually progressed to the most difficult ones. Ye Xiwen had started to treat these missions as a means to gain experience after he had experienced the first mission.

The first mission had been the simplest. However, Ye Xiwen had a rough time while finishing it. He was very proud of his strength when he had undertaken these missions, and had reckoned that he’d complete the missions very easily. However, he had ended-up sustaining severe injuries during the simplest mission.

As Ye Xiwen gradually proceeded with the missions — the difficulty level gradually increased, and he started to sustain more injuries. One time... he narrowly escaped his fate; that too after he had sustained fatal injuries. However, the rewards for the missions became more and more lucrative as the difficulty level increased. Gradually, his strength started to increase. He had initially believed that his strength was at the peak... however, his strength still continued to increase.

And Ye Xiwen had desired to accomplish this since the legendary realm was meant to lay the foundation. He would have boundless future-prospects if his strength were to increase greatly within the legendary realm.

Ye Xiwen's reputation had gradually spread with the completion of the increased number of missions. He acquired a lot of fame inside the university before he had picked these missions. However, this fame was centered on the younger generation since he was one of the heaven's pride level experts of this session. Therefore, he was considered among the few new disciples who possessed outstanding strength.

However, this fact remained restricted within the bounds of the younger generation alone. Many powerhouses of the older generation looked down on these heaven's pride level experts. These heaven's pride disciples might possibly become outstanding talents in the future. However, that would happen in the future... they were 'nothing' at present. Many of the hidden profound experts of legendry's great complete realm could conveniently suppress these so-called heaven's pride level experts.

However, many people had started to realize the fact that Ye Xiwen had managed to complete the missions which were originally deemed impossible. Therefore, Ye Xiwen's reputation had gradually begun to grow louder and louder. In fact, several experts of the True Martial University hadn't taken notes of this matter early-on. They merely felt that a 'desperate-for-missions-madman' had arrived in this new batch. However, he had received extremely troublesome missions which could only be considered as dead-end jobs for ordinary people. Therefore, Ye Xiwen's reputation had gradually started to spread everywhere; not as this session's heaven's pride level expert — but as an expert of legendry's great complete realm with super battle-efficiency. In fact, several people had noticed that there would be no scars on his body every time he'd return from a battle. In addition, he'd complete every mission within a very short period of time. This

indicated that Ye Xiwen wouldn't spend much time in recuperating after the mission's completion. Did that possibly mean that he won every battle without sustaining serious injuries?

They were unaware that the phoenix regeneration technique was so incredible that it could repair all injuries in a split second, and restore Ye Xiwen to his peak condition. In fact, they had never thought of such a wonderful technique. Therefore, the majority of people could only guess that Ye Xiwen didn't sustain any injuries during the completion of these missions. This led several people to admire his strength.

They were unaware that Ye Xiwen had barely scraped-by during several of these missions. Some of those missions' targets possessed insane strength; strength which went far beyond Ye Xiwen's imagination. These profound experts of the legendary realm hadn't been able to breakthrough to the sage realm in their lifetime. However, they would've had boundless future prospects in case they would've stepped into the sage realm. This was the impartiality of the heaven's law. These experts possessed outstanding talent, and were qualified to make further breakthroughs; just like any other normal expert. In fact, they could've advanced triumphantly after the breakthrough since they could rely on the foundation they had laid in the legendary realm. There was no such thing as impossible in this regard in the world of martial arts. Therefore, nobody had dared to look down on those old experts.

Every mission that Ye Xiwen completed in the early phases had proved out to be exceptionally difficulty for him. However, he had accumulated the 'Spirit Dans' required for a breakthrough within a year's time. He had then made a breakthrough into half-step

legendary eighth stage. His situation had improved rather considerably thereafter.

Ye Xiwen's fighting strength hadn't been the same after he had made the breakthrough into half-step legendary eighth stage. In fact, he had speculated that his effective-strength had reached the semi-sage level.

However, Ye Xiwen's cultivation-level was far from the semi-sage realm. Therefore, there was no direct way to judge whether his fighting-strength had reached the semi-sage level or not. However, he could faintly sense that it hadn't. But even so, his fighting-strength had increased dramatically after he made the breakthrough into the half-step legendary eighth stage. In fact, it had nearly reached the upper limits of the legendry's great complete realm. This had allowed Ye Xiwen to complete the missions with much greater speed.

Ye Xiwen was convinced that his fighting-strength had reached the cap of the legendry's great complete realm after this breakthrough. In fact, he was under the impression that it would reach the semi-sage level with the next breakthrough.

Two years had passed, and Ye Xiwen had only been able to make one breakthrough. However, it didn't mean that he hadn't done anything of significance in these two years. In fact... whether it was 'Coiling Dragon Palm', 'Observing Person Scripture', 'Buried Sword Secrets', or that one page of ancient god scripture... he had comprehended them all at the cost of a great amount of 'Spirit Dans'. Initially, Ye Xiwen had merely comprehended one or two moves of these techniques. However, many more were still left.



Ye Xiwen had never been given the time to improve himself. Therefore, he had deliberately restricted the promotion of his cultivation during these two years. He had painstakingly invested his time and energy into building a robust foundation in order to prepare for the sage realm. In fact, he had used an overwhelming majority of the 'Spirit Dans' in his stock to comprehend these techniques.

The nine moves of the 'Coiling Dragon Palm', namely – 'Hidden Dragon Rises from the Abyss', 'Divine Dragon Flings its Tail', 'Dense Rain Without Clouds', 'The Shocking 50km', 'Maybe jump into the Abyss', 'Wyvern Soars in the Sky', 'Two Dragons Play With Pearls', 'Pearl Dragon Fights in the wild', and 'Time to Ride Six Dragons', had been entirely deduced by Ye Xiwen. The might of the 'Coiling Dragon Palm' technique had reached an earth-shattering level after the deduction of all the nine moves. In fact, it could now produce the terrifying might of an ancient martial arts technique.

Ye Xiwen had learned several martial techniques, but his understanding of the 'Coiling Dragon Palm' had always been 'somewhat' suspended midair in comparison to the other martial art techniques. It wasn't extremely strong, but it wasn't very weak either. However, the 'Coiling Dragon Palm' technique had transformed tremendously after the entire set of nine moves had been deduced.

Ye Xiwen wouldn't dare to say that he had deduced the original version of the 'Coiling Dragon Palm'. However, the version he had comprehended was the most suited one for him. That was because he had comprehended it on the basis of his own insights.

The ‘Tyrant Body Technique’, ‘Observing Person Scripture’, and ‘Buried Sword Secrets’ had also advanced by leaps and bounds.

# Chapter 377: Everyone Exclaims In Admiration

---

Ye Xiwen had only practiced the 'Tyrant Body Technique' till the fifth layer at present. However, his deduction of the same had already reached the seventh layer. This meant that he could make a breakthrough to the sixth layer at any time.

Then, his 'Gilded Tyrant Form' would attain a completely different level of tyranny. However, even if the breakthrough hadn't happen yet, the toughness of his body had reached great proportions. This was owed to the continuous absorption of 'spirit energy' over the last two years since it had strengthened his 'Gilded Tyrant Form'. His physical strength had also increased by leaps and bounds in these two years. It had become very different from what it used to be two years ago. There was a difference of cloud and mud between his previous and current strength.

Ye Xiwen's 'Observing Person Scripture' had been deduced to the third layer. Though, he had been lingering on the first layer itself. He had condensed Jupiter and its satellites. However, this hadn't hindered Ye Xiwen in any manner. He had continued to deduce the 'Observing Person Scripture', and had already deduced the upcoming layers.

He had mastered the 'Buried Sword Secrets' even though he had obtained it rather recently. He hadn't tested the last move yet, but he was confident that he had mastered it. However, he couldn't try that move since it could cost him his life.

The 'Phoenix Regeneration Technique', 'Devil Wings', and other

secret techniques had undergone massive improvements as well. One could say that the current Ye Xiwen was entirely different from what he used to be two years ago. He had progressed to the extent where he could casually blow-away a group of experts of his level with just one punch.

Several of his power-techniques had been deduced (1) too. However, he hadn't seen a breakthrough. One of the reasons for this was that Ye Xiwen wanted to stay in this realm. He wanted to accumulate as much as he could. This would later allow him to advance in one fell swoop. He would then be able to rise to great heights in the future, and the accumulation within this realm had a direct relation to it.

There was another reason as well... he didn't have enough 'Spirit Dans'. There hadn't been a single day when he wasn't in need of 'Spirit Dans' since the day he had obtained the mysterious space. Whether it was to have a breakthrough, or to deduce martial art techniques, or to practice and quickly master those deduced techniques... he must always have sufficient amount of 'Spirit Dans'. He had nearly reached the point where he was in need of an astronomical number of 'Spirit Dans'. There would've been no problem if his requirements were only limited for martial arts. However, the secret techniques and magical abilities he possessed were all world-shaking in their individual accord. Each could be regarded as a stunning heritage. This had led to a drastic increase in his consumption of 'Spirit Dans'.

That's the reason he was always looking for missions even though he had access to such a huge treasure-house like the 'Hidden Star Peak'. His annual income simply couldn't meet his requirements. In fact, his consumption rate of 'spirit energy' could

scare a sage expert to death.

The amount of ‘Spirit Dans’ that Ye Xiwen had earned in these two years had gone past the 100 million mark. However, it wasn’t enough. It could be said that even the very rich ‘Hidden Star Peak’ couldn’t meet his prodigal demands. The amount of ‘Spirit Dans’ that he had earned in these two years was more than enough for an ordinary person to cultivate his way to the sage realm a scratch; even then, there would be some left over. However, for him... it wasn’t enough.

Others would stake everything on their aptitude and cultivation time. However, their physique wasn’t the best. Moreover, Ye Xiwen cultivation time was less than ten years. So, he could only depend on the ‘Spirit Dans’ to catch-up with those god-gifted geniuses. He couldn’t think of any other approach to compete with those geniuses who had a far higher cultivation time than his’.

However, other people didn’t know about this. They merely believed that he was a top-notch genius and a heaven’s pride level expert. His growth seemed normal to them — no matter how fast it was. The burden of their expectations was Ye Xiwen’s protective layer. He couldn’t afford to uncover this veil.

Innate talent and physique couldn’t be stolen, but his mysterious space wasn’t the same. If this secret were to come out — then it might draw the attention of every expert of the True Martial World.

If he had requested the ‘Hidden Star Peak’ for such a higher number of ‘Spirit Dans’ — then he would have to explain why he

needed so many of them. However, he couldn't afford to reveal this secret.

Therefore, Ye Xiwen had decided to earn the 'Spirit Dans' on his own after considering it at a length. His mysterious space was the foundation of his martial arts practice. Even a slight leak of this secret could pose a great threat to him. So, he could take no chances.

“What's the next mission that Ye Xiwen is about to complete?”

“This should be his last among the missions he had taken. However, it's also the most difficult one. It involves killing a genius of Bai Mo Jiao (2) named Luo Tong Guang. And that man has recently risen to fame. This Luo Tong Guan has been very active among the geniuses that Bai Mo Jiao has recruited in this session. He had led an army of devils and had exterminated countless families. He's very hard to deal with!”

“This mission is the deadliest among those missions. Even an expert of great sage realm may not return from this mission; let alone Ye Xiwen. Luo Tong Guang is an extremely ferocious and magnificent expert among the new-comers in Bai Mo Jiao. He's a heaven's pride level expert as well. Most importantly, it's said that Luo Tong Guang stays in the underground base of Bai Mo Jiao all year round. Forget about Ye Xiwen — even a great sage expert couldn't return from there!”

Bai Mo Jiao was a giant force... not just in the Southern region, but in the entire True Martial World. It wasn't inferior to the True Martial University in any regard. Moreover, it was backed by the

Devil Race. If computed — the strength of Devil Race was superior to that of the True Martial University. But Bai Mo Jiao was the real enemy of the people of the True Martial World. Every force of the True Martial World was hostile towards it because of its evil interests.

The experts inside Bai Mo Jiao were enormous in numbers. In fact, the experts of sage realm and great sage realm were present in abundance. Nobody could complete this mission on their own as far as the public opinion was concerned. Even if Luo Tong Guang were to come-out in the open — he'd be accompanied by many sage realm experts. Nobody could think of a way to kill him.

“No one can complete this mission. Ye Xiwen will die if he goes there. It would be extremely difficult for him to get out of there even if he were to somehow kill Luo Tong Guang. It's simply impossible!”

“However, it is difficult to say how many impossible missions he has completed in the last two years. May be he can complete this one too. These heaven's pride level experts have many hidden methods and cards up their sleeves. You never know!”

“How do you say it's possible?” an onlooker sneered and said. “This mission is impossible for anyone. Do you think those high-level experts of Bai Mo Jiao are blind or something? You think they won't spot Ye Xiwen? There's only a small possibility of success if several forces of the True Martial World join forces to destroy Bai Mo Jiao!”

“He will die if he tries to complete this mission!”

“I think so too. I think that there’s high probability that Ye Xiwen will give-up on this mission!”

Nobody believed that Ye Xiwen could complete this mission. However, he had completed several missions that had been deemed impossible by most people. Therefore, everyone was in dilemma. Yet, most of them were inclined towards him failing in this mission.

Several people would say that this mission was simply impossible to complete each time, but Ye Xiwen would still complete the said-mission. The missions turned out to be very thrilling on several occasions, but he had managed to complete them in the end.

Sometimes, the news about his mission would spread all over, and would even reach the ears of the enemies since so many people would discuss his new missions. Sometimes, the enemies would even launch surprise attacks on him in attempts to ambush him on the way to the mission.

Ye Xiwen felt helpless regarding this matter. He didn’t have any method to shut the loud-mouths of these gossip-loving people. He couldn’t stop everyone from talking. He could only solve this problem with his tyrannical strength.

However, this mission was different from the previous ones. The targets had possessed tyrannical strengths in the previous missions as well, but most of them were small forces. Some were even unaffiliated with any major forces. Therefore, they weren’t



difficult to deal with. The biggest problem in this mission was not Luo Tong Guan, but Bai Mo Jiao itself.

Bai Mo Jiao had an enormous number of experts. To kill Luo Tong Guang in their presence... was harder than reaching for the heavens. Even a great sage expert was said to never return from their lair. Therefore, nobody was optimistic that Ye Xiwen would be able to complete this mission.

Even the people who used to talk in favor of Ye Xiwen every time weren't optimistic this once.

However, Ye Xiwen had returned unscathed to the True Martial University even still. He went inside the Merit Palace Hall. This suddenly attracted the attention of countless people.

“See, I told you. Ye Xiwen will give-up on this mission. He wouldn't have come back alive otherwise!”

“I know. Even an expert of great sage realm can't complete this mission. It's understandable that he couldn't complete it!”

“It's not surprising why nobody could complete this mission for so many years!”

Almost everyone said the same thing unanimously. Meanwhile, Ye Xiwen entered the Merit Palace Hall... ignoring the popular discussion.

Ye Xiwen arrived in front of a disciple at the reception and said, “I’ve come to report that the mission is cleared. I’ve killed Bai Mo Jiao’s Luo Tong Guan!”

Then, Ye Xiwen stretched-out his hand into the void and grabbed the head of a person. It was a young man’s head. Those deceased anger-filled eyes were glaring towards the sky.

“What? How is it possible? He has really completed the mission. It’s incredible. It’s not a fake, is it?!”

“It’s not a fake. That face... I’ve seen it earlier... in a portrait of Luo Tong Guang. It’s him. You don’t know how many people hated him, and wanted him dead!”

“But, how in the world did he complete this mission? Wasn’t it supposed to be a mission impossible? Even for a great sage expert?!”

“My god!”

A look of disbelief appeared on everyone’s faces. This mission was extremely difficult. Nobody had thought that Ye Xiwen would be able to complete it.

The disciple at the reception promptly took the head and raised it to verify.

Ye Xiwen heard what everyone was saying, but he didn’t say

anything in reply. It might have been an incredible thing for other people. However, it wasn't impossible in his eyes.

This mission was very difficult because of the presence of so many experts of Bai Mo Jiao in the vicinity of the target. It was nearly impossible not to alert them. However, Ye Xiwen possessed methods which could enable him to restrain his breath. He knew techniques to transform his appearance. He had successfully disguised himself as one of the disciples of Bai Mo Jiao. He had then become one of them and snuck inside.

There are two steps required in practicing a power technique. First step requires deduction of a technique. Ye Xiwen burns spirit dans to operate his mysterious space to achieve that. The second step again involves consumption of spirit dans, but this time he does that to pay the toll to enter the mysterious space. Once he is inside, he can freely practice the deduced technique and master it faster.

In the last two years, Ye Xiwen has deduced a lot of stuff but has yet to practice them. But the deduction of stuff increases his knowledge or wisdom and it more or less like accumulation. Just like he had accumulated knowledge in Yi Yuan School's library to have a breakthrough.

Bai Mo Jiao = Devil Worship Religion or Devil Worship Cult

## Chapter 378: Only You Can!

---

It might've been a difficult task for others. However, it was an easy task for Ye Xiwen. Moreover, his ability to restrain his breath to hide his true power and transform his aura had been very helpful. The devil wings that he had obtained by practicing devil arts had always emitted strong devil energy. However, his divinities would suppress and hide this devil energy. Otherwise, his whole body would've looked like a great devil.

Therefore, disguising as a disciple of Devil Worship Cult (1) had been a piece of cake for him. Moreover, the Devil Worship Cult had countless disciples. It was difficult for people to know each and every one. Consequently, it had been very easy for Ye Xiwen to get mixed among them.

However, Ye Xiwen had still remained hidden inside the Devil Worship Cult's lair for a good two months; he had patiently waited to ambush his target. This had helped him in getting a clear picture of the Devil Worship Cult. This eventually helped him in finding an opportunity to kill Luo Tong Guang.

Luo Tong Guang was extremely strong. However, Ye Xiwen was stronger. Not to mention that Ye Xiwen had planned for three whole days before he had launched a surprise attack on Luo Tong Guang. Ye Xiwen had eventually killed him at a desolate place. Then, he had left the lair of the Devil Worship Cult with ease.

This wasn't an impossible mission for Ye Xiwen. However, he had only been able to complete this mission because of his special abilities. Otherwise, this was an impossible mission for an ordinary

person. In fact, even Ye Xiwen would've given-up on this mission if he hadn't possessed such abilities. He certainly wanted to sharpen his skills, but he didn't wish to throw away his life in vain.

Other people's discussions were stained in disbelief, but that didn't affect Ye Xiwen.

Soon, the head that he had brought-back had been verified. It was indeed the head of Luo Tong Guang. True Martial University naturally had the methods to verify whether it was genuinely Luo Tong Guang's head or not.

An old man clad in white clothes came-out from the depths of the Merit Palace Hall. One could tell from his clothing that he was a Merit Elder of the Merit Palace Hall. He arrived in front of Ye Xiwen with a cosmos sack (2).

Everyone present in the Merit Palace Hall looked somewhat strangely at this Merit Elder. Ye Xiwen had completed a long-pending mission. However, this mission of legendary rank wasn't a very big deal in the end; well, it wasn't worth a Merit Elder's personal attention.

"We've verified. This is Luo Tong Guang's head!" The Merit Elder didn't mention how they had verified this. The Merit Palace Hall obviously had its methods. Otherwise, everyone would've tried to deceive them.

The Merit Elder spoke with authority.

“This is the reward for the mission. 30 million ‘Spirit Dans’!” The Merit Elder handed-over a cosmos sack to Ye Xiwen. This was Ye Xiwen’s reward. This mission had offered the highest reward so far.

“You must come with me!” the Merit Elder stated.

“Yes!”

Ye Xiwen followed the Merit Elder, and went into the depths of the Merit Palace Hall. The Merit Elder turned towards Ye Xiwen after they had ventured significantly deeper, and said, “I have specially called you here because there’s a mission that only you can complete!”

“Please tell!” Ye Xiwen cupped his hands in obeisance and said. He wasn’t afraid of these big organizations, but he wasn’t a rash guy either. He didn’t want to offend people for no reason. In fact, he might not have messed with the Law Enforcement Hall if they hadn’t shown unnecessary aggression against him.

In fact, there were several people like Ye Xiwen who didn’t know how to deal with the Law Enforcement Hall. The Law Enforcement Hall and Merit Palace Hall were respectively in-charge of delivering punishment and issuing rewards. The Law Enforcement Hall had ideologically played the negative role of a bad cop. Naturally, many people weren’t able to keep-up with them. The main ideology of the Law Enforcement Hall was to use the power of law as they wished to control the disciples of the True Martial University. However, the disciples of the True Martial University were very rebellious. They couldn’t be tamed that easily.

“A disciple of the Merit Palace hall has turned out to be a traitor. His name is Zhu Tian Zong. He’s one of the new disciples of the Merit Palace Hall. He has been trained very meticulously by us. He has mastered several secret techniques of the Merit Palace Hall, and knows several secrets of the True Martial University. He has betrayed us and fled away. And the problem is that we cannot disclose this matter in public!” The Merit Elder continued, “We’re afraid that the other forces will try to find-and-abduct him if we were to disclose this matter in public. We can’t let that happen because that will pose a serious threat to our True Martial University!”

“We won’t be able to give you a reward in the open because of the confidential nature of this mission. However, our Merit Palace Hall will remember you for this favor; regardless of your success or failure in this mission!” The Merit Elder’s eyes flashed as he eagerly awaited Ye Xiwen’s reply.

Ye Xiwen pondered for a while. This was a big chance to earn the Merit Palace Hall’s goodwill. This wasn’t just a chance to kindle a friendship with a Merit Elder... but with the entire Merit Palace Hall. This friendship might seem ordinary now, but it could surprise him pleasantly in the most crucial time.

At present, Ye Xiwen was in dire need of ‘Spirit Dans’, but his need wasn’t dire-enough that he’d disregard others’ plight. Moreover, he had offended the Law Enforcement Hall. Therefore, it would be beneficial for him if he were able to develop friendly relations with the Merit Palace Hall.

“But the Merit Palace Hall has so many experts. Finding a few willing-experts for this mission shouldn’t be difficult. Why did you ask me?” Ye Xiwen asked. This matter could be solved by the Merit Palace Hall’s internal population. So why bother requesting an outsider?

“He’s one of the top experts among the new disciples of our Merit Palace Hall. He has been trained vigorously by us. He has a wide range of contacts inside the Palace Hall. Since he has yet to get a clean cheat in the investigation, no one is out of the suspicion-range. Therefore, it’s quite possible that he may get the news about our ‘chase and kill’ warrant. Then, it will be impossible to catch him. So, we can’t have insiders as a part of this mission!” the Merit Elder said as he smiled wryly. The probability of such a traitor popping-out from their carefully nurtured disciples wasn’t high. However, it had happened nonetheless. There was no other choice but to put down this traitor before he caused a bigger mess. In other words, this mission had basically turned-out to be ‘crushing one’s own foot while lifting a rock to drop on one’s enemy.’

“That Zhu Tian Zong possesses tyrannical strength. He is merely at legendry’s great complete realm, but an ordinary expert of the same level cannot rival his strength. An ordinary expert cannot take-up this mission. Only you can. You’re the most suitable candidate for this mission!” the Merit Elder spoke in a somewhat contended manner. The Merit Palace hall would train its disciples carefully and meticulously. Therefore, the mission of assassinating one such disciple couldn’t be taken lightly.

Ye Xiwen pondered for a moment. He couldn’t afford to invest too much time on this task. However, it was a good opportunity to hone his skills.



“Of course, we’ll send another team of disciples in order to divert his attention. You must act secretly. Try to attack and kill him as soon as possible. Particularly, before other forces find him!” the Merit Elder said.

“Understood!” Ye Xiwen nodded.

Ye Xiwen left the Merit Palace Hall after he had received the mission. He calmly returned to the ‘Hidden Star Peak’. The ‘Hidden Star Peak’ was extremely quiet at this time. It was certainly livelier than this on usual days. Yang Wen Jun and Deng Shui Xin were undergoing closed-door training. Everyone had been undergoing closed-door training ever since the Hidden Star Peak had obtained the complete version of the Hidden Star Scripture from Ye Xiwen. There had been a cap on their cultivations because they had been cultivating the incomplete version of the Hidden Star Scripture. That was the reason they usually didn’t dare to have breakthroughs. However, now there were no obstacles in their path since they had the complete version of the Hidden Star Scripture. They could have breakthroughs without any worry. The strength of the Hidden Star Peak would advance by leaps and bounds in the time to come.

Big Brother Huang Wuji had left the Hidden Star Peak again. The Third Brother Bai Jian Song was undergoing closed-door training in order to have the breakthrough into the great sage realm.

Therefore, there was no one on the Hidden Star Peak; apart from the wolf cub, who was usually scurrying about.

“Fu\*k you! I’ll bite you to death the next time you dare to call me a pet dog!” the wolf cub cursed-out-loud in his usual foul-mouthed fashion as Ye Xiwen returned to the Hidden Star Peak on a beam of light.

Ye Xiwen heard the small wolf shouting curses, and couldn’t help but smile. This small wolf hadn’t changed one bit in these two years. His strength had improved unceasingly, but his appearance hadn’t changed. His shape and size were still the same as before. The disciples of the surrounding inheritances used to call him ‘pet dog’ behind his back. It was hard to tell when the wolf cub came to know about this, but when he did – it gave rise to long-term tug-war between him and them. The wolf cub was carefree, but his strength was no joke. No one had taken note of him when he had secretly entered the legendry’s great complete realm. To be precise, he had recovered his strength to this stage. Ye Xiwen could still suppress him, but an average expert was no match for him. The disciples of those inheritances would often chase after the wolf cub, but they’d never dared to attack him. Two years ago, the tyrannical Huang Wuji had warned other forces that whoever would try to bully the Hidden Star Peak... would have to face the consequences. Who would dare to mess with the Hidden Star Peak’s people after they had witnessed the demise of the War Dead Star Peak at the hands of Huang Wuji?

In addition, the wolf cub had learned to maintain his calm. He would remain cool unless something big happened; he wouldn’t cause any needless ruckus.

However, that one instance had spread his name as ‘pet dog’ everywhere.

Ye Xiwen didn't pay any attention to this matter. He didn't consider the wolf cub as a pet. Instead, he used to see him as an impudent and brazenly shameless friend who had a bad influence. He had never put a leash on the wolf cub or stopped him from going anywhere. In the last two years, the wolf cub had often mysteriously left the True Martial University. And he had always returned with an enhanced strength. Ye Xiwen was aware that the wolf cub had an extraordinary origin. However, he could only sigh with emotion as he'd look at the wolf cub's breakthrough speed. In fact, his progress speed could baffle anyone.

“Have you seen such a handsome pet dog before? You must be blind if I look like a dog to you!” the wolf cub spoke as he arrived beside Ye Xiwen. He was extremely charged-up, and found it difficult to dissipate his excess anger.

Ye Xiwen couldn't help but laugh out loud. Earlier, only a few people used to call him pet dog. However, he had once created a ruckus in the neighborhood out of sheer boredom. Thereafter, the word 'pet dog' had become synonymous with him.

They would often call out — the pet dog has returned to the Hidden Star Peak! Then everyone would scatter like birds and beasts.

“Can't you keep quiet?” Ye Xiwen said somewhat helplessly.

“Ye Xiwen, it's boring here. Why don't we make a big scene here for our own entertainment?” the wolf cub chuckled mischievously.

“Do it on your own if you want to die that badly!” Ye Xiwen didn’t show the slightest interest in wolf cub’s remark. Reckless actions in a place like the True Martial University could get one killed.

“So boring!” The wolf cub curled his lips and said, “I’m planning to go to back to the demon island soon. My cultivation has reached the pinnacle of legendary realm. I want to step into the sage realm, but the restoration of my cultivation is very slow here!”

Ye Xiwen felt like slapping him for that comment, but he was too slow and was thrown-off by the wolf cub’s next comment.

“Good!” However, Ye Xiwen didn’t say much since this matter involved the enhancement of his strength.

Devil Worship Cult = Bai Mo Jiao

‘Cosmos Sack’ can also be translated as ‘Universe Sack’ or ‘Heaven and Earth Sack’. But the term ‘Cosmos sack’ is more popular in the community so I will stick to it.

# Chapter 379: Semi-Sage Blood Slave!

---

Ye Xiwen had never put any restrictions on the wolf cub. So, he let him go!

The 'Hidden Star Peak' became even quieter after the wolf cub left. It had turned silent. Ye Xiwen went inside his small courtyard and laid out a barrier. Then, he dived into the 'Heavenly Source Mirror'.

He emerged in a boundless scarlet world. There was a huge blood pool, and a big figure was getting churned inside it.

The Star Colossus had become much calmer in comparison to how it used to be two years ago. A lot of its power had been extracted in these two years. It wasn't enough to prove fatal for it, but it was sufficient to make it quiet.

"Ye Mo, let's begin. I want to condense a blood slave!" Ye Xiwen stated. Ye Xiwen had accumulated 50 million 'Spirit Dans' several times in the past two years. This was the amount that was required to condense a blood slave of semi-sage realm. However, he had never condensed one. Instead, he had consumed those 'Spirit Dans' to operate his mysterious space in order to deduce various martial arts techniques.

However, this time he had earned 30 million 'Spirit Dans' at once. And he had enough 'Spirit Dans' to condense a blood slave of 50 million 'Spirit Dans'. So, he was ready to condense a blood slave of semi-sage realm.

Ye Xiwen had taken into account that many forces would find out about Zhu Tiang Zong's escape soon. And, several experts of the other forces were likely to set-out in search of him then. He would feel a lot safer if he had a blood slave of semi-sage realm by his side. Ye Xiwen wouldn't have been so cautious if this mission had required him to deal with Zhu Tian Zong alone.

Endless amount of blood started to boil inside the blood-pool. Then, magical symbols began to condense within the blood-pool; bit by bit. The energy of that Star Colossus started to get extracted in a frenzied manner. A blood slave was about to be condensed inside the blood-pool.

“Ah, Ye Xiwen, you'll die a dog's death!” the Star Colossus screamed when it felt large amounts of energy being crazily extracted from its body.

Ye Xiwen didn't say anything. He sat cross-legged and started to float over the blood pond. Ye Mo was unceasingly chanting the secret engraving technique. Those magical symbols had begun to condense into a human figure.

These magical symbols started to appear similar to body cells as they began to accumulate in order to take the appearance of a human. Meanwhile, countless 'Spirit Dans' started burning inside the Heavenly Source Mirror. The 'spirit energy' was unceasingly pouring into the mirror. The Heavenly Source Mirror started to emit waves of scarlet light since so much 'spirit energy' was being poured into it. The speed of the blood slave condensation-process increased dramatically as a result.

Ye Xiwen was unceasingly operating the secret method Ye Mo had taught him. The blood slave was beginning to get condensed; little by little.

Semi-sage and legendary were two entirely different realms. If someone was at semi-sage realm — it meant they had taken half a step into the sage realm. If the Houtian realm (1) involved tempering one's own body... then the Xiantian realm involved establishing a bridge to connect one's own body with the 'heaven and earth' (2). It was necessary to make this connection using the bridge in order to step into the truth realm.

One could finally begin to realize the presence of various principles which governed the heaven and earth once the bridge with the heaven and earth was established, and one had entered the truth realm. In fact, these world-principles were present in the mountains and rivers as well. They were present everywhere; they controlled everything.

One could barely touch upon the existences of these world-principles in the legendary realm. But, the sage realm was a different concept altogether. However, one would have to be extraordinary in order to enter the sage realm. It was tantamount to transcending the mortal world. Everything in this realm was poles apart from the previous realms.

One could begin to integrate the world-principles with one's own body in order to form 'dao principles' in the sage realm. Moreover, a sage expert could draw-out the power of the world-principles present within his body, and use it in his attacks. In other words,

fighting a sage expert was like fighting against the world itself. That was why the experts of sage realm were so difficult to deal with. It wouldn't be wrong to say that only outstanding geniuses could enter the sage realm.

It was very difficult to have a clear understanding of these principles since they were intangible and invisible to most people. That was why there were many experts of legendry's great complete realm who were unable to complete this step and remained stuck; despite having practiced for hundreds of years.

Their martial power would continue to increase with the passage of years, and would reach terrifying levels. So much so that ordinary experts of the legendry's great complete realm would pose no threat to them. However, even so, most experts failed to complete this step of transformation, and remained stuck in legendary realm.

Ye Xiwen wouldn't have dared to say that his accumulation of energy had reached the pinnacle. However, his battle-strength could've reached the level of semi-sage realm based on his profound foundation and the heritages which he possessed. But, that hadn't happen since he hadn't instilled the world-principles into his body yet.

He didn't have enough grasp or assurance that he'd able to condense a world-principle within his body. It was important to comprehend a world-principle to the preliminary level before one could attempt to integrate it with their body.

That's why the dynasties of the past used to judge a genius by



their innate talent, and not on the basis of the foundation of their body. That was so because a person's body foundation would be as good as useless if they weren't able to comprehend the principles; even if one's body foundation was so excellent that it went beyond the heaven's will. Therefore, a person with negligible innate-talent was considered useless since they'd never be able to cross the crucial step of comprehending and condensing the world-principles. Of course, this case was quite rare. Generally, an expert with great innate talent was often adorned with outstanding body foundation.

Ye Xiwen's innate talent might not be the best out there, but he could be considered ahead of everyone in the younger generation when it came to the aspect of comprehending the world-principles; all-thanks to his mysterious space. As long as he had sufficient 'Spirit Dans' — he could continue to make breakthroughs.

This step was the biggest problem in a blood slave's condensation. He must first condense the world-principles on behalf of the blood slave before he could condense it. That was why he hadn't condensed a blood slave earlier even when he had sufficient 'Spirit Dans'. He basically didn't have enough grasp to condense world-principles back then.

A semi-sage condensed principle was only a semi-finished product in comparison to a full-fledged sage condensed principle. But, Ye Xiwen was still likely to face many difficulties.

Ye Xiwen focused his mind, and submerged into a deep meditative state. The loud roars of the Star Colossus pierced his ears.

Those principles gradually became clear to him once he had fully concentrated his mind. He could sense them in the surroundings. There were spread in all directions like spider webs. Every strand represented a world-principle. Every strand emitted endless divine light. These were the very principles that governed the existence of the mountains and the rivers. They controlled everything in the world.

If Ye Xiwen would tell other people about the scene which he had perceived in this moment... it would scare them to death. These principles would appear hazy to most people. In fact, ordinary people couldn't perceive them.

It was impossible for others to see the principles spread throughout the sky like Ye Xiwen had just managed.

Ye Xiwen's 'Real Elemental Energy' spread-around, and began to capture the principles.

"Bang!" with a loud sound, Ye Xiwen grabbed the first principle and pulled it over. Then, he grabbed the second principle... then the third... and so on. He grabbed more and more principles with the help of his 'Real Elemental Energy'. These principles then began to condense together. Ye Xiwen had forcefully gathered these principles. But he hadn't fused them. Therefore, the resultant condensed-principle could only be considered as a semi-sage principle.

If they were to be fused properly... the resultant principle would

be considered a sage realm principle. However, this step was an enormous victory for Ye Xiwen in itself. A faint smile appeared on his face.

Ye Xiwen continued to condense more and more dao principles of the semi-sage realm. His speed had increased tremendously after he had condensed the first dao principle. It was hard to tell how long after...

“Bang!” suddenly an explosion occurred in the blood-pond. Then, a bloody silhouette appeared in the blood pond. It was exuding the aura of semi-sage realm from its body.

“Ha ha ha, Ye Xiwen, we’ve finally condensed the blood slave. The soul of the Star Colossus is indeed worthy of praise. The body of this blood slave contains more than 200 dao principles!” Ye Mo laughed out loud.

Ye Xiwen also smiled faintly. Different experts of semi-sage realm could accommodate different number of dao principles. The ones at the initial stage of the semi-sage realm could accommodate almost 100 dao principles. One could accommodate almost 300 dao principles in the intermediate stage. And, one could accommodate more than 500 dao principles at the later stages.

An expert with a higher number of dao principles would be more powerful and more difficult to deal with.

This blood slave had just taken birth, but its fighting strength wasn’t bad.

The Star Colossus was still locked-up inside the blood pond. But it had become a lot quieter. Lots and lots of its energy and essence had been forcefully extracted. This had weakened it.

Ye Xiwen knew that he could do a lot of things with this semi-sage level blood slave at his disposal.

The strength of his arsenal would increase by leaps and bounds once he had condensed several blood slaves. However, Ye Xiwen wasn't like Ye Mo's former master. He didn't plan to build an army of blood slaves. Nor did he have the required amount of resources to pull that off. So, it was none of his concern.

Ye Xiwen's comprehension of the principles had increased since he had condensed so many principles for his blood slave. So, condensing principles for himself would naturally be a piece of cake for him. His fighting strength could reach the semi-sage level in the next breakthrough.

Ye Xiwen was planning to undergo closed-door training after he had completed this mission. He intended to make a breakthrough into the half-step legendary ninth stage.

As far as Zhu Tian Zong was concerned... Ye Xiwen was confident that it wouldn't be a big issue since he now had the assistance of his very own blood slave.

“Come, let's go find that traitor!”

-----

Southern Wasteland was a vast expanse of wasteland. It stretched across a vast area in the Southern Region. It had hundreds of thousands of great mountains; wherein lurked ominous beasts and predatory birds. It was regarded as an ominous land. It was far-far away from civilization. It was home to a massive tribal group who had lived there forever. These tribal people belonged to the so-called barbarian race.

Ye Xiwen followed Zhu Tian Zong as per the information he had received from the Merit Palace Hall. Ye Xiwen had missed him by a little on the way; and this happened several times. Zhu Tian Zong was a very cunning fellow. He never stayed at one place for long. That was why Ye Xiwen had missed his target several times by now. He had continued to chase Zhu Tian Zong towards the south, and had ventured into the Southern Wasteland.

The True Martial World had four wastelands on the periphery... apart from the five regions located in the middle of the continent. These wastelands were home to barbarians who were strong, sturdy and incomparably valiant. The barbarian race was a group of mysterious and enigmatic people. The True Martial University had fought with the barbarians many times when it used to rule the entire True Martial World.

One would come across four seas if one were to go past these four wastelands. There was a sporadic distribution of countless islands in these seas. These islands were ruled by several different forces. A complex power structure existed in this area. It was intertwined,

yet spread out. The True Martial University had no direct jurisdiction over this area even during its most flourishing time.

There were some mysterious and formidable forces in the Southern Wasteland. They weren't one bit inferior to the colossus forces of five central regions. The experts of True Martial University, Xuan Yuan Palace Hall, and East Sea's Muddy Sky Island would compete with each other in the Martial Arts Competition which was to be held 3 years later. The Southern Barbarians of Fire Cloud Cave would also arrive to compete as the one of the major forces.

---

Houtian Realm < Xiantian Realm < Truth Realm < Legendary Realm < Sage Realm < Great Sage Realm

Heaven and Earth = World

# Chapter 380: Southern Wasteland's Fire Cloud Cave!

---

The Southern Wasteland was a forbidden area; even for the people of Southern region. A majority of people didn't know much about it. Many people used to call it Southern Barbaric Land. The people of the Southern Wasteland were called 'Barbarian People' or simply 'Barbarians'.

The barbarians didn't have very friendly relations with the people of the Southern region. The two sides were always fighting a battle for survival with each other. Fierce wars would often break out between the two sides. Small skirmishes were an everyday matter.

Ye Xiwen hadn't anticipated that he'd enter the Southern Wasteland during his pursuit of Zhu Tian Zong. He had arrived in the vicinity of the '100,000 mountains' whilst immersed in this desolate region's thoughts.

Ye Xiwen opened his devil wings and flew into the Southern Wasteland. He entered the depths of '100,000 mountains' after flying for more than a day.

"Wow, I never thought that I would see a northerner here!" Ye Xiwen was flying in the sky when he suddenly heard a puzzled-voice.

Ye Xiwen immediately stopped. And sure enough, there appeared a few ferocious-looking barbarian people not far from him in the

sky. There were a total of five people. All of them were experts of legendry's great complete realm. They were headed by a man with restrained aura, but profound martial power. He was an extremely profound expert of legendry's great complete realm.

He looked more than 30 years old and approximately 2 meters tall. He had rough facial features and bronze-colored skin. His bronze skin looked lustrous, and was glowing brightly in the sunlight.

“Our elders have asked us to wait here and see to it that no northerner passes from here. And if someone does appear — then we must pursue and kill them. He he, boy, blame your bad luck for putting you in this situation!” The chief barbarian grinned fiendishly as he gazed at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen didn't want to engage them. He was in a hurry, and must keep chasing after Zhu Tian Zong. However, the words of the chief barbarian had made him stop. He felt... could these people have some kind of a relation with Zhu Tian Zong?

“We're so damn lucky. The northerners often keep big treasures on their body. The spoils of war will be our property!” a barbarian expert laughed out loud and said.

“Humph! You're courting death. I'll kill you all, and then search each of your 'divine sense' for information — regardless of your relation with Zhu Tian Zong!” Ye Xiwen made his decision. It was clear from the thought process of these barbarians that they were up to no good.



“Attack!” the chief barbarian shouted loudly. The other barbarians launched attacks one after another. They used their brute strength and launched themselves towards Ye Xiwen. A red-colored flaming big hand slapped across the sky.

“Fire Cloud’s Falling Sky Hand. Are you the people of Fire Cloud Cave?” Ye Xiwen recognized this signature martial technique that was practiced by nearly every disciples of the Fire Cloud Cave. However, the degree of power unleashed by this move varied from individual to individual; depending on their ability. Fire Cloud’s Falling Sky Hand when displayed by the Lord of Fire Cloud Cave could even split the stars and the moon.

“Hehe, boy, quite the strong eyesight you’ve got there. However, you’re going to die soon!” The chief barbarian grinned fiendishly.

These experts of the legendry’s great complete realm had shot their Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand attacks in unison. These attacks condensed into a giant net which blotted-out the sky and covered the earth as it rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

“You’re really courting death. Today, no one can save you!” Ye Xiwen sneered and said. He shot his palm without any hesitation, and his golden divinities began to boil. A golden dragon emerged from the golden divinities. It roared as it looked towards the sky, and then rushed forward. That inescapable giant net was ripped apart by that golden dragon in a flash.

It seemed as if the world had lost its color. Those fire-colored

hands disappeared without a trace.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Those barbarians spouted blood from their mouths as they were sent flying by Ye Xiwen’s attack.

“You!” That chief barbarian looked at Ye Xiwen with disbelief in his eyes. He could clearly see that Ye Xiwen was merely an expert of half-step legendary eighth stage. That was why he had never expected that a single move of Ye Xiwen would be so incredible. However, he had realized that even his own strength — that he was intensely proud of — was simply nothing in front of Ye Xiwen’s.

Ye Xiwen didn’t hesitate. He shot his golden big hand. Those barbarians got grabbed at once; just like being enshrouded by a massive golden cloud.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

These sturdy barbarians of legendry's great complete realm were then crushed by Ye Xiwen. Then, he extracted their 'divine sense' and probed their memories.

They might have caused some trouble for Ye Xiwen if he had come across them two years ago. Particularly, that chief barbarian wouldn't have been one bit inferior to Ye Xiwen two years ago.

However, they were no match for the current Ye Xiwen. He had easily clutched them to death.

After probing through the 'divine sense' of these powerhouses, Ye Xiwen found out that they were providing support to Zhu Tian Zong by helping him in his escape. They were also responsible for taking care of any enemy pursuers. In addition, Zhu Tian Zong also had the support of sage experts. Zhu Tian Zong wasn't a traitor who had defected from the True Martial University. He had always been an undercover agent of Fire Cloud Cave. However, it was still uncertain for what reason he had been summoned back. Otherwise, he could've remained hidden in the True Martial University.

Ye Xiwen strongly felt that this matter was becoming more and more complex. It might go far beyond his imagination.

He must penetrate deep inside the Fire Cloud Cave to kill Zhu Tian Zong. The dangers involved wouldn't be small either.

Ye Xiwen thought for a moment. He felt that he must complete this mission. However, he couldn't just rush-in casually since

many experts of the Fire Cloud Cave would be present there.

The best way was to disguise as a disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave. Fortunately, he had killed a few already, and they all knew the signature technique of the Fire Cloud Cave. It was impossible for other people to learn an entirely new martial art in such a short time. However, Ye Xiwen could continue to operate the mysterious space to deduce any technique as long as he had sufficient 'spirit energy' in his possession.

Ye Xiwen gradually unfolded the secrets of Fire Cloud Cave's core martial art named 'Desolate Divine Fire Cloud Technique' after he had poured a great amount of 'Spirit Dans' inside the mysterious space. It no longer remained a secret in Ye Xiwen's eyes. Several other mysterious techniques had also appeared inside Ye Xiwen's mind.

Ye Xiwen had mastered several of their secret techniques in less than half-an-hour. Ye Xiwen's body also started to emit the typical aura of barbarians.

Ye Xiwen continued to operate the 'restraining breath technique' to not just modify his aura, but also his appearance. His appearance began to gradually transform from delicate to rough. His height also increased significantly. Plus, his body was also emitting the aura which was very similar to that of a Southern Barbarian after having learned the Desolate Divine Fire Cloud Technique.

Ye Xiwen had come to know from the memories of those disciples of Fire Cloud Cave that several experts of semi-sage and sage realm

were stationed at some distance to ambush the pursuers. These experts were strong enough to possibly intercept the chasing experts of the True Martial University who would soon be arriving here.

After knowing this, Ye Xiwen would naturally not walk into their trap foolishly. He would circle around them to go forward.

Ye Xiwen had successfully changed his appearance into that of a barbarian expert. After that, he flew all the way along the 100,000 mountains.

These mountains were more chaotic on contrary to Ye Xiwen's imagination. Battles were taking place everywhere. The frequency of coming across a fight here was much higher than it was in the Southern region.

The division of power in the Southern Wasteland was quite different from how it was in the Southern region. The tribal groups were basically divided into units in the Southern Wasteland. These groups were affiliated to the major forces. The war between two tribal groups was exceptionally cruel. It was far more brutal than the war between two countries in the Southern Region.

The war between two countries would often take place for overthrowing the opposite regime. However, the war between two tribal groups would often take place to completely eradicate the opposite tribal group. Everyone in the lost tribe would get massacred brutally. This was more intense and brutal, and was fundamentally different from civilized wars that took place

between countries.

These tribal groups would often act as the subordinate of various forces of the Southern Wasteland; especially when a war broke out between two forces.

He was ambushed several times by the disciples of Hundred Barbarians Cave while he was flying towards his destination. Hundred Barbarians Cave was a major force of Southern Wasteland.

Hundred Barbarians Cave was one of the several major forces that operated in the Southern Wasteland. It might even be stronger than Fire Cloud Cave. Both the forces could be considered as arch rivals. These two forces had always been hostile towards each other, and were constantly indulged in small and big skirmishes.

Ye Xiwen discovered that Hundred Barbarians Cave and Fire Cloud Cave had been continuously fighting since last two years from the 'divine sense' of the disciples of Hundred Barbarian Cave whom he had killed. Ye Xiwen had disguised himself as a disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave. It was too obvious from his aura. Consequently, he had to face the ambushes of the experts of Hundred Barbarian Cave again and again. He was ambushed by a lot of tyrannical experts, but they all got slaughtered by him in the end.

After obtaining this information, Ye Xiwen had to admit that the situation of the Southern Barbarians was even more chaotic than he had previously imagined. This scale of war would never

breakout in the five regions of the continent since people were wise enough to consider properly before waging a war on others. However, the temperament of these barbarians was straightforward. These stubborn barbarians didn't use logic before starting a war. Even one bad remark was enough to incite a war between tribes. Once upon a time in the past, two enormous forces had indulged in a war because their respective subordinate tribes had an argument over the control of water supply. And that fight between two tribes had finally evolved into a deadly war between two major forces.

However, such chaotic situation was favorable for Ye Xiwen. He could easily fish in troubled waters. The more chaotic the situation — the easier it would be for him to complete this mission.

Ye Xiwen flew for half a day and went deeper into the 100,000 mountains. He was using the memories of the disciples of Hundred Barbarians Cave and Fire Cloud Cave as a guide to proceed. Ye Xiwen wasn't afraid of getting lost.

Far away, a dozen or so barbarian warriors were struggling in a fight against an ominous beast. Ye Xiwen saw that it was a tiger-like ominous beast. Its whole body was covered with long bones that had grown out of its body and had interlocked into a complex structure. This complex bone structure covered its body on the outside, while its skin and flesh were protected on the inside. It was about 10 meters tall. It was a kind of bone beast found commonly in these hundred thousand great mountains. It was very rare to find a bone beast in the outside world. However, they were in abundance in these mountains. Ye Xiwen had also seen a lot of them on his way here.

Those barbarian warriors were headed by two people. One was a man, and the other was a woman. Both were martial warriors. The man had muscular built and looked fierce. The woman looked pretty from her facial features. Her complexion was slightly tanned. The women of Southern Wasteland didn't look fierce and robust like their male counterparts. They could be called wild beauties.

These two people were extremely profound warriors of legendry's great complete realm. They had encircled this bone beast from all sides along with their several barbarian subordinates. Their subordinates were also at legendry's great complete realm. However, they were being forced to retreat by this bone beast gradually as it was very difficult to break its bones.



# Chapter 381: The Barbarian People's Astonishment

---

The bones of these ominous bone-beasts were their strongest defensive layer. It was very difficult to break them. These experts of the Fire Cloud Cave bombarded the body of that bone-beast with their strongest martial techniques; mostly with the Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand. However, their attacks could barely break its exoskeleton. In fact, their efforts went in vain because its broken bones instantly grew back. This beast was very difficult to deal with.

“Argh!” the bone beast roared. The bones from its body were ejected just like long arrows, and pierced through the vast sky. Two barbarian warriors didn't get enough time to evade, and the long bone-arrows penetrated their bodies. They were nailed to the ground, and their blood splashed everywhere. This caused a rapid loss in their vitality.

“Dammit! I didn't expect this bone-beast to be so ferocious. It seems it'll enter the semi-sage realm soon!” the woman — who was one of the two barbarians leading this team — clenched her teeth and said. Perhaps, engaging this bone beast was their biggest mistake.

The experts in the Southern region would often kill demon beasts to obtain their demon cores, or to obtain various other kinds of materials from their bodies. However, their purpose was entirely different from that of the experts of the Southern Wasteland. These people used to kill these demon beasts for food. However, there weren't many warriors in this region. And, the 100,000

Mountains was their only reputable source of food. The remnant majority of land in the Southern Westland was barren, and unsuitable for farming. Therefore, there was always shortage of food. Their only source of food was these ominous beasts found in the 100,000 mountains. Only the most powerful warriors could catch enough prey to ensure the survival of their entire tribe.

In the Southern region, an expert was considered as a powerhouse by ordinary people. Such experts were considered strong beings in the eyes of the common people. They supposedly belonged to a higher social class, and preferred to stay aloof to focus on their cultivation. However, in the Southern Wasteland, warriors were considered the backbone of the entire race. The survival of the entire barbarian race was dependent on these warriors. In other words, the status of warriors in the Southern Wasteland was far above that of the experts in the Southern region.

Ye Xiwen realized that the bone beast had begun to ascend towards the semi-sage realm. Its aura had begun to transform into the aura of a semi-sage beast.

No wonder that these people couldn't cope with it!

Ye Xiwen thought for a moment. Suddenly, an idea sprouted inside his mind. He shouted, "Brothers and Sisters, I'm coming to help you!"

Ye Xiwen spoke and rushed forward. He shot the 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' move. It swept towards that bone beast to clutch it; just like a flaming cloud.

The bone beast promptly faced upwards and roared as it saw Ye Xiwen's attack approach it. The huge bones on its body ejected, and darted towards the incoming Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand.

"Bang!" the Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand and the sword-like long bones collided in midair. The bone-swords were crushed into pieces. They couldn't resist the might of Ye Xiwen's attack.

"Bang!" the so-called invincible bone-beast was bombarded by Ye Xiwen's Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand. Its body was disintegrated and turned to blood fog. The robust and strong exoskeleton it was so proud of couldn't resist the blow of Ye Xiwen's 'gilded tyrant form'. It was pulverized in the blink of an eye.

The warriors of the Fire Cloud Cave were shocked. They couldn't believe their eyes when they saw how the bone beast was unable to block a single move of Ye Xiwen's and was killed in an instant. It had been no match for Ye Xiwen. They, on the contrary, had been forced to retreat. They had never anticipated that this frail-looking person would turn out to be so powerful.

Ye Xiwen's height had increased significantly in this disguised form. However, his build was still somewhat lacking as per the standards of barbarian people. He would only be considered 'a little man' by them. The strength of these barbarian people was often distinguished on the basis of their size. A warrior with a bigger stature would often turn out to be more ferocious and powerful.

These barbarian people were elite warriors. They were well-versed in the art of war. They naturally weren't shallow people. However, this millennia-old stereotype had always run strong among them.

The male warrior who was leading the team regained his composure. He promptly stepped forward and spoke, "On behalf of the entire Yang tribe, I, Yang Hong am deeply grateful to you for saving our lives, Brother. You've done us a big favor!"

Ye Xiwen didn't find the names and surnames of these people strange. The four wastelands and the five regions were often engaged in war. But, one had to admit that the five regions were culturally advanced than the four wastelands. The barbarian tribes of the four wastelands used the same names and surnames which were prevalent in the five regions — the stronger barbarians would take high-class surnames for themselves.

"Haha, there's no need to thank me. Aren't we the disciples of the same cave? We should stick together and help each other?" Ye Xiwen laughed out loud in a straightforward manner. The aura of barbarians was overflowing from his body. He appeared like a barbarian person.

Ye Xiwen exchanged greeting with them, and came to know that these warriors belonged to the so-called Yang tribe. They had come out hunting for the sake of gathering rations for their tribe. They were the strongest warriors of their tribe. Their entire tribe would've been razed to the ground if they had died. Their tribe wouldn't have been exterminated by the ominous beasts — but by the other tribes.

Therefore, Yang Hong's gratitude was genuine and understandable!

Ye Xiwen wanted to take advantage of the Yang tribe to sneak into the Fire Cloud Cave. The Yang tribe had always maintained good relations with the Fire Cloud Cave.

However, a sudden burst of rainbow-light shone in the sky before Ye Xiwen could speak about the Fire Cloud Cave, and a barbarian appeared treading on it. He arrived in front of the warriors of the Yang tribe. He looked arrogantly towards everyone and said, "I have brought an order from Young Master Shi. He wants the experts of the Yang tribe to proceed towards the 'River Agate Mountain' at once. There's an important task that needs your cooperation!"

Then, that barbarian expert turned around. He rode on the rainbow without any delay, and disappeared before everyone's eyes.

"It's Shi Zhi Ming again!" the female leader gritted her teeth and spoke. Ye Xiwen had come to know that this female warrior was Yang Hong's younger sister. Her name was Yang Na. "Something bad happens every time he summons us. I don't know how many of our Yang tribe's warriors will remain at this rate!"

Ye Xiwen had come to know about this 'Shi Zhi Ming' character from the memories of the Fire Cloud disciples he had slaughtered earlier. As per the rules established by the Fire Cloud Cave —

different Elders were in-charge of different areas. The Elder of a particular area held the fate of everyone in that region. Every tribe in a region must obey the orders of their Elder. No one could go against their Elder.

It was an exceptionally strict hierarchy, and was dependent entirely on power for control and management. And that was why the backing-strength of the Elder of an area often came from the strongest tribe of that region.

This area was controlled by the Elder who belonged to the Shi tribe. And Shi Zhi Ming was the son of Elder Shi. So, he often rode roughshod over people of this area, and nobody could stop him.

“Yeah, but we’ll have to go anyway!” Yang Hong heaved a sigh and muttered. Shi Zhi Ming never summoned them to attack any tough ominous beast... but to fight territorial battles with other tribes... or to compete for various treasures. Small tribes like theirs were often used as cannon fodder. However, they’d have to participate even if they knew the truth.

The loss of lives would be inevitable if they were to answer the summonses. But, they might get slaughtered by the Shi tribe if they were to turn these summonses down. This was a big problem.

“If Brother Yang doesn’t mind... I’d also like to join you guys!” Ye Xiwen offered with a laugh.

The warriors of the Yang tribe looked at Ye Xiwen in astonishment. Most people would want to run and hide in the

wake of such summons. They weren't foolish. They knew that they'd be used as cannon fodder. However, they'd have to serve these summonses for their tribe's safety. However, Ye Xiwen wasn't involved in this mess. It was unnecessary for him to go on this deadly mission.

“Sure Brother!” Yang Hong patted Ye Xiwen's shoulder. He seemed somewhat excited. The barbarians were uncouthly people, but they were quite straightforward and frank in demeanor. Ye Xiwen would've been suspected for scheming something if he were to act like this in the Southern region. However, this was Southern Wasteland. He was just another good and loyal fellow warrior in the eyes of these barbarians.

Of course, no one would object if Ye Xiwen wanted to come along. They had witnessed Ye Xiwen's tyrannical strength. In fact, Ye Xiwen had single-handedly saved them when their entire team had been cornered by that bone beast. That bone beast hadn't stood a chance against Ye Xiwen, and had been conveniently crushed to death.

The level of Ye Xiwen's 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' move had baffled them. His was a wide-range and profound attack. Their own attacks wouldn't come even close. It was a martial art technique that was easy to learn, but hard to master. They could only use the 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' move in coordination with other martial art techniques. However, the same technique had displayed incredible might when wielded by Ye Xiwen. In their opinion, Ye Xiwen was an expert from a big tribe. He had probably come out on a travelling adventure. They had noticed his style, and conduct. They could tell that he didn't belong to a small tribe.

The most important thing for an ordinary small tribe wasn't to expand or to dominate the world. Instead, it was to ensure their survival. Food was always a scarce resource; no matter what time of year it was. This bone beast could be considered as a very valuable source of food for any small tribe. However, Ye Xiwen had casually crushed it to bits without any hesitation. Moreover, this beast wasn't a stint. This showed that he must be from some big tribe, where there was no scarcity of food.

Everyone envied him in their heart, but they didn't say anything.

Ye Xiwen didn't know that merely blowing-off a bone beast would lead these people to assume so much about him. He merely wanted to go with them. He naturally had his own plans.

Only Yang Hong and Yang Na responded to the summons from this team. The other warriors returned to the Yang tribe with their deceased comrades. Yang Hong and Yang Na were the most powerful warriors in their tribe. So, it was enough that they were going.

They trod on the rainbow lights, and arrived before the 'River Agate Mountain' as that barbarian messenger had told them.

"Yang Hong, Yang Na, what are you up to? Are you trying to disrespect Young Master Shi?" a snort sounded as soon as the three of them stepped down from the rainbow lights.



# Chapter 382: Great Exhibition Of Divine Power

---

“Yang Hong, Yang Na, what are you up to? Are you trying to disrespect Young Master Shi?” a snort sounded as soon as the three of them stepped down from the rainbow lights.

A tall figure appeared from afar; it was treading on the rainbow light. He had a robust physique, and was 10 feet tall. His bronze-colored skin was faintly glowing — thanks to the ‘Real Elemental Energy’ flowing within. A trace of fluctuating world-principle was also present on his body. He had reached the extremely profound level of legendry’s great complete realm. He was half a step away from entering the semi-sage realm. He was exceptionally powerful. He was even more powerful than Yang Hong and Yang Na.

“Humph! Lei Yang Yun, whether we’ve tried to disrespect Young Master Shi – it’s not something you can comment on!” Yang Hong stepped forward and retorted with a sneer. Yang Hong’s strength was inferior to this man, but he didn’t seem afraid of him.

“Humph! You’re talking big. You all would’ve been slaughtered if your Yang tribe wasn’t a servant-tribe!” Lei Yang Yun smiled coldly and said. It was clear that he held a deep grudge against the Yang siblings. No wonder he had blatantly touched a sore spot.

“Why did you bring an outsider? This man isn’t a warrior of your Yang tribe!” Lei Yang Yun glanced coldly at Ye Xiwen and said.

“He’s a big benefactor of my Yang tribe. He’s also a disciple of the

Fire Cloud Cave. So, why can't he participate in Young Master Shi's summons?" Yang Hong asked without showing any weakness or hesitation.

"What a timely coincidence to have found a disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave to help you. This time, Young Master Shi has summoned the local tribes only; not the outsiders. Even if we do encounter any outsiders — we must hide this matter from them at all costs. But instead of hiding it from the outsiders... you've brought one. We haven't gathered here to celebrate, or fornicate like bandits. This matter is of utmost important!" Lei Yang Yun sneered and counterattacked with his words. Actually, it was rare to come across such a sharp mouthed barbarian. "Moreover, our Young Master Shi is so strong that even seizing the burning sun and melting it is a small matter for him. Why should we take the help of an outsider? Do you think that we are incompetent?"

"You!" Yang Na's complexion turned red. Lei Yang Yun was a rare barbarian who knew how to take advantage of his sharp tongue. He had left the Yang siblings speechless by using only a few words. Yang Na wanted to refute him. However, she didn't know where to begin from!

"What you're saying... isn't right. Why I can't help? When you say that Young Master Shi has ordered to conceal this matter from outsiders... do you mean that his summons don't enjoy the popular support of the people? Is that why he's being forced to do it in secret? What's he up to?" At this time, Ye Xiwen finally spoke. Lei Yang Yun was indeed a sharp-mouthed barbarian in comparison to others like Yang Hong and Yang Na. However, he was nothing in comparison to Ye Xiwen. It's always easy to tag somebody with unfair label; anyone can do it.

“You... I didn’t mean that!” Lei Yang Yun’s face was flushed when he heard Ye Xiwen’s argument. He looked fiercely at Ye Xiwen; wishing he could swallow Ye Xiwen whole. He considered himself the best when it came to using sharp-mouthed arguments to his advantage; at least among the barbarian people. So, he didn’t expect that Ye Xiwen would say such harsh words in reply. He hadn’t expected that Ye Xiwen would find a loophole in his own argument, and would use it against him to openly shame him.

“You get lost from here!” Lei Yang Yun’s eyes emitted an ominous glint as he looked towards Ye Xiwen. He didn’t say anything further once he fell in the disadvantageous position in this war of words. Instead, he switched back to displaying the barbaric trait of ‘letting his fist do the talking’. “Outsiders are not allowed to stick their nose in this matter. I dare you... say one more sentence and I’ll kill you without amnesty. Now, get lost!”

Yang Hong had informed Ye Xiwen about several things recently. Initially, there was only a small friction between this Lei Yang Yun and their Yang tribe. Generally, they were constantly involved in small skirmishes. However, they all had ended in the Yang tribe’s defeat; more or less. That was because Lei Yang Yu was much stronger than the siblings. Moreover, the most important thing was that he took advantage of Shi Zhi Ming’s favor to do whatever he wanted. This had also boosted his arrogance. He would look to cause trouble for Yang tribe wherever and whenever he could. So, this wasn’t about his mistrust on an outsider like Ye Xiwen. Instead, he was deliberately looking for an opportunity to cause trouble for the Yang tribe.

Ye Xiwen listened to Lei Yang Yun’s threat, but he wasn’t afraid.

He merely sneered twice and replied, “Who do you think you are? You dare to bark in front of me. I, Ye Mouren, have walked for many years among these 100,000 Great Mountains. There’s isn’t anyone who hasn’t seen me. Today — in admiration of Young Master Shi — I’ve especially arrived here to help. But a dog like you dares to humiliate me. If not for giving face to Young Master Shi — I would’ve already slapped you to death!”

Many barbarian warriors of the local tribes were present in the surroundings. They secretly felt delighted after when they heard Ye Xiwen’s rebuke. This Lei Yang Yun relied on Shi Zhi Ming’s support to act arrogantly with everyone. He looked down on everyone and bullied them. He used small and insignificants matters as a catalyst, and even went as far as issuing the order to extinguish an entire tribe if he felt like it. In everyone’s opinion, this Lei Yang Yun was a nasty villain who was drunk on power; someone who had let the success get to his head. They had always despised him, but they couldn’t do anything because he had Shi Zhi Ming’s support. They couldn’t afford to offend Shi Zhi Ming. Consequently, they also couldn’t offend him. However, someone had appeared who was giving Lei Yang Yun a taste of his own medicine. So, they couldn’t help but be secretly thrilled.

“You’re courting death!” Suddenly, a fierce beam of light flashed inside Lei Yang Yun’s eyes. Nobody had ever dared to humiliate him like this. Even though everyone considered him as Shi Zhi Ming’s lackey... no one had ever dared to speak those words of truth in front of him. He usually maintained a proud and complacent appearance. “You probably don’t know whose territory you’re in. Today, I’ll send you off to see the Barbarian God!”

Lei Yang Yun had pulled-out his lance while he in the middle of his speech. The lance in his hand emitted ice-cold black rays of light. He then pointed it towards Ye Xiwen, and a terrifying aura began to surge throughout his body.

People regarded Lei Yang Yun as a sharp-mouthed lackey of Shi Zhi Ming's, but he possessed intrepid strength. His body was faintly emitting the trace semi-sage level aura. This meant that he had entered halfway into the semi-sage realm.

Yang siblings often suffered losses at the hands of Lie Yang Yun. Shi Zhi Ming was one of the reasons for this. However, the most important reason was that Lei Yang Yun's possessed tyrannical strength. An ordinary expert of legendry's great complete realm was no match for him.

"Bang!" the sharp lance caused the surrounding space to collapse as it wantonly advanced forward with barbaric power. It appeared just like a long dragon that had been urged by Lei Yang Yu to go wild.

As if adding the finishing touch, that dragon went completely berserk like a real dragon. That black lance appeared like a long black dragon that blotted-out the sky and shrouded the earth as it swept towards Ye Xiwen.

This lance was made of extremely high-quality material. And, the inscriptions on its body contained traces of sage power. An ordinary expert of legendry's great complete realm could only escape when faced with the semi-sage level power of this lance. But, any attempts to resist would simply make them fall under a

through suppression of the lance's might.

But, unfortunately, it had encountered a target like Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen shot his 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' without any hesitation as he faced the approaching long black dragon. Ye Xiwen's attack was overbearing, and contained tyrannical power. It began to burn-down everything around it. It advanced towards that long black dragon to grab it.

“Bang!” that huge fiery cloud and the black light collided ferociously. It seemed as if the world had lost its color, and everyone had entered a dreadful world of red and black.

The red cloud and the black beam had collided violently. The horrifying power of unimaginable proportions wantonly spread-out from the center of collision in all directions. This set-off storm waves everywhere. The space couldn't bear such a horrifying power and collapsed in the wake of this energy storm. The space would then restore itself, but once again got shattered by the storm. This was a terrible scene... the process of continuous reconstruction and destruction of the space.

Everyone was dumbstruck. They promptly retreated to avoid getting crushed by the devastating force of such terrifying power. Everyone looked at these two men with a look of amazement in their eyes. They had never thought that the clash between these two could be so terrifying. Lei Yang Yun was annoying according to those barbarian warriors, but his strength was still tyrannical. In fact, he was probably the first person under the age of fifty who had managed to get close to semi-sage realm. This meant that he didn't have any rivals under the age of fifty in the region.

They weren't sure about whether he had any opponent or not, but everyone accepted that he was extremely tyrannical. However, Ye Xiwen hadn't fallen into a disadvantageous position in this fight. Everyone was astonished. It seemed as if they were witnessing some inconceivable miracle.

However, the Yang siblings weren't affected by the sight of this. Previously, they had seen how Ye Xiwen had effortlessly killed that bone beast that was about to enter the semi-sage realm. It has been slaughter by Ye Xiwen in an instant. That was sufficient to judge Ye Xiwen's tyrannical strength.

No, it wasn't so!

Soon, everyone discovered something that sent chills down their spine. They noticed that Ye Xiwen hadn't fallen into the disadvantageous position. Instead, he had obtained an upper hand in the battle. His 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' crushed the black layer of energy formed around the lance, and exposed its real body. However, Ye Xiwen didn't hold back, and guided his 'Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand' to further grasp the lance.

The defensive layer surrounding the lance broke, and the black lance was seized by Ye Xiwen's flaming hand.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's Fire Cloud's Falling Sky Hand seemed like a heavenly hand that had descended to the mortal world to punish these barbarian people. The black lance was grabbed, and broken into tiny fragments.

“Puff!”

Lei Yang Yun’s entire body shivered, and he suddenly spouted a mouthful of blood. Ye Xiwen had grabbed and broken the fragment of his soul that was concealed inside the lance. He could no longer control the lance without the fragment of his soul. Anyways, the lance had already been pinched to bits by Ye Xiwen and had turned into elements of energy.

Lei Yang Yun recalled how long he had had to beg his elders in order to obtain this divine weapon. He had finally requested a great master in the tribe to create one just for him. He had nearly spent his entire savings to gather the myriad of expensive materials that were required to forge it. However, Ye Xiwen had crushed it to bits. This was like having a knife inserted in one’s chest — leaving the body to drip blood; drop-by-drop.

“Puff!”

Lei Yang Yun’s entire body shivered once again as he spouted more blood from his mouth. This had happened due to the physiological impact of this invaluable loss.



# Chapter 383: As Easy As Crushing Dry Weeds And Smashing Rotten Wood!

---

Everyone was dumbstruck. Nobody had thought that Ye Xiwen would defeat Lei Yang Yun's offensive in just one move. Lei Yang Yun's attack was nothing in front of Ye Xiwen. He had crushed it as if it were a child's play for him.

"My brethren of Lei tribe... go ahead and kill him for me!" Lei Yang Yun bellowed. More than a dozen individuals, each possessing tyrannical aura, appeared in the surroundings. Each of these individuals was at legendry's great complete realm and possessed tyrannical strength. Their intrepid barbaric auras had spread across the vast sky. Each of these individuals was a rare expert.

The experts of the Lei tribe were twice as powerful as the experts of the Yang tribe. However, none of these experts was at semi-sage realm. A semi-sage expert wasn't comparable to a sage expert. However, it could be said that a semi-sage expert touched upon the word 'sage', and was inherently different from ordinary mortals. Presently, almost all semi-sage experts had been sent to the frontline to fight in the war between Hundred Barbarians Cave and Fire Cloud Cave. But one could tell that the Fire Cloud Cave had an exceptionally deep background by merely looking at these profound experts of legendry's great complete realm.

Each of these individuals was capable-enough of running rampant in a small area. Presently, all these experts were gathered here. It was clear that the Lei tribe was one of the biggest tribes in this area, and had extremely tyrannical strength. It was certainly

more powerful than the Yang tribe.

However, Lei tribe was merely a subordinate force of the Fire Cloud Cave; nothing more. These so-called major forces were visibly incredible. The Yi Yuan School was nothing in front of these forces. Ye Xiwen felt very glad that he had left the Yi Yuan School. Otherwise, he would've never gotten this exposure, and would've remained a small bird in the nest called 'Yi Yuan School'.

The experts roared in unison after they heard Lei Yang Yun's bellow. Their secret arts were unleashed in a flash. Endless divine beams illuminated half of the sky momentarily. These were the secret arts of the Lei tribe as well as the Fire Cloud Cave.

Many different kinds of secret arts were unleashed by them at once, but they didn't look messy or unorganized. These experts had honed their secret arts — thanks to their rich hunting experience. They knew the importance of team-work during a hunt. They formed a massive and terrifying attack formation, and rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

The endless barrage of offensives formed a wild diagram in the sky as their desolate aura swept-out in the surroundings. This joint attack was enough to explode an expert of legendry's great complete realm. Even an expert of semi-sage realm would hesitate to face this kind of a joint attack head-on.

These barbarian people were different from the experts of the Southern region. The experts of the Southern region were often divided into units on the basis of their country. However, the barbarian people were divided into the units depending on their

tribes. These units were often small, but the members often shared an unusual bond and sense of unity. Their tribe was the entire world for them.

This was an extremely terrifying attack. It was aimed at entrapping and killing Ye Xiwen; without giving him a way out.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen sneered. He began to operate ‘Great Desolate Fire Cloud Power Technique’ with all his strength. His body ejected fire-colored clouds that began to boil. A massive amount of majestic aura spread across the sky, and condensed into a huge figure behind him. This figure was quite fuzzy, but a lot of people could recognize it. They were left shocked since this figure turned out to be the Barbarian God.

Many weaker warriors in the surroundings instinctively felt like kneeling down. That was because no matter which tribal group or force they belonged to... they were all descendants of the Barbarian God. They had emerged out of the ‘Barbarian God Heavenly Temple’.

Once upon a time, the Barbarian God Heavenly Temple was a colossus force. It would often clash with the True Martial University in its prosperous times. However, the True Martial University declined with the passage of time, and the Barbarian God Heavenly Temple split into parts which were now known as Fire Cloud Cave and the Hundred Barbarians Cave. Ever barbarian believed in the Barbarian God, and had given them various kinds of martial arts techniques. The barbarians of the Southern Wasteland shared same beliefs and practiced same martial arts since they had originated from the same Barbarian God Heavenly

Temple. However, the same wasn't true for the five regions of the continent. The origins of all the martial arts commonly found in the Southern Wasteland could be traced back to Barbarian God, who was said to have taught the martial arts. Therefore, one could condense the phantom of the Barbarian God if these techniques were practiced to the deeper level. In fact, one could even condense the real body of the Barbarian God.

However, it was necessary to comprehend the power technique to the extremely profound level to accomplish that. It had nothing to do with one's strength. It was mainly dependent on the extent to which the power-law had been comprehended. Ye Xiwen hadn't condensed the real body of the Barbarian God. However, he had condensed the phantom of the Barbarian God; as mentioned in the legends.

Therefore, everyone's eyes popped-out, and they looked at Ye Xiwen in disbelief. It was difficult for them to believe that he had actually condensed the phantom of the Barbarian God. To be able to achieve such a feat at his age — it could be said that he was a top genius.

The Barbarian God roared loudly behind Ye Xiwen's body. Countless fire clouds condensed together to form a red-colored blazing lance in its hand. It was burning in the sky. A terrifying power was surging and boiling throughout its body.

“Whoosh!” the phantom of the Barbarian God fiercely shot the blazing lance. It went blazing out.

“Bang!” the blazing lance pierced its way forward across the sky.

It seemed as it would destroy the world as it crossed the expansive sky and collided with that wild diagram.

“Rumble!” that blazing lance unleashed a terrifying rainbow light which effortlessly pierced through that wild diagram, and destroyed it in an instant. Those dozen or more barbarian experts were violently shaken by the enormous shock-wave. They spouted blood from their mouths, and their huge bodies were sent flying upside down. Their robust bodies had been nearly torn apart by the horrifying pressure of Ye Xiwen’s attack.

Lei Yang Yun was watching the scene. The experts of his own tribe were nothing in front of Ye Xiwen. They couldn’t even resist a single move of his’. It was simply unbelievable.

“How can this be? How is this possible? When my Lei tribe’s experts of legendry’s great complete realm attack together — even an ominous beast of semi-sage realm will have to run for shelter. It won’t dare to fight when faced with this kind of an attack. Otherwise, its entire body will be torn apart by this terrifying force!” Lei Yang Yun couldn’t believe this. An extremely frightened look appeared on his face. There wasn’t just a look of disbelief in his eyes as he looked towards Ye Xiwen, but also bitterness and incomparable hatred.

Ye Xiwen sneered. Perhaps, an ordinary expert of semi-sage realm wouldn’t be able to face such a joint attack and might sustain injuries. However, it was nothing for Ye Xiwen’s ‘gilded tyrant form’. Even if the opposite party had used a divine tool and bombarded it on Ye Xiwen’s body — it still wouldn’t have caused any harm to him.

“Whoosh!” Ye Xiwen’s figure tore its way through the vast sky. Suddenly, he appeared in front of Lei Yang Yun and grabbed his neck.

“Bang!” Lei Yang Yun was thrust into a mountain peak by Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen looked at him coldly and said, “I had told you, don’t be pretentious in front of me. I can effortlessly kill you if I want to!”

Ye Xiwen spoke very casually. This Lei Yang Yun was nothing in his opinion. He might have extremely profound martial power, but it wasn’t enough in comparison to Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen possessed unimaginable strength.

Lei Yang Yun noticed that his entire body had been embedded into the mountain peak. It was becoming difficult for him to breathe. The oxygen was getting less and less, and he had already begun to lose consciousness. The lack of oxygen was making him crazy.

The barbarians present in the surroundings looked at Lei Yang Yun in disbelief. Ye Xiwen had nearly killed him. They couldn’t believe their eyes. This Lei Yang Yun had consistently carried the image of a self-proclaimed tyrant for so many years. However, he had been so easily defeated by Ye Xiwen. It was evident that he wasn’t Ye Xiwen’s opponent.

Ye Xiwen’s approach had been the same as that of other barbarians; brutal, crude and straightforward!

The experts of the Lei tribe who hadn't yet fainted managed to catch a glimpse as Lei Yang Yun was shoved into the mountain peak. They sighed with sorrow since they secretly felt that they had ended-up offending a big-shot. They felt as if they had kicked an iron wall.

Yang Hong and Yang Na were in extreme shock. They knew that Ye Xiwen was very intrepid and an average expert was no match for him. However, they were deeply shocked after watching Ye Xiwen in combat... and how he had effortlessly defeated so many experts of the Lei tribe.

Ye Xiwen was more powerful than they had imagined. In fact, it could be said that he was countless times more powerful than what they had expected.

“Well, well, well, I didn't know that there was such an outstanding genius in the younger generation!” a burst of an applauding sound came from afar, and permeated throughout the world.

Ye Xiwen saw a figure approaching in the sky. It was a young man; approximately 20 years old. He had rough facial features. He was tall and sturdy. An intrepid aura was surging upon his body.

“Young Master Shi!” The barbarians saluted in unison as they saw him approach. This youth was the Young Master Shi, Shi Zhi Ming.

He was being followed by dozens of terrifying experts of the legendary realm. Those experts were at legendry's great complete realm. Their imposing aura was spreading out; little by little.

Suddenly, a trace of surprise appeared in Ye Xiwen's eyes as he saw that youth. That youth was at semi-sage realm. He was merely at the initial stage of semi-sage realm, but his aura had suppressed everyone on the scene. Others simply couldn't look into his eyes under the suppression effect of his imposing aura.

Ye Xiwen was the only exception. His divinities could automatically eliminate this kind of suppression. After all, divinity was the power of the Gods. They couldn't possibly allow an ordinary mortal to humiliate them.

Shi Zhi Ming had turned out to be more powerful than Ye Xiwen had imagined. He was unexpectedly an expert of semi-sage realm.

“Good, you're pretty good!” Shi Zhi Ming suddenly laughed and said when he saw that Ye Xiwen stood unaffected under his suppression.

Suddenly, Shi Zhi Ming looked towards Lei Yang Yun, who had been thrust inside the mountain peak by Ye Xiwen, and spoke, “You're useless; you made me lose face!”

Lei Yang Yun felt extremely humiliated when he heard Shi Zhi Ming's words. He got angry, but couldn't dare to make Shi Zhi Ming more furious. So, he could only get angry secretly inside. He was stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen; as if he'd kill Ye Xiwen with



his glare.

Ye Xiwen naturally understood that he must stop since Shi Zhi Ming — a semi-sage expert — had arrived.

## Chapter 384: 'Sunflower Water' Essence!

---

Shi Zhi Ming hadn't inflicted a small suppression on Ye Xiwen. Presently, Ye Xiwen wasn't capable of dealing with this semi-sage expert. And, he certainly couldn't bring-out his blood slave under these circumstances. So, Ye Xiwen was wary of Shi Zhi Ming. But, he wasn't afraid of him.

Shi Zhi Ming had abandoned Lei Yang Yun as if he were a worn-out shoe. Ye Xiwen secretly felt that Shi Zhi Ming was indeed a vicious and merciless man when he saw this. Ye Xiwen wouldn't have acted like this if he were in Shi Zhi Ming's place. On the contrary, if the people of Ye Xiwen's 'Qian Yu Faction' were being bullied like this... he would've surely come to their rescue. However, it could be said that Shi Zhi Ming was an exception by the blunt and straightforward standards of the barbarians. Lei Yang Yun had been beaten-up quite miserably in front of his eyes, but Shi Zhi Ming had surprisingly showed a pleasant countenance towards Ye Xiwen. But, Ye Xiwen wasn't moved by this unexpected turn of events. On the contrary, he had come to hold a negative conjecture about Shi Zhi Ming.

How could Ye Xiwen not have understood Shi Zhi Ming's motive? It was obvious that Shi Zhi Ming wanted to win over Ye Xiwen; a barbarian expert who had a bright future ahead of him.

Ye Xiwen had condensed the phantom of the Barbarian God. So, he had definitely proven himself as an outstanding talent. Everyone also knew that Shi Zhi Ming had the ambitions to compete for the position of this region's Elder in the future.

However, Ye Xiwen wasn't interested since he had his own ulterior motives for arriving here. But, he wouldn't have been moved by Shi Zhi Ming even if he were a real barbarian. Ye Xiwen was secretly wary of him. Shi Zhi Ming had abandoned his subordinate in order to rope in a stranger. Some people might think that he was being courteous. But, it also showed how unkind and cruel he inherently was.

Ye Xiwen sighed with emotion. Once stained with power and authority — even an ordinary barbarian could turn evil.

“We just obtained the news that Sunflower Water Essence has been found inside the ten-thousand-year-old ‘cold pond’ in the Iron Pond Mountain. We’ll go to find that Sunflower Water Essence. Everyone shall be rewarded once I get my hands on it!” Shi Zhi Ming glanced at everyone and spoke, “However, don’t blame me for being impolite if you aren’t able to find it for me!”

His fake polite behavior vanished as he said this, and his true colors surfaced.

An envious look flashed in everyone’s eyes. Sunflower Water Essence was a superb item. It was quite difficult for such a wonderful item to appear even in ten thousand years. If these experts of legendry’s complete realm could swallow even one... then it could initiate a complete qualitative change within them. That would help them in stepping into the semi-sage realm. The biggest problem in stepping into the semi-sage realm was sensing the world-principles, grabbing them, and then condensing them into ‘Dao principles’ within one’s body. Several experts had accumulated enough energy over the course of time. Some had

even accumulated it to an unimaginable degree. The continual accumulation of energy for hundreds of years would bloat the accumulated-energy to a terrifying extent.

However, this was useless since the accumulation of energy wasn't enough to have a breakthrough. They could only perceive the existence of world-principles to a preliminary stage. In their eyes, these principles looked messy - like a pile of multi-colored wool tangled together. They were color blind, and couldn't differentiate between principles. More talented people could see it more clearly. However, no one could see them as clearly as Ye Xiwen. Each and every principle was indistinctly visible to him. In fact, he had already comprehended several of these principles to an enormous extent.

Visualizing the 'real world' and 'the world with the principles' was as easy as opening and closing one's eyes in Ye Xiwen's perspective.

However, other people didn't have such luck. They must blindly explore the dark in the hope to find and perceive a principle. But, it was very difficult to find. However, a ten-thousand-year old Sunflower Water Essence was the combination of several principles. It could help them in moving a step forward towards comprehending the world-principles by guiding them in the right direction.

Perhaps they would step into the semi-sage realm in less than two years if they could obtain the Sunflower Water Essence. The Sunflower Water Essence was extremely precious. It could also be used to increase the number of principles within one's body...

apart from helping one in comprehending profound principles. It could increase the number of principles within one's body by 100. And, this was a big opportunity to find a Sunflower Water Essence.

No wonder why Shi Zhi Ming had summoned them to go together in search of the Sunflower Water Essence. It made sense. Ye Xiwen speculated secretly. Who wouldn't like to have a Sunflower Water Essence? He must look for an opportunity to seize it. He would gain a big advantage with its help when he'd condense principles in the future. But, he'd need to get his hands on it first.

“Yes!” everyone replied in unison.

Shi Zhi Ming was walking in the forefront, while Ye Xiwen was right behind him. The barbarian people didn't dare to interrupt Ye Xiwen. They had seen his strength just a moment ago. He was weaker than Shi Zhi Ming, but he was undoubtedly more powerful than any of them.

It was impossible for them to defeat Shi Zhi Ming even if they joined forces. And, it was similarly impossible for them to defeat Ye Xiwen. Shi Zhi Ming and Ye Xiwen were similar in this regard; at least in their eyes. There was practically no difference.

On the way, Shi Zhi Ming thought of every possible method to win over Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen also didn't wish to have a fall-out with him at this point. So, he feigned politeness as well.

They trod on the rainbow light, and arrived at the Iron Pond

Mountain. Ye Xiwen listened to the comments of these barbarian people during the journey, and discovered how Iron Pond Mountain got its name. This mountain was home to a ten-thousand-year-old cold pond. Water inside this pond was cold and heavy beyond description. Even a drop weighed several kilograms; just like molten iron. Since then, the pond had been called as 'Molten Iron Pond'. Then, people started to call this mountain 'Iron Pond Mountain' as time passed.

Everyone entered the Iron Pond Mountain atop their rainbow lights. That ten-thousand-year-old cold pond was as cold as ice. People could feel the chill in the air; even from a distance. However, strangely the trees on the mountain didn't seem affected. The cold pond was surrounded by a dense forest, but the trees were as hard as gold and iron.

Soon, everyone arrived at the shore of the cold pond. They began to wait quietly. The Sunflower Water Essence was a ten thousand years old item formed by the integration of water essence with the world-principles. It could even be said to be a natural spirit as it had a certain amount of spiritual wisdom too. Therefore, they must wait patiently. Nobody dared to step into the cold pond. The reason was quite simple. The cold pond could freeze them to death. Even these experts of legendry's great complete realm would be directly frozen to death. A semi-sage expert could probably resist the cold inside the pond with the help of the principles within his body, but at the cost of having their strength reduced greatly.

Soon, Shi Zhi Ming's complexion turned ugly. That was because another team of experts had arrived after them. This team was headed by a woman. She was approximately 20 years old, and had a somewhat oval and chubby face. She had a divine look in her big-

round eyes, and was somewhat dark in complexion. A valiant aura was overflowing from her body. She was surprisingly an expert of semi-sage realm.

The experts of the Fire Cloud Cave were suddenly in a state of tumult as they watched these people arrive.

Ye Xiwen also recognized her from the memories of the disciples he had killed. She was an expert of the Fire Cloud Cave's arch rival — Hundred Barbarians Cave. However, he didn't specifically know much about her.

“Who is she? Why is everyone so perturbed to see her?” Ye Xiwen asked Yang Hong, who stood beside him.

“She is the daughter of an Elder of Hundred Barbarians Cave. Her name is Pan Shui Rong. She enjoys good fame in the younger generation of Hundred Barbarians Cave!” Yang Hong lowered his voice and said, “This Pan Shui Rong and our Young Master Shi have harbored deep enmity from the beginning... apart from the rivalry between the Hundred Barbarians Cave and our Fire Cloud Cave. It seems like we may have to fight with them!”

Shi Zhi Ming's complexion had turned exceptionally unsightly. The arrival of the Hundred Barbarians Cave's experts was proof that this matter had been leaked-out. Moreover, it was such a big leak that it had attracted his arch rival Pan Shui Rong.

He had thought that he'd suppress her after he had obtained the Sunflower Water Essence. However, he didn't expect that she'd

receive the news as well.

“Ha-ha!” Shi Zhi Ming let-out a hollow laughter. Then, he looked at Pan Shui Rong and said, “You’ve sniffed the news quite quickly. It’s like you have the sharp nose of a dog; and a very sensitive one at that!”

The barbarian experts standing behind Pan Shui Rong became furious at this. Did Shi Zhi Ming just call them dogs? This was a serious insult.

Pan Shui Rong’s face also revealed a trace of anger as she spoke-back, “Do you think that only you’re allowed to have such fortuitous encounters? We’re determined to obtain this Sunflower Water Essence. It will be a waste if it lands in the hands of a useless person like you!”

Shi Zhi Ming’s face turned ashen. He didn’t have a big heart unlike he had always pretended to. Not to mention that the opponent was an old rival.

“We’ll come to know who the useless person is at the end of the fight!” Shi Zhi Ming revealed his true colors. He was determined to win Sunflower Water Essence at any cost. However, the opposite party was unlikely to give up either. Talking wasn’t the best option here. There was only one way, and that was to let the fists do the talking. This was the most common method used by barbarian people to settle any dispute.

The one with the heavier fist would get to have their say. Quite



simple... but it was also very effective.

“Begin!” Shi Zhi Ming shouted loudly. The disciples of Fire Cloud Cave shot a variety of martial arts towards the experts of Hundred Barbarians Cave.

The experts of Hundred Barbarians Cave weren't resigned to be outdone either. They launched their counterattacks without any delay. They had been on alert all along; just like the experts of the Fire Cloud Cave. So, they were able to react in time even though the fight had erupted all of a sudden.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The fight between hundreds of experts shook the entire Iron Pond Mountain; especially because they were all experts of legendry's great complete realm. On the other hand, Shi Zhi Ming and Pan Shui Rong rose high-up into the sky to fight. They weren't suited to fight on the mountain since it would collapse.

“Puchi!” a sharp blade cut across the vast sky with a flash of black light. It then arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. It was aimed straight at him, and was clearly thrown with the intention to kill him.

How could Ye Xiwen fall for this sneak attack? He let-out a cold

shout, and terrifying sound waves scattered in all directions. That black light was dispersed, and an iron dart was revealed. Ye Xiwen stretched-out his fingers and grabbed it.

“Bang!” the iron dart was broken into small pieces; inch-by-inch.

# Chapter 385: Captures The Sunflower Water Essence!

---

“Puff!” that expert of Hundred Barbarians Cave spouted blood from his mouth. The fragment of his soul inside the iron dart had been crushed by Ye Xiwen. Then, a golden ray of light arrived in front of his face. He couldn’t do anything but watch its approach. He didn’t have strength equal to that of Ye Xiwen. In the end, his head exploded with a ‘bang’.

This was a terrifying melee warfare. The Hundred Barbarians Cave and Fire Cloud Cave had countless years’ old enmity. Both the sides were resorting to the use deadly means. Even their leaders weren’t holding back. The two of them clamored as they rushed-up into the sky and began to fight.

Yang Hong and Yang Na were in a similar state. The hatred had taken deep root inside them as well.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen was shuttling back and forth while everyone was indulged in battle; just like a golden flash. These people were certainly the experts of legendry’s great complete realm, but they weren’t his match. Ye Xiwen had deliberately restrained his own

strength since he didn't possess any hatred or enmity towards the Hidden Barbarians Cave. Anyway, he didn't desire to work himself to death for the Fire Cloud Cave.

“Ha ha ha, I didn't expect this place to be so lively!”

A wild laughter sounded from a distant place in the middle of this battle of life or death. A group of people could be seen approaching them from afar; they trod on rainbow lights.

This was another team of Barbarian People. The experts of the Fire Cloud Cave and the Hundred Barbarians Cave stopped fighting as they watched these new people approach. It was as if they had a prior tacit understanding or something. They didn't want the third party to benefit from their fight.

These newcomers weren't inferior to the experts of the Fire Cloud Cave and the Hundred Barbarian Cave. All of them were experts of legendry's great complete realm. They were headed by a man who was approximately 30 years old. He was tall and had rough facial features. His nose was crooked by like an eagle's beak. This gave his face a sinister look. A giant black divine eagle had spread-out its wings. It was more than ten meters tall, and was circling around him. A trace of sage level power was overflowing from his body. It was obvious that he was an expert of semi-sage realm.

“The warriors of the Eagle Cave? How the hell did they arrive here?” Yang Hong cursed.

Ye Xiwen recalled about the Eagle Cave from the memories of their disciples he had earlier killed. The Eagle Cave was also a major force of the Southern Wasteland. Strength wise, it was no less than any of the other two caves. But, the most troublesome thing about them was that each disciple of the Eagle Cave used an ominous eagle beast as their mount. In fact, they grew up with their eagle beast. These Eagle Cave disciples were considered as formidable enemies because of the powerful tag-team they formed with their pet eagles. These eagles were often very powerful as well.

Shi Zhi Ming's complexion turned ugly as he flew down from the sky. Clearly, the battle between Pan Shui Rong and him couldn't reach a conclusion. He was very confident that his cultivation would increase dramatically once he had obtained the Sunflower Water Essence. Then, he'd be able to suppress his arch rival Pan Shui Rong. However, the new leak hadn't only attracted Pan Shui Rong, but also a senior semi-sage expert of Eagle Cave, named Ying Da.

Ying Da's cultivation was nearly equal to that of the other two. However, he possessed about two hundred principles within his body. He was very difficult to deal with. Moreover, his mount — that black divine eagle — was also at semi-sage realm.

The Molten Iron Pond started to seem very small as the three giant forces gathered around it. The place seemed packed.

However, no one among the three parties took the initiative to begin. Everyone was afraid that the last-standing party would benefit from the conflict between the first two. Moreover, the

Sunflower Water Essence hadn't appeared yet. Therefore, the three forces were waiting with patience.

The surface of the pond was tranquil. Slowly, the curtain of night descended. The sunlight was replaced by the moonlight. The moonlight seemed to be gently caressing the earth.

The sound of an internal turbulence started to reverberate from the pond. Everyone knew that the Sunflower Water Essence was about to appear. They knew that it was going to take birth with some 'spiritual wisdom'. That Sunflower Water Essence could become a terrifying force in the future if could have a chance to absorb the essence of the sun and the moon for thousands of years. However, these experts wouldn't let it.

Ripples appeared on the water surface. Everyone held their breath. They didn't dare to make any noise since they didn't wish to scare away the Sunflower Water Essence.

Soon, a group of azure-colored water bubbles emerged from the cold pond, and took a human form before everyone's eyes. Everyone was spellbound by the peculiar azure color of its body. It was exuding an incredibly beautiful radiance.

"Begin!" it was hard to tell who shouted from the crowd, but several hundred experts immediately rushed forward to grab the Sunflower Water Essence.

Everyone wanted to capture the Sunflower Water Essence. They couldn't think of anything else in this moment. Greed had

prevailed over everyone.

Ye Xiwen didn't move. He quietly changed his stature once again. His height had increased significantly. His facial features had turned even rougher. He quietly circled behind everyone. So many people were competing for that Sunflower Water Essence. Moreover, there were four experts of semi-sage realm on the scene, including Ying Da and his eagle. How could he get the opportunity to grab that Sunflower Water Essence before everyone?

“Bang!” a shocking water-column emerged from the tranquil pond. It went straight-up into the sky like a massive spear. The bulky column of water blotted out the sky, and fell towards the experts who were still in midair.

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

“Puff!”

Several experts didn't get enough time to dodge, and the water column crashed into them. The terrifying force crushed them into fragments.

Sad and shrill cries echoed throughout the entire Iron Pond Mountain in the peaceful night. Blood splashed everywhere in the air. In fact, it seemed like blood had rained from the sky.

“Who was it?” Shi Zhi Ming shouted as he unleashed the Fire Cloud’s Falling Sky Hand. His attack pressed down like a huge fire cloud.

“Bang!” the entire water-surface of the pond began to boil up. A seemingly endless amount of water vaporized in an instant.

At this time, a huge shadow appeared from the middle of the pond. Meanwhile, the Sunflower Water Essence was scared away by the battling experts, and submerged deep into the pond.

“Roar!” suddenly, that black-shadowy figure let out a loud roar. It sounded similar to the roar of a dragon. Everyone’s gazes finally pierced through dark curtain of night, and they saw who it really was.

It was a wicked flood dragon of semi-sage realm. These so-called heavenly treasures were often guarded by all sorts of beasts. This Sunflower Water Essence was being guarded by this flood dragon. The flood dragon must be waiting for this Sunflower Water Essence to mature. It probably wanted to consume it for enhancing its cultivation further.

The black scales of the flood dragon appeared ominous under the moonlight. They had frightened everyone. Its ice-cold eyes were like a pair of red lanterns, and were glaring at everyone.

Ye Xiwen felt an abnormal and dangerous aura arising from the body of that flood dragon. This feeling was more intimidating compared to what he had felt when he had first seen Shi Zhi Ming



and other semi-sage experts.

This inborn strange beast was undoubtedly catastrophic. It was very strong. In fact, it could be said that it was hard to find a match for this flood dragon.

Its dragon power was overflowing everywhere. It was applying suppression force on everyone in the vicinity.

“Humans, get lost!” the flood dragon revealed its mouthful of steel-like teeth and bellowed. A foul and fishy smell spread in the surroundings, and assaulted everyone’s nostrils. It also unleashed its demonic energy in the surroundings.

Dragons were supposed to be auspicious creatures according to the hearsay. However, there were evil dragons in this world as well, and flood dragons were widely known for their brutal and ferocious nature.

“I am guarding this Sunflower Water Essence for five hundred years now. So, you better get lost. Otherwise, I’ll kill you all!” the flood dragon roared as its huge body suddenly slammed against the pond’s surface, and splashed countless water droplets in the air. The water droplets then fell down from the sky like raindrops. These water droplets were very heavy, and weighed up to several kilograms. The weight of falling water reached a horrifying extent when gathered together. Several weak warriors had their bodies smashed by the falling water, and sustained severe injuries.

“Everybody, it doesn’t matter how we compete amongst

ourselves. But, we mustn't lose to this beast. It will be best if we join hands to first kill this beast!" Pan Shui Rong stepped forward and suggested.

Everyone knew that this flood dragon was very powerful. They couldn't dare to fight head-on with it. It was clear that this flood dragon was also afraid of them teaming-up against it. Otherwise, this fierce beast would've attacked and slaughtered them by now.

"Alright, let's join hands and kill this beast first!" Ying Da replied in agreement. Now, everyone's gazes turned towards Shi Zhi Ming since they didn't know what he'd choose.

Shi Zhi Ming struggled a bit, but finally made his decision. He nodded and agreed with the idea of forming a team to kill this flood dragon first.

"Attack!" he shouted, and the Fire Cloud's Falling Sky hand swept-out from his body. It rushed out and pressed down upon that flood dragon.

Pan Shui Rong and Ying Da also shot various martial attacks towards the flood dragon.

The flood dragon suddenly got furious. It had already taken into account that it wouldn't be able to contend against the combined force of these semi-sage experts. It knew that it wouldn't be able to slaughter them very easily if they joined hands. But, it hadn't expected that they'd collaborate to take it down.

The flood dragon roared. It opened its big mouth, and spat an extremely cold breath. This breath froze everything in the surroundings; including the space. Then, the frozen space started to shatter; inch by inch.

“Bang!”

This cold breath attack and the attacks of other experts collided severely. The terrifying energy waves swept out in the surroundings.

Ye Xiwen no longer hesitated, and restrained his breath. He stealthily retreated from that chaotic scene. Nobody spotted him doing so. Ye Xiwen carefully walked far away. Now, everyone looked like tiny dots from that distance. Then, he dived into the pond.

He was suddenly struck by the piercing chill, and was left shiver uncontrollably. His entire body froze stiff, and sank down.

Ye Xiwen secretly thought that this wasn't a good idea. It was much colder inside the pond than outside. He might get frozen to death if he stayed longer in the pond. Luckily, he had activated the resistance.

Ye Xiwen had begun to operate his 'Real Elemental Energy' frantically at maximum output. Its output speed was getting faster and faster. Thanks to that, his complexion was gradually restored. His breathing went back to normal.

The temperature in the pond was seriously terrible. And, the temperature fell by several degrees with every meter that he sank into the depths of the pond. Moreover, it was hard to determine how deep this pond was in reality.

Ye Xiwen could faintly hear the fluctuations coming from the surface. These fluctuations had been caused by the battle that was taking place on the surface. However, that couldn't affect the state of water in the pond.

Ye Xiwen realized that those fluctuations couldn't penetrate deeper into the pond — probably because of the heavy weight of water.

He released his divine sense to look for the whereabouts of that Sunflower Water Essence which had taken advantage of the sudden appearance of the flood dragon to escape deeper into the pond.

It was very difficult for an average person to use their divine sense to search in this kind of an environment. However, it was a piece of cake for Ye Xiwen since he had wrapped his divine sense in divinities. Therefore, his divine sense could spread anywhere with an irresistible force.

Eventually, Ye Xiwen's divine sense pinpointed the location of the Sunflower Water Essence. A smile appeared on his face. He stretched-out his big golden hand, and grabbed the Sunflower Water Essence.

# Chapter 386: Cross Tribulation In The Water

---

[The Sunflower Water Essence](#) was constantly struggling in Ye Xiwen's hands. But, it could never break from Ye Xiwen's grasp. Ye Xiwen had control over it since he held it firmly. Ye Xiwen felt a trace of foreign soul inside that Sunflower Water Essence. It probably belonged to that flood dragon. It must've put a fraction of its soul inside the Sunflower Water Essence to locate it at any time.

Ye Xiwen swallowed the Sunflower Water Essence without any hesitation.

He could feel the Sunflower Water Essence dissolve within his body. The high-quality water essence gradually spread throughout his body, and repaired a few of his subtle internal injuries. The Sunflower Water Essence itself possessed many principles. Its best function was that it could increase the number of principles inside one's body.

The flood dragon was still outside the pond, but he became aware of this matter the moment it took place.

It roared again and again, and said, "Bastards! You tricked me by dragging me away from the Sunflower Water Essence! You snatched it away in my absence!"

The flood dragon released a terrifying dragon breath to force-open its way through the crowd of experts. Then, its huge body dived into the cold pond; paying no regards to the encirclement of

those three forces. The flood dragon was extremely fierce. However, it wasn't a match for this joint force. The opposite party had 4 semi-sage realm experts. The wishes of these four semi-sage experts weren't aligned, but they could still inflict enormous pressure on the flood dragon since they were working together. In fact, they could even slay this flood dragon if they could manage to work together as a proper team.

The soul of this flood dragon that was present inside the Sunflower Water Essence had been crushed. This meant that it had fallen into someone's hands. The flood dragon had protected it for hundreds of years. How would he not act anxiously to get it back?

The flood dragon set-off endless water-splashes as it dived into the pond.

Everyone looked at each other. The flood dragon didn't seem to be 'acting' or 'faking' to them. Did something really happen? However, it didn't matter whether something had happened or not. It was vital to pursue the flood dragon one way or the other.

"Pursue it!" Ying Da roared. His divine eagle dived into the pond after him. Pan Shui Rong and Shi Zhi Ming also dived into the pond.

As far as others were concerned... they could only look at each other. They didn't dare to pursue that flood dragon into the pond. They would be frozen to death in the pond since they didn't have the support of the semi-sage principles. Even Ye Xiwen could survive in the pond because of his powerful 'gilded tyrant form' only. The golden divinities had wrapped around him to protect

him from the intense chill in the depths of the pond.

Ye Xiwen felt that something was swimming down the pond. He guessed that it could be the flood dragon since its soul had been crushed by him. However, Ye Xiwen had already anticipated that. If its soul hadn't been crushed — the flood dragon would've come down by tracing its soul. So, Ye Xiwen had made the decision to crush the wisp of its soul; once-and-for-all.

Ye Xiwen digested the Sunflower Water Essence, and felt that it had moistened his whole body. The biggest advantage of this was — his physical quality and aptitude would enhance significantly in the future.

It was a rare treasure. Such treasures didn't grow often; even in ten thousand years.

Ye Xiwen clenched his teeth, and proceeded to face the 'Heavenly Tribulation'. He had enough strength now. He had planned that he'd look for a place to undergo closed-door training after he had killed Zhu Tian Zong. Then, he'd be able to have a breakthrough into half-step legendary ninth stage. [His fighting strength would reach semi-sage level in one fell swoop if that were to happen.](#)

He was confident that he could condense the principles of semi-sage level; especially after forming his own blood slave.

However, he presently wasn't in a position to condense the semi-sage principles. So, he had begun to have a breakthrough on the spot.

“Dammit! You lay your hands on the Sunflower Water Essence by taking the advantage of my absence!” the flood dragon roared loudly as it rushed down. There was no living creature inside the entire pond... apart from Ye Xiwen. So, he was clearly visible to the flood dragon’s eyes... just like a source of bright light in dark night.

“Puff!” the flood dragon roared and spat its terrifying dragon-breath. The exceptionally cold water posed no resistance to the dragon-breath as it rushed forward. It froze the surrounding-water in its path, and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen like a long spear with incomparable and frightening might.

“Kaboom!” the ice-cold dragon-breath didn’t crash into Ye Xiwen’s body as the flood dragon had expected. Instead, it was blocked by a blood red figure that had suddenly appeared in front of Ye Xiwen.

It was the blood slave that Ye Xiwen had previously condensed. The red blood exploded beneath the blood slave’s feet, and propelled its body forward through the cold heavy-water like a red-arrow.

The blood slave arrived beside that flood dragon, and launched an attack. The blood slave’s ‘Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand’ pressed down upon the flood dragon. Ye Xiwen had condensed this blood slave, and its soul was linked with Ye Xiwen. That’s why... it could do anything that Ye Xiwen could.

Ye Xiwen had comprehended the Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand



to a very high degree. And, the blood slave's attack wasn't one bit inferior to Ye Xiwen's. And... the tyranny of this attack had increased countless times since the tyrannical power of semi-sage realm had been added to it. In fact, the blood slave's attack was several times more powerful than Ye Xiwen's own.

The Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand rumbled on the forehead of that flood dragon. It caused sparks, and a terrifying power began to boil on the flood dragon's body.

"Bang!" the flood dragon's scales were blasted and peeled-off by the blood slave's attack. Its scales fell-off, and its blood started to gush-out.

"Roar!" the flood dragon had been wounded by a single palm attack by the blood slave. It began to scream in pain.

Ying Da, Pan Shou Rong, and Shi Zhi Ming had also managed to dive to the pond's depth by now. They saw the flood dragon confronting the blood slave. They began to believe that the flood dragon had been right. Someone had secretly snatched away the Sunflower Water Essence by taking the advantage of their fight outside the pond.

The three of them immediately became angry. Ying Da cursed out loud in anger, "Dammit! I was engaged in a life or death fight above, and you sneaked down here to steal the Sunflower Water Essence! You Bastard!"

Unfortunately, the blood slave couldn't speak or think. It just

coldly looked at everyone with a murderous look in its eyes.

“Bang!” the Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand appeared again. It overwhelmingly spread-out, and went towards those three experts to grab them.

“Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand!” The three experts immediately recognized the Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand. After all, it was the signature martial art move of the Fire Cloud Cave. They couldn’t possibly mistake it for something else. Shi Zhi Ming was even more familiar with it than the others.

“Who are you? How do you know the martial art of our Fire Cloud Cave?” Shi Zhi Ming became very depressed since the others had started to eye him in suspicion. He wouldn’t have been this troubled if he had ordered one of his own to pull this off. But, he hadn’t. Yet, there was no way to prove it otherwise since the martial arts of Fire Cloud Cave was too recognizable.

“Dammit!” Shi Zhi Ming shouted loudly, and shot the same Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand in reply.

The two terrifying attacks ferociously collided. It appeared as if two gigantic fire clouds had clashed. Dreadful energy waves swept out in the surroundings, and displaced several gallons of heavy water in a flash.

“You two also attack. Don’t just stand stunned like that. This bastard isn’t one of my men!” Shi Zhi Ming retreated several steps before he finally came to a halt. His huge body had been pushed

back. He had fallen into a disadvantageous position when faced with the frightening force contained in his opponent's attack. The blood slave wasn't being cautious since it was condensed from a wisp of a Star Colossus's soul. So, its body was bound to be extremely formidable and dreadful.

Ying Da and Pan Shui Rong eventually came back to their senses after hearing Shi Zhi Ming's shout. They realized that this 'person' might not be one of Shi Zhi Ming's men in reality.

They didn't hesitate any further, and rushed towards the blood slave.

Meanwhile, the flood dragon rushed towards Ye Xiwen since it had failed to deal with the blood slave. It could still feel the Sunflower Water Essence's aura, and it was coming from Ye Xiwen's body.

"Damn you human! I will kill you. How dare you to steal my treasure?" the flood dragon spoke out of anger as it saw Ye Xiwen sitting cross-legged. It had waited for hundred years for this Sunflower Water Essence to mature... and Ye Xiwen had stolen it.

The flood dragon roared loudly. The black scales throughout its body — some covered in blood — ejaculated an incredible divine beam. It appeared as if the flood dragon was treading on the waves it dashed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him.

"Bang!" The blood slave suddenly attacked from a distance even though he had been besieged by three attackers of his own. A long

dragon went flying towards the flood dragon, and crashed into it. It was the 'coiling dragon palm'.

The flood dragon was injured, and spouted blood. It had been caught off-guard by this long dragon.

"Roar!" the flood dragon roared repeatedly. It tried to break free a few times, but was blocked by the blood slave every single time.

The blood slave was under the siege of several semi-sage experts. However, it wasn't afraid. It was relying on the toughness of its body that was granted to it by the Star Colossus's genes. It wasn't afraid of its flesh being torn-off in a head-on combat. Anyway, it wasn't afraid of death since it was condensed from a soul, and was only a small fraction of the whole.

"Bang!" the blood slave's body exploded and scattered. However, its body reorganized itself again. This was the most dreadful ability of the blood slave. It was immortal. It could continue to respawn as long as there were enough 'Spirit Dans' to support that. This was why the Devil King had condensed an army of blood slaves so that he could rule the Devil World. And, that was why Ye Xiwen wanted to condense a blood slave. It could deal with the occasional enemies that he himself couldn't.

The experts were very depressed at this sight. They couldn't do anything to defeat it. They had basically been tied-down by the blood slave. They had no way out of there. Hence, they posed no danger to Ye Xiwen even though he wasn't too far from there.

However, Ye Xiwen wouldn't allow the blood slave to face the enemies endlessly. The blood slave could certainly respawn as long as there were enough 'Spirit Dans'. However, Ye Xiwen had to burn 50 million 'Spirit Dans' for merely condensing a blood slave of semi-sage realm. Therefore, he couldn't support the respawns of a blood slave several times with the leftover 'Spirit Dans'.

“Crash-Bang!” the ‘Heavenly Tribulation’ penetrated through the heavy water, and bombarded Ye Xiwen's body.

Sunflower Water Essence: Its an inanimate object which behaves like a mythical spirit or goblin which has its own intellect and behaves like a living being. It is derived from the essence of cold water. It will turn into a full-fledged mythical spirit tens of thousands year later.

Ye Xiwen's fighting strength is always one or two levels above his actual cultivation level. This is thanks to his excellent foundation of martial arts. Also, because his gilded tyrant form acts as a strong container to store larger amounts of energy, far surpassing the limit of his real cultivation level.

# Chapter 387: Half-Step Legendary Ninth Stage!

---

“Dammit! This bastard is crossing the tribulation!” Everyone could clearly see that Ye Xiwen was the real mastermind behind all this, and not the blood slave. He wasn’t far away from them. He was clad in the warrior-attire of the Fire Cloud Cave.

Shi Zhi Ming was particularly burning with anger since this person was clad in the attire of the Fire Cloud Cave. He must have mixed with the team of Fire Cloud Cave and followed Shi Zhi Ming here. Shi Zhi Ming couldn’t tolerate the fact that he hadn’t noticed that.

Furthermore, he didn’t even recognize this person!

Ye Xiwen had once again changed his appearance. Therefore, Shi Zhi Ming didn’t know that this person was Ye Xiwen. Shi Zhi Ming was preoccupied with rage since he was blaming himself for being negligent.

Ye Xiwen didn’t know that someone was going mad because of him. Right now, he was sitting cross-legged, and could feel the power seething inside his body.

The lightning in the sky struck again and again. The lightning rushed down, and appeared to be capable of seeing. It didn’t spread out in the water, and aimed straight towards Ye Xiwen to strike him.

The lightning struck Ye Xiwen's body and caused his 'Real Elemental Energy' to boil even more. However, he knew that it was just an appetizer.

Waves and waves of numerous lightning figures crashed down from above before Ye Xiwen could catch his breath. And, they struck towards Ye Xiwen.

Shi Zhi Ming, Pan Shui Rong, Ying Da, and the flood dragon were present nearby. They were dumbstruck upon witnessing this scene. They couldn't help but think that the heaven was furious, and had sent its heavenly forces to render punishment.

An ordinary 'Heavenly Tribulation' was scary enough; let alone this variant of 'Heavenly Tribulation'. An ordinary variant of Heavenly Tribulation was scary enough to kill an average expert. And, this one was clearly an abnormal variant. These people hadn't heard about this kind of 'Heavenly Tribulation'. Such an abnormal 'Heavenly Tribulation' only existed in ancient books. Yet, now they were witnessing one with their own eyes. This was simply mind-boggling.

The groups of lightning figures swept down from the sky. They appeared to be surfing on waves. They appeared extremely terrifying. These lightning figures rushed straight towards Ye Xiwen like ferocious evil spirits.

This was the type of 'Heavenly Tribulation' everyone was afraid of. Because... facing a tribulation was like taking a test and most

people did that with inadequate preparation. Hence, they weren't capable enough to cross such a 'Heavenly Tribulation'. Only an outstanding genius with deep foundation could cross it. For others, it was no different than a deadly tribulation.

Ye Xiwen might not have outstanding innate talent. However, his foundation was very profound. He had deliberately restrained his cultivation level over the past two years in order to build this deep foundation.

Even so, Ye Xiwen didn't dare to look down on this 'Heavenly Tribulation' one bit. He might suffer a crushing defeat if he were to take this terrifying 'Heavenly Tribulation' lightly.

Ye Xiwen sneered. He rushed up and burst into the crowd of lightning figures like a golden streamer of light. These lightning figures didn't constitute of just lightning apes. Various other kinds of demons were also present in this group. Some had taken human forms, but still retained several characteristics of the demon race. They rushed towards Ye Xiwen as they brandished their weapons.

"Die!" those lightning people bellowed loudly as they rushed towards Ye Xiwen. Each one of them was armed with sword, spears, clubs and all other sorts of weapons. The martial arts unleashed by these lightning people were far more tyrannical than the martial arts of the barbarian experts of legendry's great complete realm. The lightning people formed small teams as they rushed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him. Each unit had enormous might.

Ye Xiwen roared. A 'Hanshan Seal' smashed down from above.



The giant mountain fell from the sky like a huge dragon and smashed down. Many of the lightning people didn't get a chance to begin their attack, and were smashed by Ye Xiwen's 'Hanshan Seal'. They transformed into a group of lightning energy, and were absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

The universe inside Ye Xiwen's Dantian made a crackling sound after it absorbed the lightning energy.

Ye Xiwen, who now wore five layers of 'tyrant body technique', broke into the crowd of lightning people in one fell swoop and went all out. He shot the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand, and didn't hold back one bit. His blazing big hand rushed forth like a bunch of red-clouds, and grabbed a bunch of lightning people. They then got crushed and exploded.

Shi Zhi Ming's complexion turned ashen as he watched this scene from the sidelines. He knew that his comprehension of Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand was far inferior to Ye Xiwen's. Yet, somehow, this attack had reminded him of the attack that Ye Xiwen had displayed. However, this man was very different from Ye Xiwen - whether the comparison was drawn based on appearance, physical characteristics or aura. He could only blame his luck for encountering two experts whose comprehensions of the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand was superior to his own. And, he had encountered them within such a short timeframe.

However, he didn't hold himself back, and continued to attack the blood slave. He and the other semi-sage experts were no fools. They knew that the blood slave could respawn only to some extent; not limitlessly. Wouldn't taking endless rebirths go against the

heaven's will?

The blood slave was certainly operating by consuming some kind of energy. So, they only needed to exhaust it thoroughly. That would automatically bring an end to this fight.

Moreover, this must be done before Ye Xiwen was done crossing the 'Heavenly Tribulation'. Then, they could kill Ye Xiwen by taking advantage of his weak condition post-tribulation.

A person who could cross such a dreadful 'Heavenly Tribulation' had to be genuinely talented and intrepid. He couldn't be allowed to live. He would be exhausted after crossing this 'Heavenly Tribulation', and it would be their 'big chance' to get rid of him.

"Bang!" Ying Da's divine eagle grabbed the blood slave in its claws and smashed it.

Ye Xiwen couldn't see or hear them, but he knew their intentions. Both sides wanted to dispose of their respective opponents quickly.

Ye Xiwen continued to slaughter those lightning people. Each of these lightning people was as strong as an expert of legendry's great complete realm. However, they weren't a match for Ye Xiwen. It wouldn't be an overstatement to say that – it was rare to find an opponent of Ye Xiwen on the same level in the entire world. He was basically invincible on his level.

Moreover, he possessed the formidable 'gilded tyrant form'. That made him an even more tyrannical opponent. He rushed into the group of lightning people. He simply disregarded the lightning attacks being launched at him. He grabbed a lightning person with his hand, and crushed it. He then absorbed its energy. His strength increased a bit as a result.

Ye Xiwen continued to become stronger. Moreover, he didn't stop here. Rather, he started doing two things at once. On one hand, he grabbed many lightning people and crushed them. On the other hand, he began to control his 'Real Elemental Energy' to capture the principles in his vicinity. He then started to condense them.

He wasn't doing this for the first time. He had done this prior to condensing the blood slave. So, it was a child's play for him now.

It was uncertain how many principles were captured by him. However, he managed to condense the first 'dao principle' inside his body.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's aura suddenly began to change after he condensed the first 'dao principle'. He finally experienced his first qualitative change. The innumerable changes in the past had only been quantitative in nature. It seemed as if an endless amount of water had finally broken through the dam.

Ye Xiwen's body began to entangle the coercion of sage realm. It was merely the coercion of semi-sage level. However, there was certainly a huge difference when compared to earlier. This was the beginning of his transcendence of mortal world; a mere step

towards becoming a sage.

Shi Zhi Ming, Pan Shui Rong and Ying Da were in utter shock when they saw that Ye Xiwen had begun to condense principles. They couldn't believe their eyes. They were quite convinced that Ye Xiwen hadn't even reached half-step legendary ninth stage yet. Even the extremely profound experts of legendry's great complete realm would face great difficulties in condensing principles. They themselves had experienced this in the past, and knew of the challenges that lay in the path. After all, they had also walked on the same path.

The most shocking thing for them wasn't that Ye Xiwen was condensing principles. Rather, the most shocking was the fact that he was doing it without even reaching half-step legendary ninth stage. Their eyes popped-out as they watched this happen in front of them. They were blown away by this.

There was always a certain relation between one's cultivation level and strength, but it wasn't absolute. Ye Xiwen possessed the fighting strength of legendry's great complete realm even though he was merely at half-step legendary eighth stage. Yet, this wasn't that surprising. However, condensing the principles of semi-sage realm at such a lower level was definitely equivalent to going against the heaven's will.

The stages were like floors in a building. A person could see everything on the floor they were on. However, a person on the bottom floor would never understand the feeling of overlooking the earth from high up in the sky.

Ye Xiwen was clearly a person who had never left the ground. Yet, he seemed to know the feeling of overlooking the earth from the sky.

Ye Xiwen's actions and agility skill got imbued with fluctuating world-principles as he condensed more and more of them. Now, each and every movement of his' carried the power of the world. Those lightning people didn't stand a chance against him. He slapped the large group of lightning people with his Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand, and killed them all in one shot.

As Ye Xiwen's speed of annihilating the lightning people grew more and more — those semi-sage experts as well as the flood dragon became more and more anxious.

That was because... they were witnessing the birth of a miracle. Ye Xiwen was unceasingly condensing the principles within his body. He quickly surpassed the preliminary stage of semi-sage realm by condensing 100 'dao principles'. However, he continued. Soon, he had condensed 110, 120... and then... he finally crossed the 200 mark. Now, he had closed the gap between himself and these experts. However, they felt their hair standing on end when they saw Ye Xiwen condense more principles after the 200 mark. To think that such a terrifying expert was present among them... one who could continuously comprehend more than 200 principles... and that too in one go. God only knows how much effort these people had to put to condense 200 principles.

But... Ye Xiwen didn't stop.

“Hurry, let’s get out of here!” Shi Zhi Ming shouted loudly. He couldn’t bear the pressure on his heart, and turned around to escape. They’d end up dead if they waited until the full promotion of Ye Xiwen’s strength since his power would’ve increase beyond their imagination by then. Not to mention that Ye Xiwen would have the blood slave’s support.

The other few experts, as well as the flood dragon, turned around to escape after they heard Shi Zhi Ming’s shout.

“Want to run away? It’s too late for that!”

A tyrannical aura — which clearly surpassed the initial stage of semi-sage realm — swept in the surroundings.

# Chapter 388: Slaughters Everyone

---

“Want to run away? It’s too late for that!”

A sneering sound came from Ye Xiwen’s mouth. His aura exploded and surged to an exceptionally terrifying extent.

Ye Xiwen had condensed about 300 dao principles inside his body. Thanks to that, his fighting strength had reached the intermediate stage of semi-sage realm. As a result, he had enough fighting strength to stand against the experts who were at the peak of the initial stage of semi-sage realm.

Ye Xiwen shot his Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand to stop those people from escaping. It formed a mysterious red cloud. It was a lot more exquisite than the one displayed by the blood slave.

Ye Xiwen’s Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand had obtained enough energy and essence that it could easily split the mountains.

His flaming hand advanced towards that divine eagle to grab it.

The divine eagle couldn’t evade Ye Xiwen’s attack even after putting all its effort. So, it screamed loudly as it attempted to counter the attack. Its golden wings began to emanate golden rays of light in the surroundings. Its wings flapped several times, and unleashed an overwhelming golden beam. The golden beam rushed forth to tackle Ye Xiwen’s Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand.

Ying Da naturally couldn't bear to see that his pet was going to be caught by Ye Xiwen. So, he quickly turned around and brandished his long blade. The blade energy shattered the space as it went towards Ye Xiwen's attack. It collided with Ye Xiwen's attack; it seemed as if a meteor had crashed into the earth. The terrifying power unleashed by the collision cracked the space open; inch by inch.

“Bang!”

Two attacks of semi-sage realm had swept out in the surroundings at once. The energy released from the attacks pierced through the mountains and rivers as they crashed straight into Ye Xiwen's Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand.

The Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand vibrated frantically after it had faced the two terrifying attacks at once. Ye Xiwen coldly snorted and pumped more power into his attack. As a result, his blazing hand started to turn more and more golden in color.

“Ha!” Ye Xiwen shouted loudly. He grabbed the golden beam and the blade energy simultaneously. They started to boil and seethe within the grasp of his Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand.

“Bang!” the golden beam and the blade energy were crushed, and got annihilated. Then, the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand advanced forward, and grabbed that divine eagle without any delay.

“Don't do it!” Ying Da roared. He released startling blade energy.



It pierced its way through the heavy water and rushed towards the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand to chop it down.

However, it was too late.

“Bang!” the giant stature of that divine eagle was ruptured because it was crushed by the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand. It could only scream before its blood splashed out. In the end, it got turned into a mass of blood fog.

“No, you bastard!” Ying Da felt his heart shatter when he saw his several-hundred-years-old companion getting crushed to death. His body turned into a streamer of light, and he suddenly arrived in front of Ye Xiwen to kill him.

“Buried Sword Secrets!” Ye Xiwen let out a cold shout. He congealed a startling ‘sword intention’ in his hand, and brandished it horizontally.

The ‘sword intention’ forged its way ahead. It appeared as if a long dragon was flying across the sky.

“Puchi!” Ying Da's blade energy got defeated by the ‘sword intention’. Then, his entire body was chopped down into pieces by the ‘sword intention’. He died on the spot.

Pan Shui Rong, Shi Zhi Ming, and that flood dragon were extremely frightened when they saw two semi-sage realm powerhouses being effortlessly slaughtered by Ye Xiwen. They

rushed upward towards the water surface with all their strength.

How could Ye Xiwen let them escape? He had chosen to cross the 'Heavenly Tribulation' in the water mainly because he would've had to face several hundred experts of legendry's great complete realm along with these semi-sage experts if he had crossed it on the surface. So, how could he possibly allow them to escape?

Ye Xiwen sent the blood slave to stop the flood dragon, while he personally chased after Hundred Barbarians Cave's Pan Shui Rong to kill her.

Pan Shui Rong panicked when she saw Ye Xiwen chase after her. She quickly turned around and pointed her fingers towards him. Her huge fingers extended towards Ye Xiwen; one by one. It seemed as if a God had descended into the mortal world to destroy it. The fingers shattered the space wherever they went. It seemed as if the world itself was about to disintegrate into pieces.

Ye Xiwen immediately recognized this attack. It was a martial art of a small guarding faction of the Hundred Barbarians Cave. It was called [Hundred Barbarians Liu Ren Fingers](#). Even a finger could break the world. It was said that this terrifying technique had emerged from the Barbarian God's finger technique. It was also said that the Barbarian God had once destroyed half-of-the-world with this technique.

Ye Xiwen shot his Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand once again. It struck those huge pointy fingers. The fingers simply weren't a match for the Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand grabbed those huge fingers, and exploded them. The power of the finger attack wasn’t inferior to the power of Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand. However, Pan Shui Rong’s skill was far less than Ye Xiwen’s.

Ye Xiwen had also learned the method of executing the Hundred Barbarians Liu Ren Fingers from the memory of the deceased disciples of Hundred Barbarians Cave. However, Ye Xiwen was dressed up as a disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave. So, he didn’t display a power technique of the Hundred Barbarians Cave.

Pan Shui Rong’s fingers were crushed by Ye Xiwen; one by one. She couldn’t evade Ye Xiwen’s attack, and got slaughtered. He plundered all her wealth from her corpse. Ye Xiwen didn’t show her a shred of mercy even though she was a woman.

Ye Xiwen rushed towards Shi Zhi Ming after he had killed Pan Shui Rong. Shi Zhi Ming had escaped towards the water surface by now.

Shi Zhi Ming convulsed with fear as he saw Ye Xiwen approach closer. He shouted, “No! You can’t kill me! Otherwise, my father

won't spare you!"

"Your father won't find out about this!" Ye Xiwen sneered. A 'Hanshan Seal' fell from above like a huge dragon. It caught Shi Zhi Ming off-guard, smashed his body, and thrust him to the bottom of the pond. The bones in his body had been crushed. Generally, the barbarians had more robust bodies than the people of Southern region. However, none were on par with Ye Xiwen.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen used Fire Cloud's Sky Falling Hand and slapped Shi Zhi Ming to death. His body turned into a group of blood fog. Then, Ye Xiwen plundered his wealth as well.

The wealth of these semi-sage experts was on an entirely different level when compared to that on the bodies of the experts of legendry's great complete realm since they were considered as elites among elites in their respective martial arts schools. So, they were bound to have several treasures on their bodies.

However, there were no 'Spirit Dans' on their bodies. Rather, they had possessed '[Primary Spirit Dans](#)'. A 'Primary Spirit Dan' was refined from the 'Spirit Dans'. First, the spirit energy was extracted from the 'Spirit Dans'. It was then compressed to a great extent, and then further condensed to form 'Primary Spirit Dans'. It was impossible for the experts below semi-sage realm to condense these high-quality Dans. It could be said that spirit energy was the smallest unit of energy which was accessible to the experts below semi-sage realm. Only those experts who had condensed the principles of semi-sage realm or above were capable of condensing 'Primary Spirit Dans'. 10,000 'Spirit Dans' were required to condense one 'Primary Spirit Dan'.

The experts of semi-sage realm or higher used to deal in 'Primary Spirit Dans' only. Otherwise, if they dealt in 'Spirit Dans' with each other... then the number of 'Spirit Dans' in an average transaction would reach astronomical figures.

Ye Xiwen had obtained more than 20,000 'Primary Spirit Dans' from the bodies of these experts. It was a big fortune for him.

The wealth of legendary experts was nothing in comparison to that of these semi-sage experts — that too when the comparison was drawn solely on the basis of 'Primary Spirit Dans'... and not adding the other exotic treasures and magic weapons in their possession.

Ye Xiwen rushed towards that flood dragon after he had killed Shi Zhi Ming. He sneered since there was one around to interfere. The flood dragon collapsed under Ye Xiwen and the blood slave's pincer attack. However, Ye Xiwen didn't turn its corpse into blood fog. Instead, he left its corpse intact, and stored it in his stock. The flood dragon's entire body was covered with treasures. The dragon's blood could be used to nourish and harvest rare herbal medicines.

Ye Xiwen began to operate the 'restraining breath technique' after he had killed the flood dragon. And, his appearance transformed into that of Shi Zhi Ming's. He sneered and received the blood slave back. Then, he rushed out of the deep and cold pond like a streamer of light.

The disciples of all three forces were anxiously waiting at the shore of the pond. However, they hadn't dared to jump into the cold pond. A few impatient disciples had dived into the pond, but had been frozen to death.

Diving into this pond was like committing suicide for an expert below the semi-sage realm. But, Ye Xiwen was an exception; thanks to his 'gilded tyrant form'.

Moreover, the sudden arrival of the 'Heavenly Tribulation' had scared them. The appearance of all types of lightning figures had terrified them even more. They hadn't come across such a terrifying 'Heavenly Tribulation' in the past. Such an abnormal tribulation would appear only for a monster who had dared to go against the heaven's will. Otherwise, the heavens would never be so unfair as to send such a dreadful 'Heavenly Tribulation'. That was because the one facing it would have little-to-no-chance of survival. Forget about witnessing a tribulation like this one... they hadn't even heard about something like this. It was an extremely scary spectacle.

They were very worried because they might have to face a one-sided massacre if their leader didn't win.

"Young Master Shi, Young Master Shi!" several experts of the Fire Cloud Cave shouted in joy as they saw Ye Xiwen emerge from the pond.

Ye Xiwen nodded blankly. He then said, "Let's get back to the Fire Cloud Cave!"

“Wait! Shi Zhi Ming, where is our Miss Pan?” The warriors of the Hundred Barbarians Cave didn’t hold back. They blocked Ye Xiwen’s path.

“You guys are courting death. Do you want to meet her?!” Ye Xiwen shouted coldly. His eyes flashed with killing intent as he continued to pretend being Shi Zhi Ming. A Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand appeared, and swept towards them for the kill.

The Hundred Barbarians Cave and Fire Cloud Cave were mortal enemies. It was fairly natural for a deadly fight to break-out between them.

“Bang!” These experts of legendry’s great complete realm couldn’t evade Ye Xiwen’s attack. They were reduced to a mass of flesh and blood by Ye Xiwen. There was no comparison between Ye Xiwen’s strength and theirs’ even before he had jumped into the pond. Let alone now... when he had condensed about 300 principles.

Ye Xiwen killed them all in the blink of an eye. Over 200 warriors of Hundred Barbarians Cave had been slaughtered.

The experts of the Eagle Cave were shocked by this scene. They were deterred by this, and didn’t dare to advance forward. Provoking this vicious fiend would be tantamount to courting death.

Suddenly, a bad feeling emerged inside their hearts. Ying Da

should've arrived by now... if he was alive. But, he hadn't. On the contrary, Ye Xiwen had. This clearly meant that Shi Zhi Ming had won the fight over the Sunflower Water Essence, and Ying Da must've died.

They wouldn't dare to provoke Ye Xiwen for they didn't wish to face the same fate as their leader.

Ye Xiwen didn't say anything since he saw the scared faces of the warriors of the Eagle Cave. They were basically speechless. He left with the other disciples of the Fire Cloud Cave. He spared the lives of the Eagle Cave warriors, and allowed them go so that they could spread the news that Shi Zhi Ming had killed Pan Shui Rong. This would deepen the hatred between these two forces, and that would reduce the threat to the Southern Region.

Liu Ren: a.k.a Da Liu Ren is a one of china's three highest level divination skills, used in astrology. There isn't a perfect translation for this term in English.

Primary Spirit Dan: Literal translation would be Spirit Yuan Dan. To make it easy to remember for the readers, we have translated the term to Primary Spirit Dan. Yuan has several meanings in English. It's also the currency used in China. It has other meaning such as first, original, fundamental etc.



# Chapter 389: Barbarian God's Real Body!

---

The Fire Cloud Cave's main altar was located in a top-notch place in the Southern Wasteland. Countless experts of the Fire Cloud Cave were stationed there. The entire place was brimming with spiritual arteries that ran underground. Thanks to that, the Fire Cloud Cave's main altar was overflowing with spirit energy, and looked like a paradise in the mortal world.

The main altar of the Fire Cloud Cave certainly wasn't on the level of the True Martial University. But, it was still a top-tier place of immortals.

Ye Xiwen moved along with the disciples of the Fire Cloud Cave — disguised as Shi Zhi Ming. He then dismissed the team, and went inside the Fire Cloud Cave without any issues — all thanks to his disguise as the son of an elder of the Fire Cloud Cave.

Shi Zhi Ming enjoyed a good reputation in the younger generation of the Fire Cloud Cave. Ye Xiwen made his way into the Fire Cloud Cave without any problem by taking advantage of Shi Zhi Ming's reputation.

Shi Zhi Ming was a core disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave. The eligibility for becoming a core disciple in the Fire Cloud Cave was same as it was inside the True Martial University. Only sage realm experts could be appointed as core disciples. However, Shi Zhi Ming had managed to become a core disciple by taking advantage of his identity as the son of an elder. Ye Xiwen could use his identity as a core disciple to move about freely, and could do whatever he wanted; so long as true disciples didn't come into the

picture.

Shi Zhi Ming had his own [cave mansion](#) inside the Fire Cloud Cave. Ye Xiwen went inside Shi Zhi Ming's cave mansion, and asked one of his trusted confidants to look for the whereabouts of Zhu Tian Zong.

Zhu Tian Zong's matter was confidential. However, it was only so for the outsiders. Ye Xiwen's present position was that of a core disciple of the Fire Cloud Cave. So, it should be a piece of cake for him to investigate this matter.

Who would think that this person who had the appearance of Shi Zhi Ming... wasn't actually Shi Zhi Ming, but Ye Xiwen?

Ye Xiwen sat cross-legged, and was immediately surrounded by all sorts of principles he had condensed earlier. Ye Xiwen was doing his utmost to consolidate these principles. Ye Xiwen's accumulation of energy was very deep. After all, he had deliberately suppressed his cultivation for over two years. And, it had now been unleashed; all at once. This was extremely terrifying.

Ye Xiwen had condensed about 300 'dao principles'. However, he knew that this was merely the beginning; nothing more. He could attain a complete qualitative change and become a sage expert only after he had condensed over 1000 'dao principles'.

It wasn't very difficult to condense principles at this stage. The most important point was that the body must be capable of

containing them. People with formidable bodies like that of Ye Xiwen would obviously reap great benefits for cheap.

Only the experts of the intermediate stage of semi-sage realm were capable of condensing 300 dao principles. However, Ye Xiwen had managed to pull it off nonetheless. He couldn't be taken lightly. In fact, he could instantly go past the 300 mark; so long as his body could become stronger.

However, the danger related to this 'Zhu Tian Zong' matter had gone far beyond Ye Xiwen's imagination.

"Shi Zhi Ming, come out!" suddenly, a loud shout came from outside. Ye Xiwen had been seated calmly inside the cave mansion, and had been waiting for any news related to Zhu Tian Zong.

Ye Xiwen swept-out his divine sense to probe the outside. He saw a 20-year-old man. He was clad in a tiger fur. His bronze-colored skin was glowing wildly. His eyes looked fierce, and it seemed as if he'd bite someone at the drop of a hat.

He turned out to be a semi-sage expert. His intrepid aura was sweeping across the surroundings; it carried the presence of principles.

Five or six barbarian warriors were stationed behind him. Each of these individuals was an expert of legendry's great complete realm. Their valiant aura made them seem very frightening.

Ye Xiwen came out flying. He looked coldly at this young man. He had come to know this man from Shi Zhi Ming's memory. This young man was named Ding Gao Yang. He was the son of another elder. He and Shi Zhi Ming would often be entangled in small skirmishes. And, Shi Zhi Ming had always failed to deal with him.

“Ding Gao Yang, what are you doing here?” Ye Xiwen's countenance was ice-cold as he asked.

“Humph! You really wish to die, don't you? You dared to send someone from your faction to look for Brother Zhu's whereabouts. Do you wish to die? Don't you know that Zhu Tian Zong's whereabouts are a secret? Yet you're trying to find him?” Ding Gao Yang replied coldly. Then, he grabbed a barbarian expert from behind, and threw him on the ground. That expert was Shi Zhi Ming's confidante. But, he was already dead.

Ye Xiwen frowned. Zhu Tian Zong's matter was more complex than he had expected. Initially, he had anticipated that he could easily find Zhu Tian Zong's whereabouts by taking the advantage of Shi Zhi Ming's position. But, one simple investigation-attempt had led to such a big development.

“Brother Zhu Tian Zong is in the presence of His Majesty — the Cave Lord. He has obtained a special permission to immerse himself in the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ by the virtue of his great achievements. It shall help him to condense principles. Then, he would be able to attain the real body of the Barbarian God. He will then have boundless future prospects. At that time, he may also become a member of my palace. And, you dared to send someone to track him down?” Ding Gao Yang sneered, “Not many people

know that Brother Zhu was our undercover agent in the True Martial University and he has now returned. But, you sent your man to track him in spite of knowing this?! You are courting death! I suspect that you've secretly collaborated with the True Martial University. Just you wait... I will inform the elders. And then, you will die!"

Ding Gao Yang laughed out loud. He had finally gotten the opportunity to get rid of this old enemy of his'. He hadn't expected that his arch rival would be so foolish that he'd try to look for Zhu Tian Zong's whereabouts. But, now he could get him killed by the hands of the elders.

Condensing Barbarian God's real body from 'Flaming Sun Real Water'!

Ye Xiwen instantly found the answer from Shi Zhi Ming's memory. This 'Flaming Sun Real Water' was an extraordinary and magical liquid. It was capable of enhancing one's physique to a great extent. Even Shi Zhi Ming had only heard about it. He had never obtained the reward of accessing it. One could only obtain this reward if they were to make a massive contribution to the Fire Cloud Cave. Even then, one could only obtain a small vial of this magical liquid for consumption, but it was enough to enhance one's body significantly. However, Zhu Tian Zong had gotten a chance to immerse his entire body in the 'Flaming Sun Real Water Pond'. How big a contribution towards the Fire Cloud Cave could get one such a reward?

The practice method of the barbarian people was a bit similar to Ye Xiwen's. Both aimed to infinitely strengthen their bodies. Ye

Xiwen's main objective was to practice the 'gilded tyrant form' to the pinnacle. The barbarian people's main objective was to condense the real body of the Barbarian God.

However, the 'gilded tyrant form' was different. The 'gilded tyrant form' was achieved by strengthening the body to an extremely profound level. However, the 'real body of the Barbarian God' was itself a type of 'body', and was similar to the physique of the Barbarian God; as mention in the legends.

The southern barbarians practiced martial arts largely to transform their own body into the real body of the Barbarian God. But, this process was very long. A majority of the barbarian people would give-up midway since they couldn't attain the real body of the Barbarian God. But, immersing oneself in the 'Flaming Sun Real Water' could quicken this process.

However, one needed to consume a great amount of the 'Flaming Sun Real Water' to attain the real body of Barbarian God. And, one could only get a small vial of this magical liquid even after they had made a massive contribution to the Fire Cloud Cave since they couldn't allow their disciples to squander this precious treasure.

Their willingness to give such a reward to Zhu Tian Zong after his return from the True Martial University clearly showed that he must've brought back some extraordinary intel.

"Now that you've come here... I won't let you leave!" Ye Xiwen sneered. Ding Gao Yang had brought-about his own destruction. Ye Xiwen was disguised as Shi Zhi Ming. But, the higher authorities would make an investigation if they came to know

about this matter. Then, how would Ye Xiwen be able to conceal the truth?

“Are you implying that you’ll silence the witnesses? All by yourself?” Ding Gao Yang looked disdainfully at Ye Xiwen and said. He knew this old rival very well.

Both youngsters were on par with each other. Therefore, one couldn’t do much about the other.

“Humph!” Ye Xiwen sneered. The sound waves suddenly scattered and set-off waves of energy. The energy waves swept-out in the surroundings, and shattered the space wherever they went. Those experts of legendry’s great complete realm who had accompanied Ding Gao Yang were struck. They spouted blood as the bones throughout their bodies got crushed; their energy centers were severed.

“You have brought about your own doom. Do you think that you’ve obtained a rare opportunity to make some meritorious achievement?” Ye Xiwen walked towards Ding Gao Yang; step by step. His imposing aura also increased; bit by bit.

“How can it be possible? How did you become so strong?” Ding Gao Yang’s pupil suddenly contracted. An expression of terror appeared on his face. He finally realized that his old enemy had become extremely powerful. In fact, he had effortlessly killed those experts of legendry’s great complete realm with the sound energy produce from just a ‘humph’. They knew each other very well. So, Ding Gao Yang was aware that it was impossible for Shi Zhi Ming to achieve such a feat. But, he didn’t know what kind of a

fortuitous adventure Shi Zhi Ming had come across that had made him so terrifying.

“Go and ask the King of Hell!” Ye Xiwen sneered. The Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand appeared to grab Ding Gao Yang. It was strong enough to overturn a mountain.

“How’s this even possible? I can’t believe this!” Ding Gao Yang roared. He shot the same Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand towards Ye Xiwen.

However, how could he be Ye Xiwen’s opponent? His Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand was grabbed and exterminated by Ye Xiwen. He crushed it into small pieces, and then absorbed it. Then, Ye Xiwen’s attack advanced forward.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Ye Xiwen’s suppression exploded the defense-type magical weapons which had been protecting Ding Gao Yang’s body. His protective layer of ‘real elemental energy’ was also crushed by the suppression. Then, the Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand struck his body.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand grabbed him,



and crushed his body. His body burst into a group of blood fog. Then, Ye Xiwen absorbed his soul and read his memory.

Ye Xiwen came to know that he hadn't yet reported this matter to the higher authority. He wanted to humiliate his old enemy before he reported this matter to the higher authority.

Ye Xiwen felt a bit relieved. Disguising as Shi Zhi Ming had turned out to be a good deal. Now, finding Zhu Tian Zong's whereabouts wouldn't be a big deal for him. After all, he was the son of an elder, and also a semi-sage expert. But, he didn't want an inspection to happen since his identity could be revealed if they were to investigate.

Ding Gao Yang's memories revealed that Zhu Tian Zong had already left for the 'Flaming Sun Real Pond'. The pond was located in the depths of the Fire Cloud Cave. So, he must rush there to kill Zhu Tian Zong. It would be more difficult to deal with him once he had attained the real body of the Barbarian God.

Ye Xiwen was about to leave... but, suddenly... the sky began to shake violently. It unexpectedly began to collapse into small pieces; bit-by-bit.

Cave Mansion – alternate translation would be Cave Dwelling, is known as the legendary abode of immortals.

# Chapter 390: Gilded Body Accomplished!

---

“Badum Badum Badum Badum!”

Suddenly, the sounds of the drumbeats reverberated between the heaven and earth. Ye Xiwen came to know the meaning of this signal from the memories of the deceased disciples of Fire Cloud Cave. It was the Fire Cloud’s Cave signal to gather their experts in a time of crisis. This signal was only used in extremely urgent and critical situations.

“Crap! What is going on?” Ye Mo looked towards the huge cracks that had started to appear in the sky and asked.

Ye Xiwen had just flown out of this mountain range when a large number of experts flew past him.

“Move fast. Dammit! This can’t be happening. How is this possible? Those bastards of the Devil Worship Cult joined hands with the experts of the Hundred Barbarians Cave. Aren’t the experts of Hundred Barbarians Cave afraid of facing the outrage and public indignation from the people of the True Martial World?” An expert bellowed.

“Dammit! They’ve already advanced towards the main altar. They must’ve found out that a lot of our experts aren’t present here and have already left for the battlefield. Sh\*t! They’ve certainly established a direct connection with the devil world!”

A group of formidable figures swept across from the sky. Experts

of semi-sage realm, sage realm and even unfathomable experts of great-sage realm were present in the group.

Each of these experts went flying away. Their tyrannical auras swept across in the surroundings. The tyrannical devil energy was also spread in all directions at the same time.

“Damn. The Hundred Barbarian Cave was doing nothing but attracting our experts to the battlefield earlier. But, they wanted to launch their main attack from behind in reality!”

Ye Xiwen was also quite shocked by this. The Fire Cloud cave was one of the super powers that had stood erect in the True Martial World for thousands of years. How was a major force like this just seeing its people massacred before its eyes?

This was really a messed up situation.

Every sage realm and great sage realm expert of the Fire Cloud Cave immediately came outside. A startling conflict broke out between them, and the joint forces of the Hundred Barbarians Cave and Devil Worship Cult.

“Ye Xiwen, this is a very good opportunity. A majority of the experts of the Fire Cloud Cave have gone out to fight. Now, it’s the best chance to obtain ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’!” Ye Mo shouted with excitement. “The ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ is quite amazing. A treasure like that doesn’t appear often... maybe once in countless years. Even a major force like the Fire Cloud Cave deems it as a priceless treasure. Your ‘gilded tyrant form’ can have a

breakthrough to the sixth layer if you can immerse your body in ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’. You will become invincible among the experts who are at the initial stage of semi-sage realm. Ha ha ha!”

One’s body could obtain incredible benefits with the help of the nourishment from ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’. That was why it was considered the most precious reward by the people of Fire Cloud Cave.

“Moreover, you can take advantage of this chaos and kill Zhu Tian Zong. Then, you can get out of Fire Cloud Cave once the mission is complete. Staying here is extremely dangerous!” Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen nodded. The fight between all the sage experts and great sage experts of Fire Cloud Cave, and the joint forces of Hundred Barbarians Cave and Devil Worship Cult, was world-shaking. The space surrounding the Fire Cloud Cave had also started to collapse and shatter into small pieces. No one had expected that such a terrifying battle would break out.

One mustn’t forget that the Fire Cloud Cave was a colossus force just like the True Martial University. They knew how to protect their lair. They had locked the surrounding space, and had made it impossible to open a direct portal to the devil world. Moreover, they had locked the space so tightly that the experts of below semi-sage realm couldn’t break it. They could at most cause a minor damage in a radius of a few meters. The damaged part of the barrier would then restore itself immediately. However, even such an insanely strong spatial barrier had been smashed into pieces. Nobody had witnessed such a horrifying battle before; to the

extent that its aftermath could scare a person to death.

This kind of battle appeared like a mortal fight among immortals... even to someone like Ye Xiwen. His 'gilded tyrant form' had been mastered to the fifth layer, but even that could disintegrate by a mere touch from the complementary waves that were being generated during this battle.

Ye Xiwen certainly wasn't interested in taking part in this battle.

Devil Worship Cult's name, as well as its existence, had annoyed the True Martial World since the beginning. They were usually the reason behind any major chaos. A majority of devil experts of the Devil Worship Cult had spread everywhere like forest fire. Their main motive was to create chaos in the True Martial World. And for that purpose — they could form alliance with anyone. The more chaos they could create — the more beneficial it would be for them. That was because it would create the opportunity to establish the dominance of the Devil World over the True Martial World.

Ye Xiwen decided to first kill Zhu Tian Zong without worrying about anything else. And then, he'd plunder the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'.

Ye Xiwen was very powerful. He could be considered at the peak of the initial stage of semi-sage realm. But, his 'gilded tyrant form' could smoothly reach the sixth layer if he could get his hands on the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. Consequently, his fighting strength would increase by leaps and bounds. A difference of heaven and earth would come into effect by this one layer's increment.

Ye Xiwen restrained his breath, and quickly flew towards the 'Flaming Sun Temple'.

The 'Flaming Sun Real Water' was genuinely the most precious divine-liquid of the Fire Cloud Cave. It was stored inside the 'Flaming Sun Temple', which was situated in the depths of Fire Cloud Cave. Ye Xiwen was disguised as Shi Zhi Ming, but he still couldn't approach it that easily even if he used his identity as an elder's son. But, the entire Fire Cloud Cave was in chaos right now. They had been at war with the Hundred Barbarians Cave for so many years, but today's battle was unusual. There were often short skirmishes between them. Yet, they never went as far as to attack each other's nests since that could pose a threat to their entire existence. The entire Fire Cloud Cave was in mess. This was quite a heart-curdling spectacle.

Ye Xiwen approached the 'Flaming Sun Temple' gradually. At this time, the Fire Cloud Cave no longer looked like the wonderland it used to be. It no longer had the 'immortal aura' lingering in the air. Instead, the atmosphere was loaded with various kinds of vicious energy, ominous aura and devil energy. The spectacle seemed like something that would appear on doomsday. Various kinds of roars and shrieks of devil experts could be heard. It seemed as if the barrier between this world and the devil world had been torn open, and a large number of various sorts of devils had barged into this world.

Many disciples of Fire Cloud Cave were fighting with the devil experts. It seemed as if the entire territory of the Fire Cloud Cave had been encompassed in this tremendous battle.

The Fire Cloud Cave wasn't prepared for this sudden enemy attack; in spite of fact that they had used several defense-type matrixes. So, they had been forced to retreat by the allied forces of their enemies; little by little. They were being pushed inwards from the peripheral region. Several of their palaces had fallen into conflagration. Great numbers of disciples of the Fire Cloud Cave had been killed or swallowed by the devils. It was an exceptionally tragic spectacle – like a scene from purgatory itself.

Ye Xiwen continued to fly towards his destination. On the way, he saw a large group of devils not far from him. Their strange laughter was proliferating everywhere, and sounded extremely scary.

In fact, some of the experts of the Hundred Barbarians Cave and devils had even made their way inside the main altar. There was no way to stop them because of their massive numerical strength. These experts were on a killing spree inside the altar.

Ye Xiwen also came across some of these experts on his way. He didn't hold back, and killed these evildoers.

Ye Xiwen didn't hold a good opinion of the devils anyway. He had been fighting against the devil race for a long time.

Soon, Ye Xiwen arrived at the 'Flaming Sun Temple'. This place was also somewhat chaotic; but not as worse as outside.

At this time, a few disciples of semi-sage realm arrived there. One

of them shouted, “Stop! Who are you? This is an important place of the Fire Cloud Cave. No one is allowed to come here without the Cave Lord’s permission!”

Ye Xiwen didn’t act politely. He shot the Fire Cloud’s Sky Falling Hand, and grabbed them all at once.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

These semi-sage experts were no match for Ye Xiwen, and were ‘insta-killed’. They hadn’t anticipated that one of their own would arrive here, and attack them in this manner. They had arrived here to protect the ‘Flaming Sun Temple’. They were naturally elites among elites. An ordinary expert of semi-sage realm shouldn’t have been their opponent. Even Shi Zhi Ming might not have been their match. However, it was such a pity that they had come across Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen entered the temple without any hesitation. He saw a spacious and empty hall as soon as he went inside the temple. In the hall, he saw a pond whose perimeter was less than 100 meters. A red-colored liquid was boiling inside the pond. He sensed some kind of tyrannical energy seething inside the liquid. This was what Ye Xiwen was seeking for – the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’. The Fire Cloud Cave had been accumulating this ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ since times immemorial. It was very hard to accumulate so much.



One could accumulate only a bit of this magical liquid. And, that too after saving-up for countless years!

Ye Xiwen dived into the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. He felt incredible once he was in the water. The pores in his skin, and the capillaries in his body, immediately started to open-up. He went all out, and started to absorb the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'.

This 'Flaming Sun Real Water' possessed a strong concentration of the positive 'yang' energy. This energy had been accumulated in abundance for countless years to form the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. Hence, it possessed endless power.

Ye Xiwen felt the influx of a majestic power emerge inside his body as he absorbed the 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. It was intensely hot. It burned his meridians as it circulated through them.

The trace of a painful expression appeared on Ye Xiwen's face. An ordinary attack couldn't injure his body; thanks to his 'gilded tyrant form'. Even his meridians were extremely strong. An ordinary energy shouldn't have been able to harm them. However, he felt as if his meridians were going to explode. But, he didn't dare to stop the absorption midway, and began to operate his 'gilded tyrant form' in order to completely absorb this power.

This power was different from the energies that Ye Xiwen had absorbed in the past. It had started to transform the structure of his body after it had drilling into it. Even his 'gilded tyrant form' had begun to transform in some unknown direction.

Ye Xiwen certainly knew that his body was soon going to transform into the real body of the Barbarian God if he didn't do anything. He wouldn't have minded if he were a barbarian. Rather, a barbarian would've been extremely happy if that had happened. However, he was dead-set on practicing his own version of body-tempering technique. Therefore, he couldn't allow his body to transform into the real body of the Barbarian god.

He could only restrain the decomposition of 'Flaming Sun Real Water' inside his body, and redirect it towards the nourishment of the sixth layer of 'tyrant body technique'.

Golden divine beams began to flicker frantically inside Ye Xiwen's body. He began to operate his 'tyrant body technique' at its best since he wanted it to have a breakthrough to the sixth layer.

“Bang!”

It was hard to tell after how long... but a terrifying aura broke out of his body.

The 'tyrant body technique' had finally been practiced to the sixth layer.

# Chapter 391: Slaughters Zhu Tian Zong!

---

Ye Xiwen had finished absorbing the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’, and his ‘gilded tyrant form’ had finally made the breakthrough to the sixth layer. His whole body was glittering and emitting golden rays of light. Red drops of water were gradually dripping from his golden body.

Ye Xiwen had felt as if his body was about to be torn apart once he started to absorb the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’. He could feel his body transforming on a cellular level. He could feel his cells being torn open, and then reconstructed.

Ye Xiwen had suppressed the transformation of his body. After that, he had focused all the accumulated energy into reaching the sixth layer of ‘gilded tyrant form’.

He had consumed only one-tenth of the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ from the pond during this breakthrough. No wonder it was considered Fire Cloud Cave’s most hidden and precious treasure. The big pond was full of ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’, but everyone wasn’t allowed to use it. In fact, only one or two experts from a generation were allowed to use it to attain the real body of the Barbarian God.

Only a few people had the authority to use this magical liquid. But, the entire ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ had fallen into Ye Xiwen’s hands. It could be said that this was his biggest harvest on this mission. Now, he wouldn’t have to face difficulties in having future breakthroughs; thanks to this ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’.

“Ha ha ha, Ye Xiwen, you’ve developed quite a lot. And, the ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ has fallen into your hands! So, you won’t have to face difficulties in perfecting the ‘gilded tyrant form’!” Ye Mo laughed out loud.

He couldn’t have obtained this opportunity if it hadn’t been for the sudden outbreak of this battle, and chaos that had ensued thereafter. In fact, he wouldn’t have even thought about this impossible task.

“Who are you?” a man’s loud shout was heard. It came from outside the temple. He wasn’t clad in the common barbarian attire. He was dressed-up as a mediator of the Southern region; he was clad in white clothes. He had thick eyebrows and big eyes. He looked different from other barbarians.

Ye Xiwen immediately recognized that person. He turned out to be his target – Zhu Tian Zong!

Ye Xiwen stepped out from the ‘Flaming Sun Real Pond’. He laughed mischievously. Then, he looked at Zhu Tian Zong and said, “I am Ye Xiwen. Nice to meet you, Brother Zhu!”

Ye Xiwen collected the remaining ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ from the pond as he said that.

Zhu Tian Zong’s complexion suddenly changed. He said, “You’re Ye Xiwen?”

Zhu Tian Zong had obviously heard Ye Xiwen's name. After all, Ye Xiwen was very famous among this session's disciples. Zhu Tian Zong had never seen him before, but he could tell that this guy was indeed Ye Xiwen.

"It's impossible. I know everything about the people the True Martial University has sent after me. And, I know for sure that you're not one of them!" Zhu Tian Zong's complexion looked ugly as he said that.

Ye Xiwen realized that the Merit Elder had indeed been right. Zhu Tian Zong had genuinely established a big information network during the many years he had spent in the Merit Palace Hall.

"Those people were sent only to attract Big Brother Zhu's attention!" Ye Xiwen spoke with a light smile on his face. "It is I who will take your head!"

"You want to kill me? You're very reckless!" Zhu Tian Zong sneered and said. "I know that you're a heaven's pride level expert. But, you've brought about your own destruction by coming here!"

"Haha, today I get to personally strangle a heaven's pride level expert!" Zhu Tian Zong burst into laughter. Then, his eyes turned fierce and revealed a somewhat cruel look.

Zhu Tian Zong sneered. His hands emitted majestic golden lights. This was his secret technique – 'Golden Cicada Sage Beheader'. He appeared like the incarnation of a giant 'Cicada God' from ancient

times. He streaked across the horizon as he flew forward. There were ‘dao principles’ wrapped around his body. He was an expert of the semi-sage realm!

Ye Xiwen’s complexion remained unchanged. He knew that the Lord of the Fire Cloud Cave must’ve helped Zhu Tian Zong with his practice. That was why his cultivation had increased so sharply within such a short time. The golden divinities began to surge within Ye Xiwen’s body. His hair was blown upwards.

Ye Xiwen launched his counter-attack. He didn’t need to keep the disguise of a ‘Fire Cloud Cave’ disciple in front of Zhu Tian Zong. Suddenly, a dragon’s roar reverberated. His palm’s shadow covered the entire sky like dense rain-clouds, and went towards Zhu Tian Zong to grab him.

“Bang!” Ye Xiwen’s palm shadow ferociously collided with the Golden Cicada’s phantom image. The phantom image of Golden Cicada was torn to pieces, and scattered. Zhu Tian Zong’s real figure had been hidden behind it. It was revealed once again. Ye Xiwen’s figure suddenly rose up in the sky. He brandished his palm, and displayed the move ‘Hidden Dragon Rises from the abyss’. Suddenly, a golden dragon rushed towards Zhu Tian Zong, and struck him on his chest.

Ye Xiwen’s ‘coiling dragon palm’ had been practiced to an extremely profound level. Its power had also increased countless times after Ye Xiwen had deduced all its nine moves.

That golden dragon faced upwards, and let out a long and loud roar. Suddenly, this entire place seemed like the country of the

dragons. Ye Xiwen had integrated everything he ever comprehended in this simple move. This one move could even rip apart the entire world.

Zhu Tian Zong was caught off-guard. Ye Xiwen had already arrived in front of him. Zhu Tian Zong had looked down on Ye Xiwen since he himself was a semi-sage expert. However, he had never thought that Ye Xiwen would turn out to be so terrifying. Ye Xiwen possessed the fighting strength of semi-sage realm. The might displayed by his move was on the level of semi-sage realm.

Zhu Tian Zong's Golden Cicada had been ripped apart in a flash.

However, Zhu Tian Zong wasn't an ordinary character either. He wouldn't have been sent undercover to the True Martial University for so many years if he were an ordinary person.

“Great Heaven Catching Cover!” Zhu Tian Zong had learnt famous martial arts in the True Martial University. His entire body was enveloped in a massive cover of iron. This cover shielded his body; there were no chinks in his cover. In fact, it seemed as if he had practiced this technique to the peak level.

The same martial art could display different might in the hands of different people. And, the ‘Great Heaven Catching Cover’ had unleashed superb might when wielded by Zhu Tian Zong.

Some experts were able to fight a dozen experts of their level at once; even with their own strength suppressed. This entirely depended on the degree of one's understanding of martial arts. It

depended on whether one's understanding was profound or not.

Perhaps an ordinary expert of legendry's great complete realm wouldn't be able to budge Zhu Tian Zong's 'Great Heaven Catching Cover'.

However, he had bumped into Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen's innate talent might not be considered as top-notch. Yet, he was second to none in the younger generation... especially when it came to one's degree of understanding of martial arts and dao principles.

"Bang!" the golden dragon opened its strong claws, and grabbed Zhu Tian Zong's iron cover. Suddenly, it seemed as if the world had lost its color. A loud sound of the collision of gold and iron resounded. The dragon's claws smashed the iron cover into pieces. After that, the golden dragon rushed towards Zhu Tian Zong to grab him.

"Bang!" the dragon's claws struck Zhu Tian Zong. His body was sent flying upside-down by the huge force. Bits of his flesh and blood splattered in all directions.

Zhu Tian Zong's body got knocked against a pillar inside the main hall... and finally came to a halt.

Zhu Tian Zong had been nearly struck to death by Ye Xiwen's attack. There was a look of utter shock in his eyes. Ye Xiwen had become so terrifying that even a top individual who had especially been nurtured by the Cave Lord wasn't worthy of being his opponent. The divine power unleashed by his palm-attack was



enough to overwhelm the heaven.

Zhu Tian Zong's complexion turned pale. He had anticipated that he'd be able to run amuck in the young generation once he had stepped into the semi-sage realm and had attained the real body of the Barbarian God. However, he had never imagined that he'd come across a freak like Ye Xiwen.

“Ye Xiwen, you must know that you won't be able to get out of the Fire Cloud Cave if you kill me!” Zhu Tian Zong spoke coldly as he clenched his teeth. His vitality had begun to gradually restore itself. His face had turned bright-red. He was clearly using some type of healing technique to speed-up the healing process of his injuries. But, this healing technique was far inferior to the ‘phoenix regeneration technique’. Ye Xiwen's ‘phoenix regeneration technique’ healed very quickly — at the very least. In fact, it was so fast that its speed couldn't be tracked by an average person.

Ye Xiwen didn't seem to care about Zhu Tian Zong's unusual threat. So, he walked towards him step by step.

“Die!” Zhu Tian Zong roared loudly. His entire body transformed into a giant Golden Cicada and rushed towards Ye Xiwen to kill him. It was rumored that this huge Golden Cicada had once slaughtered a Devil God in the ancient times.

Ye Xiwen transformed into a golden streamer of light and rushed towards Zhu Tian Zong. A fight broke-out between the two.

“Bang!” their attacks were extremely terrifying and quick. The Golden Cicada and the golden dragon collided ferociously, and began to strangle each other to death. Their collisions unleashed a burst of endless divine beams. These beams spread-out and cracked the surrounding space into small pieces. The temple was made-up of some unknown yet hard stone. But, it couldn’t withstand the impact of such horrifying attacks, and collapsed into pieces.

The ‘Flaming Sun Real Water’ was a precious treasure of the Fire Cloud Cave. So, the sudden collapse of the ‘Flaming Sun Temple’ immediately attracted the attention of several powerhouses.

“Ye Xiwen, you can’t delay any further. The experts of the Fire Cloud Cave will rush-over any time now!” Ye Mo hastily reminded Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen nodded. He could feel several divine senses probe this place. He knew that several experts would arrive soon. So, he couldn’t drag this fight any longer — otherwise, he’d die for sure.

“Ha ha ha, Ye Xiwen, you’ll die today!” Zhu Tian Zong had understood what was going to happen. So, he had started to laugh out loud. His countenance also turned somewhat hideous. Ye Xiwen would be done for... as long as he could last until the arrival of the other experts.

Ye Xiwen sneered. Zhu Tian Zong’s plan was good. But, did he have the ability to compel Ye Xiwen into dragging this fight?

Ye Xiwen brandished his palm. This palm attack was invoked

with the roar of a dragon. A golden dragon appeared, and tore the space into small pieces. Ye Xiwen didn't plan to delay any further. So, he had integrated the entirety of his martial power into this one palm-attack. He had basically turned it into a peerless attack.

“Bang!” Zhu Tian Zong's Golden Cicada was defeated once again. Then, the palm attack went forward and fiercely crashed into Zhu Tian Zong's body.

“Puff!” Zhu Tian Zong spouted a mouthful of blood. His chest caved inwards. He had used his hands to resist this palm attack. However, his hands had been broken in the process.

Air started to leak out of his punctured chest as he suffocated to death.

Ye Xiwen didn't hesitate. He immediately collected Zhu Tian Zong's corpse. Then, he turned into a streamer of light and disappeared beyond the horizon.

# Chapter 392: Returns To The True Martial University!

---

Returns to the True Martial University!

The blue sky appeared clean for thousands of miles. There were no clouds, no wind. A figure was approaching swiftly from far away. He was anxiously rushing over from a distance. But, the speed of that figure made it was very difficult to see it with naked eyes.

His lustrous body emitted golden light. He was over 20 years old. He was clad in ragged clothes. Blood dripped from his body. He was clearly in a very difficult situation. A pair of golden wings was crazily flapping behind his body.

"Boy, you can't get away. I will dismember your body into thousand pieces just to vent my anger!" a loud rumbling sound came from behind. It sounded like a thunderclap.

This person was over 10 feet tall. He was an incomparably sturdy and old barbarian. He held a bone club in his hand. He was pursuing closely, and getting closer and closer by taking large strides. A terrifying power was wrapped around his burly body. One could clearly see that he was a terrifying expert of the great-sage realm.

Ye Xiwen cursed his misfortune. He had escaped after he had killed Zhu Tian Zong. But, he didn't expect to find a great-sage expert chasing after him just when he had come halfway to the

True Martial University. He would've long been caught if he weren't Ye Xiwen. Moreover, the 'devil wings' was the world's top-notch agility technique. Without it, Ye Xiwen would've been caught and slaughtered by now. However, even then, Ye Xiwen had occasionally sustained the old man's attacks.

An average person would've died if they had sustained such injuries. But, his 'phoenix regeneration technique' was operating frantically to repair the wounds. Otherwise, he would've died a long time ago.

The collapse of the 'Flaming Sun Temple' had caught this old barbarian's attention. He had become furious, and had rushed towards Ye Xiwen after finding out that the 'Flaming Sun Real Water' had been stolen. Ye Xiwen believed that a group of great-sage experts of the Fire Cloud Cave would've come looking for him if they weren't being hindered by the allied forces of the Hundred Barbarians Cave and the Devil Worship Cult. The old man's agility technique wasn't as profound as that of Ye Xiwen's. However, his martial power and cultivation were far more profound than Ye Xiwen's. He was constantly speeding up as he closely pursued Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen cursed. He would get caught soon if the things were to continue like this. At this moment, he faintly saw the True Martial University up ahead.

However, he was completely exhausted. He felt tired even though he was being supported by his 'gilded tyrant form'. His 'real elemental energy' had been consumed way back. So, he had consumed an incredible amount of 'Spirit Dans' in order to

maintain his current speed. The 'Spirit Dans' and the 'Primary Spirit Dans' were frantically burning inside the 'Heavenly Source Mirror' to supplement some energy to his body.

The automatic regeneration of 'real elemental energy' would've been of no help. After all, the 'devil wings' was an outstanding agility technique of the Devil King's. Only he had been capable of using the devil wings to travel back-and-forth across the world. He could travel thousands of miles in the blink of an eye.

That old barbarian became anxious when he saw the True Martial University getting closer and closer. He brandished his bone club. The bone club rose against the wind and went straight towards Ye Xiwen. It got bigger and bigger in size. Now, it appeared like a dragon-bone as it advanced towards Ye Xiwen to tear him apart.

Ye Xiwen accelerated. The devil wings started to flap behind him... non-stop. The intense howls of departed souls sounded from that bone club just when it was about to pound upon Ye Xiwen. The howls were the sounds of the people who had been killed by this bone club.

The space in its path got shattered. It gave birth to an extremely horrifying scene.

A loud shout originated from the True Martial University at that critical moment, "Who dares to be presumptuous in our True Martial University?"

The void was torn open, and a big hand swept down from inside the crack. And, it grabbed that massive bone club.

"Bang!" the terrifying collision swept out terrible energy storms. Layer-upon-layer of storm was swept out; like the waves of the sea. They shattered the space, and caused the chaos to leak-out from the other side.

Ye Xiwen suddenly felt a terrifying aftermath hitting his body. His bones got crushed. However, he didn't dare to stop. He flew swiftly, and broke into the territory of the True Martial University.

That old barbarian looked bitterly towards Ye Xiwen as he saw him enter the territory of the True Martial University. He couldn't do anything. He wouldn't dare to enter the territory. He would die miserably if he dared to enter this territory – in spite of the fact that he was an expert of great-sage realm.

He bitterly turned around, and left.

Ye Xiwen heaved a sigh of relief as he saw that old barbarian depart. He looked up and saw 'Ying Xin city' up ahead. The person who had saved him turned out to be the Old City Lord of 'Ying Xin City'. Ye Xiwen was grateful to the Old City Lord for saving his life. He was in a very critical situation prior to his entry into the True Martial University's territory. He relaxed only after he had entered the city.

"What have you done to make a great-sage expert pursue you for

ten thousands of miles from the Fire Cloud Cave?" the teasing voice of an old man came from the void. An old man clad in black clothes slowly walked towards Ye Xiwen; he had wrinkles on his face.

He appeared to be taking short steps, but his speed was very fast. He arrived in front of Ye Xiwen within a moment.

"Greetings, City Lord!" Ye Xiwen cupped his hands in obeisance and greeted. He grimaced in pain because of the wounds on his body.

"You still need to heal!" The Old City Lord said, "Why did he chase you here... all the way from the Fire Cloud Cave?"

Ye Xiwen smiled mischievously, and replied in somewhat embarrassed manner, "I stole their 'Flaming Sun Real Water!'"

Ye Xiwen felt that he had met with an elder of his own family. Such was the Old City Lord's impression on his psyche. In fact, Ye Xiwen felt as if he had bathed in the spring breeze. The True Martial University was very big. Several people found him unpleasing to the eye, and often tried to eradicate him. Only a few people treated him nicely.

Ye Xiwen thought that he should tell the truth. It would've been okay to conceal it if nobody had found out since they wouldn't have found any evidence that he was the one behind the missing 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. However, they had already found out about it. And, he had also been chased down. This matter couldn't



remain hidden for long. People would come to know about it; sooner or later. However, he didn't care much.

He wasn't worried about the higher authorities. The 'Flaming Sun Real Water' was undoubtedly extremely precious. But, only for the Southern Wasteland's forces. They could use the 'Flaming Sun Real Water' to cultivate the real body of the Barbarian God. In fact, they could use it to create a generation of disciples who could become the future pillars. No wonder it was extremely precious. Only the most outstanding geniuses, or the person with maximum contribution to their Sect, could obtain this reward. But, it could only be used as nourishment for practicing the 'tyrant body technique' for an outsider like Ye Xiwen. That's because only a few forces of the Southern Wasteland knew how to use the secret technique of 'Flaming Sun Real Water'. This hadn't been revealed to the outsiders.

Moreover, the higher authorities would never plunder the treasures of the disciples. After all, these disciples would have to be entirely depended on the True Martial University for their cultivation if they didn't come across such fortuitous encounters. And that... would be simply far insufficient for their progress. It could be said that the people in the higher authorities wouldn't have made it to the top if they hadn't come across such fortuitous encounters in their young age. Moreover, it would ruin the reputation of the True Martial University if the higher-ups were to start extorting the disciples.

Therefore, Ye Xiwen scrapped the idea of using this as a hidden trump.

"Ha ha ha ha!" the Old City Lord burst into laughter after he listened to Ye Xiwen's reply. He spoke in a carefree manner, "Good, well done! You've done a good job!"

The relation between the True Martial University and other forces wasn't very good. The Hundred Barbarians Cave, Fire Cloud Cave, Eagle Cave, and several other forces of the Southern Wasteland had consistently tried to invade the Southern region. One couldn't tell how many times they had attacked the True Martial University. They were considered as the arch rivals of the True Martial University.

"I must say that you're very courageous!" the Old City Lord looked at Ye Xiwen and said. He shook his head and continued to laugh.

Ye Xiwen's injuries had been repaired over the course of their conversation. He was nearly back to normal.

The Old City Lord's complexion suddenly turned solemn after Ye Xiwen told him about the Devil Worship Cult and the Hundred Barbarians Cave's joint attack against the Fire Cloud Cave. These colossus forces held incredible influence in the True Martial World. The consequences would be inconceivable if the Fire Cloud Cave had genuinely been attacked by the allied forces of the Devil Worship Cult and the Hundred Barbarians Cave. This would've been a trivial matter if the Hundred Barbarians Cave had attacked alone. However, they had persuaded the Devil Worship Cult for help. The Hundred Barbarians Cave must've offered great benefits to them in return. However, thanks to that... the Devil Worship Cult would seize this opportunity to expand its influence. This

wasn't good. In fact, it was very bad.

The Old City Lord didn't stay for long. He hurriedly left after he listened to Ye Xiwen's words.

Ye Xiwen didn't mind. He advanced towards the 'Merit Palace Hall' to submit the finished mission of Zhu Tian Zong's assassination. He had thoroughly completed this mission.

Countless disciples began to talk among themselves as soon as Ye Xiwen entered the 'Merit Palace Hall'.

"Ye Xiwen has arrived. Oh my god, this is going to be a startling clash!"

"Didn't you say that Ye Xiwen was afraid and wouldn't arrive? But, he's already here. Perhaps, the fight will break out shortly!"

Ye Xiwen's arrival had set-off an uproar.

"We can see a battle of life or death between two heaven's pride level experts. One doesn't get such an opportunity very often!"

"I don't think that Ye Xiwen will agree to participate in this mortal combat. The opponent possesses titan body. His body is incredibly strong!"

Ye Xiwen was somewhat baffled. What life or death battle?

However, he wasn't interested in pondering over this matter. First, he wanted to submit the completed mission.

Ye Xiwen went into the depths of 'Merit Palace Hall'. The Merit Elder had already obtained the news of his arrival, and was waiting for him. He smiled as he saw Ye Xiwen carrying a person's head. He said, "We weren't wrong about you!"

He examined Zhu Tian Zong's head, and was amazed to realize that Zhu Tian Zong had already reached the semi-sage realm at the time of his death. However, Ye Xiwen had still managed to kill him. A whole new level of respect emerged inside his heart for Ye Xiwen.

"Anyway, our 'Merit Palace Hall' owes you a big favor for this mission!" the Merit Elder spoke.

"Elder is being modest!" Ye Xiwen smiled and said.

"However, you seem to be in a lot of trouble now. You may not know this... but that titan guy is looking for you!" The Merit Elder looked at Ye Xiwen and said, "Our 'Merit Palace Hall' can step in to settle this dispute if you don't wish to come forward!"

# Chapter 393: Turns Out To Be The Army Of God!

---

"Our 'Merit Palace Hall' can step-in to settle this dispute if you don't want to come forward!" the Merit Elder looked at Ye Xiwen and said.

Ye Xiwen came to know from the Merit Elder that a storm had been set-off in the True Martial University during his absence. Someone in the younger generation had stood up and claimed that they had broken through to the semi-sage realm. It had caused a sensation inside the University.

That person was none other than the guy with the titan body. He was regarded as a top-notch heaven's pride level expert in the younger generation.

However, it didn't limit to this only. The Titan guy had issued a declaration of battle to Ye Xiwen right after he made the announcement that he had entered the semi-sage realm. Moreover, it wasn't an ordinary declaration of battle. It was for a mortal combat — an intense battle of life or death.

This declaration of battle caused a huge sensation. Everyone was in uproar. Such battle only took place between two mortal enemies. This was going to be a mortal combat, and would only end with the death of any one of the two contenders. It was clear that the guy with the titan body held deep hatred towards Ye Xiwen to have desired such a deadly confrontation.

Thanks to Ye Xiwen's previous battles, it was too obvious to everyone that he possessed a 'gilded body'. In fact, he was also known as the 'Golden War-God'.

Ye Xiwen and that 'Titan' guy were well-known for their incredibly strong bodies among this session's heaven's pride level experts. It was said that the experts with the titan's body possessed the bloodline of the titan race. That's why he had such an intrepid body. The titan race used to be a famous godly race at one point of time.

Ye Xiwen's title of 'Golden War-God' was fierce. And, it had spread far and wide. After all, he had repeatedly used his extremely strong body to kill his opponents.

Many people were thinking – who among these two individuals possessed a more intrepid body? It was already determined that the 'Titan' guy possessed Titan's blood. But, nobody knew anything about Ye Xiwen's physique. They didn't know whose bloodline Ye Xiwen possessed. And, they didn't know why it was so tough. It was needless to say that they were unaware that Ye Xiwen's physique wasn't derived from his bloodline; its toughness was derived from the practice of a technique called 'gilded tyrant form'.

Everyone was excited. They were looking forward to it. This was the first collision between two heaven's pride level experts of this session since they had been named. Undoubtedly, this was the most anticipated battle in the eyes of many people.

And most importantly — the 'Titan' guy had challenged Ye

Xiwen to a mortal combat. They would have no choice but to 'go all out' to kill each other in this battle of life or death. It was evident that one of these two experts would choose death over defeat. So, the fight was going to be intense; without a doubt.

Countless people were looking forward to this fight, and many of them were discussing about it. After all, the martial arts competition among the four forces was right around the corner. The general conduct should've been to keep these geniuses out of the harm's way since they were bound to become main contenders in the upcoming competition... Let alone, allowing them kill each other in a mortal combat.

Most people believed that the 'Titan' guy was extremely overbearing. Then, what was the need for such a battle?

Was it in order to obtain the title of strongest body?

"Is it the beginning of the conquest to become the strongest in the younger generation?"

'Does nobody in the higher authorities care about it?'

"Shouldn't someone stop this fight?"

Many people were discussing about this matter. Some were excited to see the battle between two heaven's pride level experts. Some didn't wish to see the fighting-strength of the True Martial University decline by losing a heaven's pride level expert.

This wasn't an ordinary fight. Victory and defeat wouldn't decide the result. A mortal combat ended very differently. No matter who would win or lose — the fight wouldn't stop until the 'loosing contender' had been killed. In other words, one individual — whether Ye Xiwen or the 'Titan' guy — was going to die. The death of an ordinary person was nothing. But, it would be a massive loss if one among these two experts would die since it would be tantamount to the death of a possible future great-sage expert.

Some people had opposed this matter. But, some people had also endorsed it. In fact, many people had even added fuel to the fire from the shadows.

Some people even hoped for Ye Xiwen and the 'Titan' guy to mutually eradicate each other.

There were several people who were somewhat worried. After all, these two experts could become the True Martial University's backbone in the future. So, they only wanted these two heaven's pride level experts to indulge in an ordinary match to decide a victor, and satisfy their curiosity with that much alone; they didn't wish to see a mortal battle.

Many senior experts from previous sessions were also excited to see the match between this session's new disciples.

"Doesn't the higher authority care about this matter? Would they blankly watch the death of a future great-sage expert?"



"No way; I've heard that some high-level experts are supporting this fight. The Chief of the Clear Sky Peak is going out of his way to support that 'Titan' guy. Otherwise, how could this fight have been approved in the first place?"

"Neither of those two experts can be taken lightly. That 'Titan' expert has become stronger after he entered the True Martial University. And, thanks to his special titan physique — he is capable of killing an ordinary expert of the semi-sage realm with just one slap!"

"Ye Xiwen can't be taken lightly either. He has completed many impossible missions in the last two years. He even penetrated deep into the lair of the Devil Worship Cult to assassinate his target, and managed to come back alive!"

"But that's useless now. Ye Xiwen hasn't stepped into the semi-sage realm as of yet... But, that 'Titan' guy has. And, he's impatiently waiting to kill Ye Xiwen. It seems that he harbors a great hatred for Ye Xiwen!"

"What kind of an enmity do these two have in reality?"

Every outsider had a different opinion.

The Merit Elder lightly glanced at Ye Xiwen. The 'Merit Palace Hall' wanted to settle this matter for Ye Xiwen because he had assassinated Zhu Tian Zong, and they owed him a big favor for that. So, they wanted to seize this opportunity to return the favor.

"There's no need for that. I can settle this matter of my own!" Ye Xiwen lightly replied. Since that 'Titan' guy wanted a fight — he would give him one.

He also wanted to know whether his 'gilded tyrant form' was stronger than the titan body or not.

The Merit Elder looked at Ye Xiwen, but didn't speak further. He had anticipated that Ye Xiwen's fighting-strength had only reached the legendry's great complete realm... or quite possibly the initial stage of the semi-sage realm. But, Ye Xiwen was far-inferior to that 'titan' expert since the latter had likely reached the peak of the initial stage of the semi-sage realm. There was a difference of heaven and earth between the two.

However, the Merit Elder felt that he had underestimated Ye Xiwen after he realized that Ye Xiwen had killed Zhu Tian Zong without even being a semi-sage expert himself. Ye Xiwen wasn't as simple as he had anticipated. He could faintly sense that Ye Xiwen's aura carried the principles of the semi-sage realm. This had left him in even more shocked.

The 'Merit Palace Hall' had initially anticipated that Ye Xiwen wouldn't be able to settle this matter on his own. So, they wanted to help him in getting rid of this problem. On one hand, they wanted to help him because they owed him a big favor. On the other hand, they wanted to establish a good relation with him since he might become a great-sage expert in the future.

He became somewhat depressed after he heard that Ye Xiwen could settle this dispute on his own.

However, Ye Xiwen's statement had made it seem that it would be a direct collision between two outstanding heaven's pride level experts of the younger generation – and, a battle to death.

The atmosphere was already quite heated, but it had suddenly erupted with Ye Xiwen's return. Many people had thought that Ye Xiwen might be scared, and that's why he had gone into hiding. However, these rumors vanished along with his return. Ye Xiwen wasn't gone because he was afraid. Rather, he was completing a secret mission. Nobody knew about this mission earlier. However, the Merit Palace Hall confirmed it later when they stood out for Ye Xiwen.

However, the focus was no longer on whether Ye Xiwen was afraid or not. Now, it had shifted to the startling collision which could take place anytime-now since Ye Xiwen had finally returned.

Ye Xiwen returned to the 'Hidden Star Peak'. The Second Brother and Third Sister were still undergoing their closed-door training. The 'Hidden Star Peak' had received incredible benefits by obtaining the complete version of the 'Hidden Star Scripture'.

The entire 'Hidden Star Peak' was extremely quiet. But, it would be a huge mistake to look down on the 'current Hidden Star Peak'.

The Merit Elder also told Ye Xiwen that several heavens' pride level experts had already left for the 'Chaotic Heavenly Foreign Territory' to temper their bodies. This 'Chaotic Heavenly Foreign Territory' was situated far away in the remote starry sky. There

was a lot of chaos there; just as its name suggested. Only the elites could go there. An average person couldn't enter the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region' – not even the experts of legendary realm could.

Several of the heaven's pride level experts had rushed to the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region'. They believed that they could advance by leaps and bounds within no time after they had tempered their bodies in the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region'. Ye Xiwen was no exception either.

However, this upsurge didn't stop after Ye Xiwen's return. Rather, it became more ardent.

A disciple of the Clear Sky Peak arrived to meet Ye Xiwen. His eyebrows were as sharp as swords, and his eye shone like the stars. He was floating in midair, and carried an aloof personality.

"The God will arrive to kill you half-a-month from now. Start making the arrangements for your funeral!" This disciple had already stepped into the semi-sage realm. He was also a new disciple of this session. But, Ye Xiwen and this man weren't the same. This disciple had already reached legendry's great complete realm when Ye Xiwen and the others had entered the True Martial University. He wasn't like the Titan guy or the other top-tier experts. The top-tier experts had chosen to struggle within the half-step legendry's great complete realm, and would then have a breakthrough to the semi-sage realm. However, this man had switched to the easy cultivation in the legendary realm, and had then stepped into the semi-sage realm.

That was why most people didn't pay much attention to him.

The other heaven's pride level experts were merely at half-step legendry's great complete realm, but they still got more attention and resources than him.

Ye Xiwen's eyes flashed as he spotted the emblem of the 'Army of God' at the top of this young man's head... That's right... this disciple had the emblem of the 'Army of God' on his body.

This meant that that expert with titan body was one of the Gods. Ye Xiwen had already killed three Gods out of five. Therefore, the Titan guy could be either the First God or the Second God.

Ye Xiwen hadn't heard any news about the 'Army of God' for a long period of time. That's why he had forgotten about them. Ye Xiwen felt strange. The First God and the Second God had already arrived inside the True Martial University. Why didn't this matter make any noise up till now?

It seemed like there were no commotions earlier because he was waiting until he had stepped into semi-sage realm. He revealed his identity only after he became a semi-sage expert because he could kill Ye Xiwen now.

"I didn't expect that you'd still be haunting me like a ghost!" Ye Xiwen coldly snorted and spoke.

## Chapter 394: Raises Hand To Suppress!

---

"Ye Xiwen, don't you dare act arrogantly before me. You'll be killed by the God this time. No one can save you!" the young man looked coldly at Ye Xiwen and said. He was looking down on Ye Xiwen. He would've killed Ye Xiwen right now if the Second God hadn't decided to carry-out the task personally. The experts under the sage level were like ants. This sentence might seem like a joke. But, there was some truth in this ages-old saying. Of course, this young man wasn't yet at the sage realm. However, he was at the semi-sage realm. This meant that he had touched the threshold of the sage-realm.

As far as he was concerned, there was no difference between ants and a legendary realm expert like Ye Xiwen. And, this ant had dared to talk-back to him. His complexion had suddenly turned ugly because of this.

"Someone like you isn't qualified enough to talk to me like this!" Ye Xiwen replied indifferently. His complexion turned cold. He wasn't taking this semi-sage expert seriously.

"Humph! I would've taken your head myself and sent you on your way to the afterlife if the God didn't wish to kill you with his own hands...!" The young man looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. "Don't think that the higher-ups can save your life. They've already agreed to the fight between you and the God. You can't avoid this fight now. Nor can you escape!"

Hatred flashed in the eyes of that young man. The Army of God was well-regarded on the ancient road. They were like the kings of

the world. However, it had declined because three of the gods had been slayed by Ye Xiwen. Several members of the Army of God had left afterwards. This had led to their collapse. The God had tempered his body, and had obtained the title of 'titan body'. However, that couldn't eliminate the fact that Ye Xiwen had killed three Gods, and brought about their gradual decline.

He felt that Ye Xiwen had earlier disappeared because he wanted to escape from the God's wrath.

"You members of the Army of God really wish to throw-away your lives!" Ye Xiwen sneered. "You're all just a bunch of idiots!"

"Do you wish to die right now?" The young man looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. He didn't restrain his 'killing intention' as he continued to stare at Ye Xiwen. He was dying to kill Ye Xiwen on the spot.

"Do you think you're a God or something? ...That you can decide who will die and who will not? Unfortunately, this world isn't under your control!" Ye Xiwen sneered and spoke.

"Do you think that you can kill me for him? That's really funny!" Ye Xiwen grinned and added. "He wouldn't have waited till now if he was confident that he could kill me!"

"The God is invincible. He has an outstanding personality. Killing you will be a piece of cake for him. He wouldn't have tolerated your arrogance for this long if not for the closed-door training that he had to undergo in order to fulfill our peak's requirements!" That young man simply disregarded Ye Xiwen's provocative words.

"Idiot!" Ye Xiwen didn't harbor a favorable opinion of people who blindly worshipped someone. People like this young man couldn't see the truth clearly because of such blind worship.

Ye Xiwen stood up. He didn't wish to argue with this man any further. He flew towards the sky.

"Where do you think you're going?" the young man shouted.

"Chaotic Heavenly Territory!" Ye Xiwen replied lightly.

"God has challenged you to a fight here. Didn't you hear that? Are you deaf or what?" the young man asked loudly.

"Your God is too full of himself!" Ye Xiwen sneered and spoke, "Doesn't he realize that the world doesn't revolve around him? He wants to fight with me? Tell him to come to the 'Chaotic Heavenly Territory'. I would gladly make his wish come true if he wants to die so badly!"

"I can see that you're afraid. You've been running since the time the God challenged you. You've just arrived, and now you're trying to escape again. You're a coward. And, an incompetent person!" that young man retorted sarcastically.

Ye Xiwen ignored his barking, and flew straight towards the sky.



"I will kill you if you bother me again!" Ye Xiwen declared with a cold expression on his face.

Ye Xiwen didn't mind fighting with that 'titan body' expert. But, he didn't feel like waiting for it to happen. So, he suddenly didn't seem interested in the fight. Anyway, that 'titan body' expert wouldn't let him go that easily. But, why was he willing to wait for so long to kill Ye Xiwen?

"Stop right there!" That young man couldn't help but launch an attack as he saw Ye Xiwen running away. His entire body got covered in bursts of fiery red light. They looked like a group of flames as they went straight towards Ye Xiwen.

The huge sound of explosion attracted the attention of many surrounding disciples. Ye Xiwen's return had already attracted the attention of many people since they wanted to see how Ye Xiwen would face that 'titan' guy's challenge. However, he was now engaged in a conflict with that young man.

Ye Xiwen didn't say anything. The 'Hanshan Seal' smashed down from above. It seemed as if a large mountain had transformed into a giant dragon as it swept down. It also carried traces of the 'earth-attribute principles'. They were seething incessantly, and looked exceedingly gorgeous.

"Bang!" a loud explosion resounded as the two parties ferociously collided into each other. That young man's red flames got crushed by Ye Xiwen's 'Hanshan Seal'. His red flames weren't a match for the 'HanShan Seal', and had been crushed into light particles. The young man frantically retreated upon seeing his attack being

defeated in this manner. And, he tried his utmost to get-out-of Ye Xiwen's 'Hanshan Seal' attack's range.

However, Ye Xiwen launched another attack, and stretched out his big golden hand to grab him. The big hand appeared just like a golden cloud. It blotted-out the sky and covered the earth, and ultimately pounded upon that young man.

The young man wanted to escape. However, Ye Xiwen's big golden hand didn't allow him to. It swept down like an inescapable net. It formed a golden cage as it landed on the earth. It suppressed him with immediate effect.

"No!" That young man screamed, "Fire Lotus Brilliant Sun Beheader!"

The young man stretched out his hand and shouted. A flaming lotus emitted incredibly terrifying rays of light towards Ye Xiwen's big golden hand; it seemed as if they could burn the entire world.

However, that turned out to be useless. Ye Xiwen casually stretched-out his big golden hand, and it crushed that flaming lotus. That flaming lotus which could burn the world didn't turn out to be a match for Ye Xiwen's attack.

Ye Xiwen's big golden hand rolled down... as if to suppress a rebellion.

That flaming Lotus had been crushed in a flash. Ye Xiwen

slapped that young man. He went flying into the sky like a shooting star, and crashed into a mountain. The bones in his body got shattered as a result of the impact, and blood splattered.

That young man of semi-sage realm had been defeated quite quickly. In fact, he didn't have the power to fight-back. His offensive had been crushed by Ye Xiwen in an instant. Ye Xiwen hadn't even made any major movements. He had merely raised his hand to suppress him.

This scene had stunned the onlookers. They had been attracted by the battle between Ye Xiwen and that young man. However, they hadn't anticipated that Ye Xiwen would effortlessly suppress that young man by merely raising his hand.

"How is this possible? That young man is a semi-sage expert. But, he couldn't even take Ye Xiwen's one move, and was sent flying...? Just how terrifying is this Ye Xiwen?" Many people were left in shock as they saw this scene. They simply couldn't believe what they had just witnessed.

"Now I understand why that 'titan guy' waited for his cultivation to reach the semi-sage realm before he provoked Ye Xiwen. He might've become Ye Xiwen's food if he hadn't cultivated till the semi-sage realm!"

"This battle shouldn't have been so one-sided even if Ye Xiwen were at semi-sage realm. That young man is a semi-sage expert. But, he still failed to be Ye Xiwen's opponent. These heaven's pride level experts are extremely frightening!"

"Ye Xiwen's naming as a heaven's pride level expert didn't happen by fluke. Each of these heaven's pride level experts has their own trump cards. I had earlier anticipated that Ye Xiwen would get screwed. However, it seems that I was wrong. Ye Xiwen turned out to be so powerful that he casually defeated a semi-sage expert. I'm afraid this Ye Xiwen may turn out to be a headache for that 'titan body' expert!"

"It seems like the battle between them won't turn out to be boring after all. It will evolve into a fierce struggle between two evenly matched opponents!"

Ye Xiwen calmly arrived in front of that young man... who had been nailed into the mountain peak. Then, he said, "Three days; I'll wait for him for three days. I'll leave after that. I'll wipe out your entire Army of God if anyone of you comes to bother me thereafter!"

Ye Xiwen wasn't afraid of fighting with that 'titan' guy. However, he was very annoyed with these flunkies of the Army of God.

The news about this battle spread-out within no time. Many disciples who had been eagerly waiting to watch the fight between Ye Xiwen and the Titan guy were left shell-shocked. Most people hadn't been optimistic about Ye Xiwen's chances. They figured that he'd die this time because Ye Xiwen hadn't stepped into the semi-sage realm... unlike his opponent. There was a difference of heaven and earth between a semi-sage expert and a non-semi sage expert. In fact, most people had figured that Ye Xiwen might not

be able to fight-back when faced with a powerful expert of the semi-sage realm.

Everyone was waiting for the members of 'Hidden Star Peak' to step into stop this fight. This was supposed to be mortal combat. However, both the experts were like precious treasures for their respective inheritances. There wouldn't have been any problem if this match was only about 'learning by exchanging pointers'. But, they were expected to come forward to stop the battle if their disciples' lives were in danger. Moreover, there was a difference of one whole step between Ye Xiwen and the 'Titan' guy's respective levels. Therefore, Ye Xiwen wouldn't lose face even if he were to back down or lose. After all, he wouldn't be losing to an expert of the same realm.

Moreover, a short term failure was simply nothing. After all, they would grow stronger in the future... possibly ten thousand times or even more. This wasn't the time for these young experts to stir-up troubles, or put their lives on the line. So, a short-term failure had no consequence in anyone's opinion.

Moreover, there would be many competitions on this road to invincibility. That would help them in understanding oneself clearly. It shouldn't be the strength — but the heart — that should be invincible. Only those experts who possessed invincible hearts would be able to walk on this road till the very end. ...no one could dare say that they were above everyone else. After all, there would always be someone stronger. But, possessing an invincible heart would give one the power to surpass others.

Ye Xiwen might not be a match for that 'titan' guy right now.

Even so, nobody would belittle him for that. After all, Ye Xiwen was an outstanding talent; irrespective of the level of his current strength. Most people didn't say it out loud. But, everyone had sharp eyes, and they had noticed this much for sure.

# Chapter 395: Titan Body Arrives!

---

Ye Xiwen's strength had been ranked among the strengths of the heaven's pride level experts. However, Semi-Sage realm was just the starting point for these heaven's pride level experts; nothing more. Afterwards, there was sage realm and great-sage realm. Therefore, this was just a beginning. It was difficult to determine the true victor in a battle among heaven's pride level experts... unless it was a battle of life or death.

However, Ye Xiwen had displayed terrifying strength just now. He had suppressed a semi-sage expert by merely raising his hand. This terrifying strength had made everyone speechless. Ye Xiwen had once again stunned everyone.

Perhaps, the upcoming battle would genuinely turn out to be a fierce battle between two evenly matched opponents.

Three days. Ye Xiwen had given just three days of time. He would leave if the 'Titan' guy didn't show-up within three days.

This statement had once again left everyone in shock. That 'Titan' guy had been trying to rally as much support of the people as he could in order to kill Ye Xiwen by claiming that Ye Xiwen was an evenly matched opponent. In contrast, Ye Xiwen hadn't even spared him a glance. He had merely said that he'd wait for three days; at-most. Then, he'd leave. And, he would leave for the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region'.

He was clearly looking down on the 'Titan body'. This had left

several people in uproar. People didn't find it strange that Ye Xiwen was planning to go to the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region'. After all, he wasn't the only heaven's pride level expert who wished to go to the 'Chaotic Heavenly Region'. In fact, it was said that the 'Titan' guy also wanted to go to the 'Chaotic Heavenly World'. However, he couldn't go because he had to stay here and wait for Ye Xiwen's arrival.

However, Ye Xiwen didn't care about his fight with the 'Titan' guy. He was very busy. And, if his opponent wasn't going to come out soon... then he might as well get the hell out of his way.

Most people had initially thought that the 'Titan' guy was very arrogant. They figured that he'd kill Ye Xiwen irrespective of whether he'd accept the challenge or not. He was extremely overbearing. However, Ye Xiwen turned out to be far-more insolent. He didn't care about who was challenging him. If they wanted to confront him... then they must come sooner. Otherwise, they should get the hell away from him.

Everyone waited for the 'Titan' guy's reaction. Meanwhile, they slowly came to know about the conflict between him and Ye Xiwen. They found out that the 'Titan' body guy was the Second God of the Army of God. It used to be a huge group, and had ruled the ancient road. However, it was brought to its knees when three of the gods were killed by Ye Xiwen. This led to the collapse of the Army of God, and they hadn't been able to restore their prestige ever since. In addition, the First God had disappeared mysteriously. So, all the responsibilities had fallen onto the shoulders of the only remaining Second God. It was difficult for the Second God to support the Army of God by himself. Hence, the reputation of this outstanding organization had declined within no



time. They had gone low-key for a certain period of time.

The grudge between Ye Xiwen and the Second God was as high as the sky and as deep as the ocean. It was no wonder that the Second God had started to look for Ye Xiwen after he had stepped into the semi-sage realm. Anyone would've gone crazy with anger by now if they were in his place.

Ye Xiwen also came to know a lot from the rumors. He realized that the 'Titan' guy was actually the Second God. No wonder there had been no news about the Army of God in these two years. Ye Xiwen had already killed the Third, Fourth, and the Fifth God. The First God had disappeared mysteriously. Such a massive 'Army of God' had become entirely dependent on the Second God because of Ye Xiwen. Not just that, Ye Xiwen had nearly smashed and torn the Army of God to pieces; this had scattered their forces. This had left the Second God in deep trouble since he had to consolidate the forces. Therefore, he hadn't gotten a chance to come looking for Ye Xiwen back then. As a matter of fact, he had recently stepped into the semi-sage realm, and had finally managed to sort out the internal matters of the Army of God. So, he could freely deal with Ye Xiwen now.

Ye Xiwen was also determined to settle this matter of the Second God. There was no trace of the First God out of the five Gods of the Army of God. And the Third, Fourth, and the Fifth God had already died in his hands. So, he would only have to be careful of the First God — who was still missing — after he had killed the Second God. In fact, he could seize the opportunity to crush the entire Army of God once he had killed the Second God. After that, Ye Xiwen wouldn't have to be worried about anything even if the remaining First God were to appear later on.

This was a rare opportunity. The opposite party was looking to seize this opportunity to kill him. Why shouldn't he do the same?

Root out the source of trouble to avoid recurring future troubles.

Three days passed in an instant. Countless lofty mountains of the True Martial University pierced through the sky. The loud roars of beasts could be heard echoing from the mountain forests. It appeared like a wonderland in the human world.

'Hidden Star Peak' was bustling with countless disciples. They had gathered to spectate. There were experts of legendary realm, truth realm, semi-sage realm, and sage realm as well. In fact, several experts of the great-sage realm had been alerted about this. They had also arrived to watch.

Ye Xiwen waited on the 'Hidden Star Peak' in silence. He was waiting for the Second God to arrive.

Suddenly, a loud shout rang through the vast sky. It pierced through the clouds in the sky. The space rippled like the water's surface. A light-green figure ripped open the sky, and rushed towards the 'Hidden Star Peak'. He had a robust physique. He was 10 feet tall, and looked extremely powerful. His facial features were as sharp as a knife. He had bright and piercing eyes. His eyebrows slanted to his temples. He looked extremely valiant.

The space distorted and collapsed wherever that figure went. His incomparably dreadful form then swept-out from the spatial

cracks.

"The 'Titan' guy has arrived!" some people with sharp eyes had recognized this figure.

His overwhelming and strong aura had shaken the heaven and earth.

"It's indeed the 'Titan' guy. Just look at his body. No wonder they call him 'Titan Body'. He's got such a majestic stature. An ordinary person's physique wouldn't even come close. He possesses the bloodline of the titan race. It's true. The titans themselves were ancient gods. That's why his subordinates are known as the Army of God!"

"Such terrifying imposing aura can suppress a truth level expert to death!"

"He has an invincible body; one derived from an immemorial race. I'm not very optimistic about Ye Xiwen!"

"I still think that Ye Xiwen has hope. I guess you haven't seen him fight before – he unleashes an overwhelming Golden Ocean. He appears like a golden god when he casts out that 'Golden Ocean' move. It almost appears as if he's god who has descended to rule the world. His body isn't inferior to that of the 'Titan Body'. I've yet to hear of an expert who could challenge Ye Xiwen's physique!"

"This will absolutely turn out to be a fierce battle between two

evenly matched giants!"

"Ye Xiwen, come out to die!" the voice of the Second God exploded after he arrived in front of the 'Hidden Star Peak'.

The sonic booms exploded in all directions. It seemed like a milky-way of huge sound waves had swept across. It had caused the massive trees in the surrounding area to collapse.

"Humph! You're an arrogant young man. Come, I'll teach you the profoundness of this world!" a cold sound transmitted from the 'Hidden Star Peak'. It was followed by a startling 'sword energy'. The 'sword energy' rushed towards the sky in a flash. It streaked across the vast sky and shattered the space. Even the chaos started to leak-out from cracked space.

"This is a matter of the younger generation. We mustn't interfere!" a discontented sound echoed from the depths of the void. A massive hand swept down from the sky and grabbed that startling 'sword energy'.

"Bang!" it seemed as if the entire world had collapsed and broken into small pieces. An incomparably horrifying light burst out in a flash. The Yin and Yang elements of chaos leaked out and spread around. The terrifying aura swept out in the surroundings.

"Wei Guang Yuan, you old fart, you dare to go along with his unreasonable and reckless actions!" an angry voice sounded from the 'Hidden Star Peak'. Bai Jian Song came flying from that direction. His eyes were open wide. He seemed to be glaring

angrily.

Bai Jian Song had come out of his closed-door training because of Ye Xiwen's matter. He had recently stepped into the great-sage realm. So, he didn't have too much control on his own power. His great-sage aura was leaking out. And, it was forming a terrifying cyclone around him. He didn't very different from a Devil God.

However, the place in the depths of the void was still tranquil. Nothing happened from that direction.

"What? Clear Sky Peak's Wei Guang Yuan is personally supporting the Titan guy. No wonder he has dared to openly challenge Ye Xiwen to a death-fight!" an expert uttered in surprise. Wei Guang Yuan held a very high position in the Clear Sky Peak. He was the chief of the elders. He had personally show-up for this event. That clearly showed that the Clear Sky Peak was supporting the Second God in his mission to kill Ye Xiwen.

Nobody would've bothered if this matter concerned ordinary disciples. After all, the True Martial University had a massive pool of disciples. A large number of these disciples died every day. Sometimes, they died in the hands of the experts of other forces; or got killed by demon beasts and so on... Casualties to such disciples weren't unusual. However, Ye Xiwen and the 'Titan' guy were ranked among the heaven's pride level experts of this generation. Only a few people could be considered as treasures in a particular generation. They were extremely precious. Only these people could become the pillars of the True Martial University in the future.

The death of any such expert would set-off a huge unrest.

Moreover, both the experts were looking to kill each other. This matter was bound to attract the attentions of countless people. In fact, it could even lead to an overall conflict between their inheritances. Every heaven's level disciple was like a future pillar for any inheritance. Death of any such expert could injure their strength very greatly.

The 'Hidden Star Peak' had very few people. However, that didn't mean that one could crush them that easily. 'Clear Sky Peak' was ranked among the 'Top 10' inheritances. Their strength was profound; simply incredible.

There was a possibility of a full-scale conflict between the two inheritances.

There would've been no issues if this was a conflict between two individuals alone. However, Wei Guang Yuan had arrived here. This revealed the intention of the Clear Sky Peak very clearly. They stood strong in the Second God's support. They were clearly biased, and in favor of the Second God.

Bai Jian Song had immediately understood the Clear Sky Peak's intentions. That had made him furious. The 'Titan' guy himself was extremely overbearing. And now, the Clear Sky Peak also stood in his support. He couldn't help being furious at this.

# Chapter 396: Hand To Hand Combat!

---

The confrontation between these two individuals had transformed into a confrontation between two forces. Moreover, these two forces belonged to the ranks of the 'Top 100' Inheritances. And, the confrontation between these two inheritances would be a startling event.

Bai Jian Song's eyes were ice-cold. His recently-attained fearful strength of the great-sage realm was boiling. His 'real elemental energy' was extremely terrifying. He could shoot down the stars and grab the moonlight by merely lifting his hand.

Several people exclaimed in admiration. Bai Jian Song used to be at half-step great sage realm. But, he had finally stepped into the great-sage realm after two years of closed-door training. He was an outstanding talent of his generation. So, many people knew about him. However, he had been stuck at the half-step great sage realm for decades. But now, he had finally crossed this step, and had opened boundless future prospects for himself by becoming a high-level expert of the True Martial University.

Bai Jian Song had sword cultivation. He was a sword expert with tyrannical strength. In fact, he was far more tyrannical than the martial experts of his realm.

"Humph!" Bai Jian Song sneered and brandished his sword; this caused an explosion. The startling 'sword energy' streaked across the vast sky for dozens of miles. It rushed towards the Second God to rip him apart.

"Bai Jian Song, you're too presumptuous!" the expert who had been waiting at a distant place couldn't help but roar out at this time. Then, his figure finally appeared. The sword attack carried such a terrifying power that it couldn't be stopped from afar. So, this expert had to appear in person to stop it.

A slightly thin figure appeared in the sky. His 'real elemental energy' surged-up in the void and began to boil. A big hand grabbed the 'sword energy' and stopped it from hitting the Second God.

"Bai Jian Song, you're repeatedly attacking a disciple of our Clear Sky Peak. Are you planning to start a war between the two peaks?" Wei Guang Yuan shouted. He had grabbed that 'sword energy'. However, his white hair was still fluttering under the impact of the formidable energy.

Bai Jian Song sneered and spoke, "This disciple of your Clear Sky Peak is going too far. You're the one who agreed to this bullsh\*t 'mortal combat'. You're such a moron. If this will lead to war — then it's better to start the war. Our 'Hidden Star Peak' has very few people. But, it's not easy to bully us!"

Bai Jian Song and Wei Guang Yuan clashed as he finished speaking. They forced their way up into the blue sky while they remained engaged in a fight with each other. They tore open the void and went inside. Their battle was extremely terrifying. After all, two great-sage experts were engaged in a hand-to-hand combat. It could destroy the nearby peaks.

The sky was shattered and broken into small pieces. Endless



amount of chaos rolled-down from the debris. Several sage realm experts abandoned the Second God's side and rushed into the void to keep up with Bai Jian Song and Wei Guang Yuan. Even the sage realm experts rarely got to witness a fight between two great-sage experts.

Wei Guang Yuan was a peak-level expert of the great-sage realm. He had been famous for over a thousand years. Bai Jian Song was a matured person as well. He too had lived for hundreds of years. These two experts didn't belong to the same generation, but their power could easily overwhelm their opponent. They possessed outstanding power and prestige in their respective generations. Not to mention that the pure 'sword cultivation' of these two was incredible and contained formidable attack-power. It was indeed a wonderful duel that wasn't just exceptional... but rarely seen.

The clash between two junior disciples of the same sect had given rise to this heaven-shaking battle.

"Humph! Ye Xiwen, come out to die. Nobody will disturb us now. Let's fight!" the Second God sneered. His bronze-colored face exposed a somewhat evil grin. A sonic boom dissipated in all directions, and left the entire 'Hidden Star Peak' to tremble violently.

Many experts in the surroundings were excited by this. Finally, this day had arrived. They had waited for three days. This was the first collision between two heaven's pride level experts of the younger generation. The expedition to rule this generation was going to begin from this point.

The Second God's cold fighting power spread in the void. His tall figure began to exude cyan-colored energy, which started to surge up. He appeared like the reincarnation of an ancient Titan. The cyan-colored 'real elemental energy' wrapped around his body like armor. He held a half-broken lance in his hand. It could be seen that this half-broken lance must've been patched-up by an outstanding expert. However, it didn't look like the original one. He had inherited this ancient lance from his ancestors. It was said that this lance had been used as a weapon by a real Titan once upon a time. The Second God had inherited it from the ancestors of the Army of God countless years ago. The lance he had inherited was broken. Later, he had asked the best 'Godsmith' to craft the rear part of the lance and patch it. It was still far short of its original power. However, it was still very difficult to endure.

The space unceasingly collapsed and restored wherever that lance went. This continuous destruction and construction of the space left everyone to tremble with fear.

The Second God was without any protection besides that. His body itself was his best defense!

Many people looked at the tyrannical figure of the Second God from behind, and started to whisper amongst themselves. The Second God was extremely tyrannical. It was evident from his aura that an ordinary expert of the semi-sage realm wouldn't be able to block his lance, and would be stabbed to death by the lance in one shot. In fact, no one knew how strong he really was. Nobody knew whether the other expert could resist this lance or not. After all, none of the other heaven's pride level experts had fought with him yet. So, people could also only speculate the extent of his strength. And now, they could obtain clues from this battle between him and

Ye Xiwen.

He enjoyed an outstanding reputation. However, Ye Xiwen's reputation was even more incredible. He had killed the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall on his very first day after he had entered the True Martial University. Millions of disciples had arrived in this session, but only Ye Xiwen could dare to deal with such a matter.

The Second God's 'killing intention' turned ice-cold. The pain of losing his brothers had made him extremely ferocious. Even his 'killing intention' had turned exceptionally strong. Nobody dared to approach him since his intense 'killing intention' would tear them apart. In fact, his 'killing intention' wouldn't just kill the body; it might even kill the soul.

Several experts of the younger generation felt greatly disappointed with themselves since they had been secretly comparing themselves with the Second God. They had thought that these heaven's pride level experts were just extraordinary; nothing more. And, it was just their own bad luck that they couldn't become one. However, they had come to realize that they would've never been chosen as heaven's pride level expert even if they had a better luck. They had now witnessed the incomparable tyranny of the Second God, and they had realized that it was impossible to reach that level.

The heaven's pride level experts couldn't be taken lightly. Ye Xiwen had also passed through many intense battles like any other heaven's pride level expert. And, he had won them all in order to be ranked as a heaven's pride level expert. So, people had no choice

but to acknowledge him.

"Bang!" the golden divinities condensed into a pillar of energy and pierced through the void. It cut across the sky and surged-up violently. It scattered in all directions like a golden ocean. It seemed as if a golden country had been formed – the very country of gods.

A figure appeared in front of everyone. It was surfing on the golden waves. He had bright and piercing eyes, and the golden energy was surging around him. It was none other than Ye Xiwen.

The Second God had moved at a surprisingly fast speed. But, Ye Xiwen's speed wasn't too slow in comparison. He rushed forward and arrived in front of the Second God.

"Ye Xiwen, I didn't think that you'd dare to appear before me!" The Second God's eyes turned bloodshot as soon as he saw Ye Xiwen. He shouted as he continued to stare at Ye Xiwen.

"Come to die! I must take the revenge for the Third, Fourth, and the Fifth brother!" the Second God spoke in a low voice. It seemed as if the faces and voices of the deceased Third, Fourth, and Fifth God had appeared before his eyes. It aroused even more hatred for Ye Xiwen in his heart.

"You're the same as those idiots. You're as eager to throw away your life!" Ye Xiwen replied. His eyes looked straight at the Second God. They seemed motionlessly glued to him.

The Second God became even more furious after he heard this. He couldn't tolerate to hear Ye Xiwen talk bad about his dead brothers. This was a huge insult to their name. It was simply unforgivable.

The silence suddenly perished as the Second God moved into action. Two greenish-black lights were emitted from his ice-cold pupil and rushed straight into the sky. His vision was firmly locked on Ye Xiwen. He certainly didn't wish to allow Ye Xiwen to escape at any cost. Then, he trod forward. The surrounding space bounced, and it was reduced to fragments. The Second God swept out a cyan-colored sea of energy. It blotted-out the sky and covered the earth as it swept towards Ye Xiwen to engulf him.

The world itself lost its color in the wake of such a terrifying attack. Most onlookers immediately retreated. They didn't dare to come close. They were afraid that the force of the aftermath would kill them.

Ye Xiwen refused to admit being the weaker one. So, he immediately rushed forward. An endless sea of golden divinities was unleashed in the forms of giant waves, and swept out towards the Second God.

"Boom!" the Cyan sea of energy and the Golden sea of divinities knocked against each other in the void. It appeared as if two gigantic oceans had collided in the sky. The surging waves of dreadful power were unleashed unto the surroundings after the collision.

The two experts stepped upon those waves of energy, and arrived

in front of each other. They could almost see each other's facial expressions.

"Die!" the Second God roared. The entire space collapsed around his body, and broke into small pieces. He discharged all his power, and it reached the pinnacle. He looked like the reincarnation of an ancient Titan. His tyranny had reached the pinnacle. It was as if he was the ruler of this country... as if the entire world belonged to him.

His lance swept down from the sky at a lightning speed like a long black snake. It shattered the space on the way as it arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

However, Ye Xiwen's extremely terrifying 'sword intention' soared into the sky, and formed an incomparably huge 'sword intention'. He gave a loud shout, and the golden divinities throughout his body began to surge. Then, the 'sword intention' fell downwards.

"Bang!" the lance and the 'sword intention' ferociously collided in the void. A big section of the sky collapsed and turned into fine powder. The pitch-dark surface of the universe was revealed in the aftermath of this collision. The chaotic energy had started to boil on the other side. In fact, some of it leaked out and split open the nearby space.

The first collision between them had turned out to be very stunning. The two of them retreated several steps. Both individuals seemed somewhat amazed by each other's power. Ye Xiwen and the Second God were in good condition. Their bodies

were their biggest defense. They had never come across any expert with a physique that could rival theirs'. Yet, they didn't feel surprised... nor were sympathetic for each other. On the contrary, a fiercer 'killing intention' as well as 'fighting intention' scattered in all directions.

# Chapter 397: What Is Ye Xiwen's Physique?

---

There was no scope of sympathy here. Rather, it was inappropriate in this situation since these two opponents only had the desire to kill.

"Your gilded body is worthless. I'll kill you like a dog!" the Second God squinted as he spoke coldly. His eyes shone and emitted a sharp beam. This beam almost condensed into a solid beam of light. It could frighten a person's soul. "It's ridiculous to compare your gilded body with my titan body!"

The speed of the lance didn't decrease. It transformed into a black snake, and set-off an incomparably powerful and terrifying aura. It pierced the void, and the sky got shattered into pieces as it rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

"Clang!" Ye Xiwen's 'sword intention' condensed into a long sword in his hand.

"Buried Earth Sword!"

The sharp sword beam sent out an incomparably frightening force. A long dragon was unleashed, and it moved forward to face the incoming attack.

"Bang!" horrifying waves of energy were swept-out from both sides. The energy waves swept across crazily in the surroundings, and made cracks in the void.



The two experts clashed in midair. They were trying their best to not affect the True Martial University... as much as possible. Otherwise, the one to survive the battle would have to face the criticism of the high-level experts.

"Your titan body is also worthless. The so-called 'Titan God Race' has nothing more than an undeserved reputation!" Ye Xiwen replied coldly. "You started to clamor about challenging me only after you broke through to the semi-sage realm. That clearly shows that your cowardice, and also your lack of confidence in your titan body. Your titan body is nothing but a joke. I would've crushed you like an ant if we were in same realm!"

Ye Xiwen had spoken this very calmly; as if this matter wasn't even related to him. The crowd heard this, and was sent in an uproar. He had dared to speak such insulting words in front of the 'Titan' guy. No other heaven's pride level expert would've dared to speak such words. In fact, no one would've believed these words even if a heaven's pride level expert had dared to say such boasting words about being superior to the 'Titan Body'. However, some people had believed in Ye Xiwen's words. They didn't know whether any of the other heaven's pride level experts had reached the semi-sage realm or not. But, they knew that Ye Xiwen hadn't. In fact, Ye Xiwen hadn't even reached the half-step legendary's great complete realm yet. To say that 'I could've crushed you like ant if we were in same realm'... perhaps wasn't just boasting.

Ye Xiwen was merely at half-step legendary ninth stage. However, he could easily suppress an ordinary expert of the semi-sage realm. He would become far more dreadful once he had advanced to the semi-sage realm.

Saying that he would kill him like an ant clearly showed his confidence and boldness. This was the reason why the other heaven's pride level experts hadn't dared to look down on Ye Xiwen even though he was at a lower level compared to them. In fact, some people even considered him as the strongest heaven's pride level expert. This was because he was still at a lower level. No one among his peers would be able to suppress him once his level would match theirs.

Of course, one must also consider the fact that Ye Xiwen was making a constant progress. However, the others were also making progress, and it wouldn't be easy to surpass them.

"Ha ha ha ha ha!" the Second God looked upwards and laughed out loud. The 'killing intention' in his eyes had turned even more intense. He was always aware that Ye Xiwen was a threat. So, he had decided to wait and gain confidence by having a breakthrough to the semi-sage realm before he set out to kill Ye Xiwen. That was because he knew that Ye Xiwen's cultivation would be lower than his own by several levels once he had made the breakthrough to the semi-sage realm. So, it would be impossible for Ye Xiwen to catch up with him in such a short time. Perhaps, Ye Xiwen could jump several levels within the legendary realm, but he wouldn't stand a chance against him once he had stepped into the semi-sage realm. How could the 'sage' word be taken lightly? 'Jumping level' didn't mean much at a later phase because the key point was to condense principles. Otherwise, the fighting strength would remain stuck. However, he hadn't anticipated that he had made a massive miscalculation. He was sure that his plan was foolproof... and figured that he was absolutely safe. However, he found out that he had made a blunder after the fight started. Ye Xiwen was far more powerful than he had imagined.

The 'killing intention' frantically surged-up inside his heart because Ye Xiwen always turned out to be contrary to his expectations. Therefore, he desperately wanted to strangle Ye Xiwen in the cradle this time.

Several people exclaimed in amazement. The combat between these two individuals had indeed turned out to be a fierce struggle between two evenly matched giants. Neither of the two was ordinary.

The Second God emitted cyan-colored rays of light from his body. These rays of light began to boil. The sound of his loud shout proliferated far-far away in all direction, and shattered the heaven and earth. It was an exceptionally terrifying scene.

The Second God had taken the initiative and attacked. He advanced with large strides. It seemed as if his steps were shattering the void to pieces. He looked unusually brilliant as his cyan-colored figure dashed-about. His massive 'imposing aura' seemed like a huge mountain as it advanced towards Ye Xiwen to kill him.

Ye Xiwen's countenance turned serious. He had said that he could kill that 'Titan' guy like an ant if they were in the same realm. However, he mustn't spare any effort since they weren't in same realm at present. Moreover, he didn't have much of an advantage of having a superior physique like always since the 'Titan' guy also had an invincible body; ...and an outstanding one at that. One... which had been famous since ancient times!

He shouted loudly. The golden divinities surged up within his body. Then, the divinities swept-out in the sky, and wrapped around Ye Xiwen's entire body. Ye Xiwen brandished his long sword with a 'clang'. He issued a sword beam. And, it seemed as if the universe itself would collapse at any moment. The energy swept across in all directions... as if to sweep away the entire world. The sword attack took the shape of a sword dragon, and rushed forward.

"Bang!" the sound of the explosion resembled the collapse of a galaxy. The space got distorted; it then cracked-open with a loud explosion. Then, the chaos leaked-out from the crack.

This was purely a collision of bodies... and not skills. This frightened the spectators even further. Their strong bodies were the biggest assets these two individual had in their arsenal. They were colliding ferociously, and these clashes were setting-off frightening shock waves of unimaginable proportions. These shock waves could crush anything that stood in their path. They were wreaking havoc by launching such vast attacks... they hadn't even used any exquisite martial arts yet. In fact, each of their attacks was ten times more powerful as any 'martial art based' attack. In other words, they could merely use their physical abilities to crush ten martial art attacks at once.

A clash with these two would be disastrous for the experts of the same realm. That was because their attacks wouldn't work on those two. An ordinary attack couldn't even sway them. So, inflicting injuries to them would be simply out of the question.

Ye Xiwen's body had left many people in shock. Ye Xiwen was

well-known as 'Golden War-God'. However, nobody knew what kind of physique he possessed in reality. It seemed that there was no information about such a physique even among the well-known tough physiques. The 'titan body' had an outstanding reputation since ancient times. However, for some reason... Ye Xiwen's body hadn't fallen into a disadvantageous position while competing with the 'titan body'. This had stunned countless people.

Ye Xiwen faintly felt that his arms had turned somewhat numb. This was the first time he had come across such a tough opponent. He remembered that the legends that had said that the Titan God enjoyed great reputation for possessing an incredibly strong body, and strength-enough to lift a mountain without any problem.

The Second God was also amazed by Ye Xiwen. He hadn't anticipated that Ye Xiwen would be able to resist his strongest blow. This was collision of bodies, but the most important point to note was that Ye Xiwen also possessed extremely huge strength.

The Second God had the 'titan' body. His body was naturally going to be strong. But, what kind of a body did Ye Xiwen have? Could it be that he possessed the bloodline of some ancient Devil God? He quickly searched through the names of several ancient Devil Gods in his mind. However, he didn't find any similarity between any one of them and Ye Xiwen.

However, he didn't have much time to think due to the criticality of this juncture. He sneered and said, "I don't know what kind of physique you possess. However, it was the biggest mistake of your life to provoke me!"

Ye Xiwen coldly looked at the Second God. He smiled and replied, "I guess that you only find your own physique to be worthy of a mention. But, your 'Titan Body' is crap in my eyes. Even if the Titan God were to stand before me — I would tear him apart with my hands!"

Ye Xiwen's hair was flying in the air. His eyes were as sharp as knives. His 'fighting intention' was boiling. He wasn't merely 'talking big'. A practitioner could easily tear-apart the gods and devils with their hands once the 'tyrant body technique' had been practiced to the highest layer. Even the Titan God wouldn't be a big deal. Ye Xiwen was extremely confident that even the real gods and devils wouldn't stand a chance against his 'tyrant body' — let alone someone human who possessed their blood...

The people in the surroundings started to gawk at this. What was Ye Xiwen trying to say? Did he mean that the 'Titan Body' wasn't an extraordinary physique?

Countless people felt their eyes popping-out at this revelation. The physique of an ordinary person couldn't be compared with those special physiques as far as they were concerned. The special physiques might have some weaknesses, but they were certainly stronger when compared to the physiques of ordinary people. Otherwise... they wouldn't have been regarded as 'special physiques' in the first place.

Moreover, the 'titan body' was the most famous of all the well-known 'special physiques'. Those with 'special physique' basically had invincible bodies. So, it was even more shocking if Ye Xiwen didn't possess some 'special physique' since that would mean that

a person with an ordinary physique had been able to last this long in a fight against the Second God. Nobody would believe this.

Perhaps, Ye Xiwen had practiced some kind of an extraordinary body tempering technique. This wasn't impossible. Not every ancient sage had possessed special physiques or some incredible bloodline. Rather, some outstanding geniuses had founded various kinds of body tempering techniques. And, the practice of these techniques could enable one to challenge the gods and devils. This wasn't false. However, those power techniques had disappeared in the ancient times. And, there were hardly any such invincible power techniques left now.

"You're extremely arrogant and ignorant!" The Second God sneered. Ye Xiwen was fearless because of his ignorance in his opinion. The Titan God had an illustrious prestige. In fact, he still enjoyed the name of a fierce god. However, Ye Xiwen had dared to say such demeaning things about him. That itself showed that he was fearless.

"I'll send a heretic like you on your way to hell!" the Second God sneered and said.

"Bang!" The Second God trod forward. The sky itself fragmented due to the impact. He released an imposing aura... as if to prove that he held the superior monotheistic. Cyan-colored energy waves blotted-out the sky and covered the earth as they swept towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen grasped his long sword, and countered the incoming attack. Ye Xiwen displayed a remarkable sword skill... it seemed as

if he was a 'sword' cultivator. 'My single sword-move can unleash ten thousand principles'. His 'real elemental energy' no longer fluctuated on his body alone... it rushed ahead. The long sword in his hand was made of condensed 'sword intention'. It darted-out with a 'swoosh'.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's long-sword transformed into a sword-dragon. It pierced through the cyan-colored energy waves in a flash. It then drilled its way into the waves, and rushed inside.



# Chapter 398: Suppresses The Titan Body!

---

Ye Xiwen wasn't unfamiliar with the sword-cultivation power techniques. In fact, the 'Buried Sword Secret' was a supreme sword-cultivation power technique. One's strength could level-up to an incredible extent if it was comprehended to its fullest potential. The sword-cultivation power techniques had always been known to possess superb attack-power.

However, Ye Xiwen hadn't used them. He had certainly experienced quick advancement as far as his sword-cultivation was concerned. But, it had been too quick. He had indeed witnessed a sharp rise in his sword-cultivation, but it had been difficult to lay a solid foundation.

Ye Xiwen must walk on the road of martial arts. And, sword art was merely a part of martial arts. This was the reason why Ye Xiwen always followed the norm of preferring martial arts over sword arts.

However, it was an undeniable fact that sword cultivation was superior in terms of attack-power.

Ye Xiwen unleashed the sword skills against his enemy. The long sword pierced through the cyan-colored energy waves, and arrived in front of the Second God. Ye Xiwen had only brandished his long sword; nothing else.

"Bang!" the most terrifying collision took place. It was a startling clash between Ye Xiwen's long sword and Second God's lance.

Endless divine beams were emitted in a flash. Their weapons had collided, and this collision had produced incredible rays of light. A frightening figure emerged from the lance. It was a very tall figure. It seemed as if it was the tallest figure in the world. It was the giant phantom of an ancient titan. It was extremely horrifying.

He held a long and incredible lance in his hand. It was emitting incredible divine beams. These beams pierced the vast sky, and swept down towards Ye Xiwen to stab him.

Ye Xiwen's eyes flashed brightly. That lance had a fragment of the ancient titan's soul inside it. It had been resurrected from the lance. Its incomparably dreadful aura firmly locked on Ye Xiwen. The murderous aura was swept out. It was as scary as its mentions in the legends.

This lance had been the weapon of an ancient titan. It was certainly half broken. However, it contained the conscious soul-fragment of an ancient titan. The Second God had used his titan blood to stimulate the lance, and that had led to the ancient titan's resurrection.

"Clang!" Ye Xiwen's long sword released an incredible 'sword intention', and it rushed straight into the sky. The sword intention condensed and took the shape of an old man in the void. It was the figure of that strong sword expert whom Ye Xiwen had earlier seen. He held a long sword... very tightly at that. His sleeves were fluttering about. He carried an aura so imposing that it seemed as if he was looking down on the world. His eyes seemed as sharp as a sword.

The world has no choice but to follow my way!

The dao principles of the world swept-out along with the incredible rays of light emitted by that sword expert. The sword expert suppressed all other dao principles. Everyone had a scare; apprehensive feelings had started to rise in their hearts. They felt as if they had no choice but to submit to this sword expert, and follow his invincible path.

This was an invincible path. Everyone had to walk alone on this path. And to do so, they couldn't walk on their ordinary cultivation route. Not to mention that they would have to start their cultivation on this path from the beginning.

That ancient titan figure had once suppressed the entire universe of gods with his power. However, no one knew that the sword expert was a great personality of the ancient era. He had never shown any signs of weakness. He would merely use his world-crushing sword to destroy his enemy's martial ways.

The two extremely terrifying and ancient forces ferociously collided in the void. Their powers began to boil together. Both of them were utilizing the power of principles.

The surrounding experts of the younger generation were covered in cold sweat. What kind of terrifying power was this? Both of these individuals were ranked as heaven's pride level experts. However, many people hadn't been convinced of that. After all, these experts themselves were geniuses from different regions. They couldn't have entered the True Martial University otherwise. There were many inner disciples present among them as well.

However, they didn't have any choice but to admit that those two were extremely formidable after they had witnessed their terrifying powers. Was it even possible for a semi-sage expert to discharge such power?

This kind of an attack would be too exaggerated for a sage expert... even for a senior sage expert. In fact, this wasn't just pure strength. Perhaps, these two would be lacking when compared with sage expert on the basis on strength alone. However, an ordinary sage realm expert wouldn't come close to them when one would take the level of this battle into account. It could be said that these two individuals had grasped some incredible secret techniques.

Both of them had come across unimaginable fortuitous encounters. The onlookers learnt this as they witnessed the wills of these two men collide so fiercely in the void.

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

The lance and the long sword collided countless times in a split second. The 'titan' lance contained extraordinary strength. It vigorously smashed the vast sky into pieces. That old sword expert's long sword was incomparably sharp. And, he cut open the vast sky with just his long sword; nothing else.

The confrontation between these two had surpassed everyone's imagination. It was like the confrontation between two mythical characters. One of them was merely a leftover wisp of soul. It wasn't as scary as the real thing. And, the other was a simulation based on Ye Xiwen's experience. Ye Xiwen had started to question the origins of the mysterious space. That was because his mysterious space had managed to simulate the three elements – Essence, Energy, and Soul to mold the clone of the sword expert. And, this clone was almost like the real one. The strength of the simulated clone was certainly far below that of the old sword expert. However, it was still very dreadful.

Everyone looked stupefied. The powers of those two weren't that terrifying. However, the spectators could easily make out the exquisiteness of the martial arts being employed during the battle. They were looking at the battle between those two giant phantoms, and felt as if they were witnessing a battle between two dao principles. The two phantoms certainly didn't have living consciousness. However, their pure and unadulterated fighting-spirit had made everyone even more dumbstruck.

It took long to describe the whole thing, but everything happened in a short period of time. And, these giant phantoms had already exchanged more than a thousand blows in this short time. Almost nobody was able to see the exact number of blows that were exchanged between them.

Such power had surpassed everyone's imagination. But, the loss of control over the phantoms was also apparent. Ye Xiwen felt that the old sword expert had nearly gone out of his control. It was as if the old sword expert had been awakened by the insane 'fighting intention' of that titan.

It seemed as if a trace of consciousness was still left in the 'sword intention'. And, it seemed as if it had been aroused due to the collision with this fierce opponent.

"Bang!" the two giant figures ferociously collided, and then collapsed into pieces. Countless collisions had taken place by this time. That had left the two giant phantoms covered in various kinds of cracks. And, this final collision had shattered them.

Ye Xiwen and the Second God rushed towards each other to kill. There was no trace of hesitation in their actions. The lance and the long sword streamed across the horizon, and went towards their targets.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Blood splashed, and broken bone fragments were sent swirling in the air. Both of them staggered and dropped down since they had sustained terrible injuries. The lance had opened a huge hole in Ye Xiwen's stomach. The cyan-colored energy was crazily devouring Ye Xiwen's wound. Else, he would've recovered instantly.

The Second God had also sustained a serious wound. The wound had gone down to his bones. His bones could be seen from the wound's opening. He was cut from the shoulder, and down to his stomach. It was obvious that this sword attack could've cleft him in two. However, that hadn't happened... thanks to his tough

‘titan’ body. His body was just like a titan’s. Even so, this injury had turned his complexion pale. After all, he had nearly been split into two.

Countless surrounding disciples were in shock. They felt their hearts tremble. They hadn’t anticipated that these two would end-up wounding each other in this first-ever head-on collision. These two individuals with incredible bodies had finally entered the stage of melee-style fighting. They wouldn’t be drenched in blood if this were only a practice match for exchanging pointers. However, these two were engaged in a vicious battle.

Ye Xiwen’s long sword had almost cleft the Second God into two. And, the Second God’s lance had nearly stabbed Ye Xiwen’s heart. They weren’t holding back; not one bit. These were precisely the so-called moved of ‘life or death’. A couple of ordinary individuals wouldn’t have survived if they were to exchange places with these two. One individual would’ve been stabbed to death. And, the other individual would’ve been split into two halves. Both individuals would’ve died together.

Even a minor difference of strength between two experts can decide the victor of the fight. However, these two apparently had same strength. They both stood at the peak of the initial stage of semi-sage realm. Moreover, the most important thing was that they had extremely tough bodies. Any other opponent would get killed in just one move when faced with either of these two. However, these two had merely sustained severe injuries when pit against each other. Not to mention that these injuries hadn’t affected their vitality.

If someone had dared to replace these two individuals — they would've died long ago.

"I didn't expect that the 'Titan' guy would sustain injuries. This must be the first time he has suffered a loss. I've never heard of him getting injured before. He always relies on his invincible body to bully others. He has finally suffered a loss this time!"

"That Ye Xiwen is abnormally strong. He doesn't seem to claim that he possess some special physique. Don't tell me he has obtained the body-tempering technique of some ancient sage?"

They had guessed it correctly. However, they didn't know that Ye Xiwen had only obtained the first layer of 'tyrant body technique'. He had patched the rest by himself. He had created his own technique to suit his needs. He hadn't relied on the ancient sage alone.

Ye Xiwen took the initiative and began to recover. He used his own energy to expel the cyan-color foreign energy that surrounded his wound. Then, he began to operate the 'phoenix regeneration technique', and started to repair his wound. Afterwards, he looked coldly at the Second God, and rushed towards him again.

The long sword in his hand transformed into a long dragon, and swept down. The Second God didn't get much time to think. He could only brandish his lance to defend himself.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's long sword bombarded waves of incomparably terrifying force. They struck the Second God, and



sent him flying for a few meters. He was indeed sent flying for only a few meters. However, he had already fallen into a disadvantageous position.

His 'titan' body did recover quite quickly. But, it couldn't possibly match the regeneration speed of Ye Xiwen's 'phoenix regeneration technique'. Ye Xiwen was continuously maintaining himself at his peak condition. Meanwhile, the Second God's condition was getting more and more serious with every passing moment. He had been slowly suppressed and pushed into a disadvantageous position by Ye Xiwen.

# Chapter 399: Going To Be Defeated?

---

In a fight between experts, even a small disparity between the contenders could create a huge difference. Ye Xiwen's strength was dependent on his healing ability, and it was far more formidable than that of the Second God. This small disparity was enough for Ye Xiwen to slowly and gradually suppress the Second God.

Ye Xiwen consistently maintained himself at his peak condition. The Second God also possessed an outstanding secret healing technique as well. Moreover, his 'titan' body itself was extremely strong. However, he couldn't possibly be placed on par with Ye Xiwen.

"I hadn't thought that the 'Titan' guy would fall into the disadvantageous position!"

"Yeah... It's very difficult to tell who's got the stronger body and who's got the weaker one. The disparity between their physiques isn't clear. But, there is huge difference between their healing powers. Ye Xiwen's healing technique simply goes against the heaven's will!"

"It's indeed incredible. The 'Titan' guy was very aggressive in the beginning. He was the one who came to cause trouble for Ye Xiwen. He wanted to kill Ye Xiwen. But, the outcome has finally turned out to be like this!"

Everyone discussed as the battle continued. The Second God looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. Blood was dripping from his chest. Ye

Xiwen's sword had repeatedly struck his body. Even his 'titan' body couldn't endure such attacks. He heard everyone's comments about him, but he had disregarded them. He had indeed been suppressed. However, he was far from being in danger as suspected by the others. After all, both of them had sustained similar injuries. It was just that one individual recovered quicker than the other. However, these secret healing techniques had a common characteristic. It was to hurt one's vitality in order to restore one's injuries faster; especially when the wounds were serious. After all, these techniques went against the heaven's will. So, they had to come with a heavy price in exchange of accelerated recovery.

"Ye Xiwen, you're very strong. But, you can only become a nameless skeleton in my path to invincibility!" The Second God's countenance turned ice-cold. The wounds on his body unexpectedly began to transform into scars.

"Bang!" the Second God's imposing aura instantly changed; very significantly. A dark-green cyclone began to revolve around his body. The metal rings worn on his arms and ankles began to rotate as his stature increased by a section.

The Second God had never revealed his secret 'True Titan Body'; the one that had been mentioned in the legends. This was the first time he had revealed it. He had previously seen Ye Xiwen as a formidable opponent. But, Ye Xiwen had turned out to be even more formidable an opponent than he had imagined. His 'killing intention' began to burn even stronger. His path to invincibility would become clearer if he could kill this super-formidable opponent.

"Ye Xiwen, be careful. He's transforming into a Titan!" Ye Mo warned Ye Xiwen. "His strength will increase by leaps and bounds after he transforms into a Titan!"

Ye Xiwen nodded. He was standing in the sky with the long sword in his hand. He was blankly looking at the Second God. He trampled the void as he fiercely trod forward, and arrived in front of the Second God.

Ye Xiwen's sharp sword had cut-open the vast sky. His 'killing intention' had spread all around. The many spectating disciples of the True Martial University were left in utter shock as they watched from afar. They could feel the astonishing 'killing intention' that was coming-out from his long sword.

Then, they looked at the Second God. His strength had increased by a layer after he had completed his transformation into the 'real titan' body. This left them dumbstruck. These two individuals were going against the heaven's will.

The Second God sneered. He grasped the cold-black lance and rushed out. His imposing aura had become more powerful than before. This was indeed the 'real titan body'. All the heavenly races had been shaken by its power at one point in time. His left hand rose in the sky. It grasped a bunch of strong winds and lightning from inside the void. And then, he thrust them towards Ye Xiwen. The winds and lightning blotted-out the sky as they rolled towards Ye Xiwen to crush him.

These exceptionally terrifying winds and lightning could strangle a truth level expert to death; an ordinary legendary expert would

be seriously injured by their force. Gales and lightning were like 'pets' for titans. It seemed as if the 'god of gales and lightning' was watching-over this fight from above as the Second God continuously chanted some 'sutras'.

"Bang!" the gales and lightning swept down towards Ye Xiwen. The dreadful wind pressed down upon Ye Xiwen to crush him. This mixture of gales and lightning was like a grindstone that had advanced to grind Ye Xiwen to death.

Ye Xiwen sneered. The thunder and lightning carried the strong 'positive' power of the world. But, he wasn't afraid of the power of lightning; nor did he feel restrained in the face of it. Could these thunders and lightning be more formidable than the energies unleashed by the 'Heavenly Tribulation'?

Ye Xiwen's left hand transformed into a 'heavenly big' hand! It stretched-out; as if to grab something. Ye Xiwen grabbed those gales and lightning. Then, he began to operate the 'tyrant body technique' and absorbed them in their entirety. This was the strongest ability of the 'tyrant body technique'. It could absorb all energies; regardless of its type. It didn't follow the way of a 'benevolent king' who would accept any and all. Rather, it was a tyrant who knew only 'domination'.

Ye Xiwen had just finished absorbing that energy. But, he saw a startling and black divine beam just then. And, it had already arrived in front of him. The space in front had collapsed, and had been broken into small pieces.

He was still fearless. The long sword danced in his hand as he

swept out a world-shaking aura. Ye Xiwen had used the 'Buried Heaven Sword'; and that too for the first time. Nobody among his peers had been able to compel him to use the 'Buried Heaven Sword'. The use of this attack against the experts of older generation would've been pointless since they possessed far more tyrannical strength than Ye Xiwen.

The incomparably aggressive sword-power swept down. It shattered the space, and the chaos leaked out. It seemed as if this sword would bury the heavens, restart the age of chaos, and open the pathway for a brand-new world.

The 'Buried Heaven Sword' displayed infinite power in Ye Xiwen's hands. Ye Xiwen's offensive had grown much more potent than before. His attack, and that long lance, collided ferociously.

They came in contact, but soon moved away. Then, the lance's and the sword's tip rushed towards their respective targets.

However, the spot where the collision had taken place collapsed and broke down into pieces. A huge force swept across the surroundings, and even the void caved-in. Everyone was dumbstruck by this spectacle. This fight had reached a mind-boggling level.

"Bang!" a giant explosion took place. A figure went flying upside down. Blood dripped from his body and spilled in the sky.

Everyone looked closely. It turned out to be Ye Xiwen. The Second God's strength had increased significantly after he had

revealed his 'real titan' body. The 'evenly matched' fight had suddenly transformed, and Ye Xiwen had fallen into disadvantageous situation.

The Second God pursued after Ye Xiwen with strides as mighty as that of a tiger or a dragon. His lance swept down straight towards Ye Xiwen. It rampaged forward like a long dragon. It seemed as if it would destroy the entire world.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen firmly blocked the Second God's attack.

"Ye Xiwen, you are done for. Obediently accept your death!" the Second God's countenance turned sinister as he spoke. The thought that he would kill Ye Xiwen had made him happy.

Everyone's hearts began to beat ferociously. Could it be that Ye Xiwen would be killed? Ye Xiwen had fallen into disadvantageous position. He had merely relied on his excellent 'recovering' ability to gain advantage over his opponent. But, that advantage had disappeared after the emergence of the Second God's 'real titan' body.

The onlookers couldn't help but sigh with emotion. The special physiques had been famous in the entire world for countless years, and it wasn't without reason. They always possessed a concealed advantage that an ordinary person couldn't match. They could easily achieve the level of proficiency an ordinary person couldn't in their entire lifetime. Not to mention that the prestige of Titan bloodline had suppressed the entire world for countless years.

However, Ye Xiwen clearly didn't have such an advantage. This was his biggest disadvantage in this fight. Therefore, he had fallen into disadvantageous position.

Countless people were worried for Ye Xiwen. Yet, he was very calm for some reason. His expression didn't change one bit. The look in his eyes got more and more profound on the contrary. In fact, there wasn't a single trace of anxiety in his heart.

These special physiques were outstanding. The Second God had changed entirely after his body's transformation. He had been beaten and suppressed by Ye Xiwen in the beginning. However, he had started to suppress Ye Xiwen now. This massive transformation couldn't be described in words.

However, Ye Xiwen didn't lose heart. He had willingly chosen this path. He was on an expedition to fight and kill his way to the top. He had been in such thrilling fight several times. He had gotten so used to it that his heart was as honed as a solid rock.

Most importantly, Ye Xiwen had understood that it must've been extremely difficult to exhibit the 'real titan' body. It was similar to any other secret technique, and would eventually get used-up. After all, the Second God merely possessed the titan's blood. He wasn't a real titan. Therefore, this transformation would end once his 'real titan' body got exhausted.

However, this battle would still be a difficult one even if Ye Xiwen clearly understood this fact. The Second God's moves had caused serious injuries to him after the transformation had taken place. After all, there was a big difference between their levels. Ye



Xiwen would still have been able to suppress him by merely raising his hand if they were at the same level same realm... despite the body transformation.

An average person might not have been able to last this long if they were in Ye Xiwen place and were to unceasingly sustain such serious injuries. In fact, they would've perished in five moves or less. The terrifying power of the titan blood had been exposed in its entirety. However, Ye Xiwen had the 'phoenix regeneration technique'. It had maintained him at his peak condition. The only way to kill Ye Xiwen was to kill him with a sudden explosion since it wouldn't give him a chance to regenerate. Otherwise... he wouldn't be able to kill Ye Xiwen.

Time passed... second after second... minute after minute. Ye Xiwen sustained severe injuries again and again, but he managed to recover quickly each time. The Second God had started to get anxious. Just as Ye Xiwen had speculated — it was impossible for him to maintain this 'real titan' body for long. After all, he wasn't a real titan. Things would turn out very badly for him if he couldn't kill Ye Xiwen before he exhausted his advanced form.

"Roar!" the Second God roared. The lance swept-out and penetrated the blue sky. The world suddenly lost its color, and the sky turned pitch-black.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's long sword welcomed the incoming attack, but couldn't block it. He was again sent flying upside-down. He spouted blood, and the bones throughout his body got shattered.

The Second God was about to proceed to kill Ye Xiwen. But

suddenly, the earth and the sky began to shake frantically. The sky disintegrated, and two suffocating dreadful auras swept down from above. A person's figure came flying down, and spouted a mouthful of blood.

Everyone exclaimed because they had seen that person before. It turned out to be Bai Jian Song. He had sustained severe injuries all over his body.

Another figure came chasing-after. It was the senior elder of the Clear Sky Peak. Both of them had sustained serious injuries. However, his condition was much better than that of Bai Jian Song. However, he appeared to be in a distressed situation as well. His complexion was pale. He was at the peak level of the great-sage realm. Yet, he had been reduced to such a distressed state by Bai Jian Song... a man who had stepped into the initial stage of the great-sage realm only recently.

# Chapter 400: Kill You After You Are Terrified

---

There must've been a difference of heaven and earth between the initial stage of the great-sage realm and the great-sage complete realm. However, he had still been put into such a distressed situation by Bai Jian Song. He had lost face because of this. So, he felt humiliated. His complexion had also turned exceptionally unsightly.

However, he couldn't give much thought to this right now. He coldly looked at Bai Jian Song and said, "The higher authorities have agreed for this fight. It doesn't matter whether your 'Hidden Star Peak' agrees or not!"

His voice thundered like the sound of a big bell. It shook many of the spectating experts. They staggered a little since they couldn't stand steadily. This was a terrifying senior expert of the great sage realm. Even a breath of his' could blow them away and kill a group of people in one fell swoop.

The eyes of the Clear Sky Peak's senior elder turned ice-cold as he looked at Ye Xiwen. His gaze was exceptionally cold. He originally wouldn't have gone as far as to personally get involved in this mess. However, nobody could harmonize this conflict between the Second God and Ye Xiwen. These two individuals weren't fighting to attain hegemony in the younger generation. Rather, they were mortal enemies. One of them would inevitably have to die. So, the Clear Sky Peak could only support its own disciple under these circumstances. The Clear Sky Peak had paid an incredible price in order to get the high level experts' approval that had allowed them

to show their support towards the Second God. The Second God possessed the blood of the Titan race. He would have incredible future prospects. In fact, he had even been assigned the position of the chief disciple.

They had high hopes from the Second God. It was a known fact that the True Martial University recruited disciples once in a hundred years. Moreover, there was no lack of heaven's pride level experts among these new disciples. And, the Clear Sky Peak was ranked among the 'Top 10' Inheritances. Many heaven's pride level experts would often choose to join one of these top inheritances. The Clear Sky Peak had only seen three heaven's pride level experts join their ranks in this millennium, and all of them had already entered the sage realm at the time of their joining. However, they had finally selected the Second God, and had assigned him the position of the chief. One could imagine his value in their eyes. However, the Second God had this kind of a mortal enemy. So, it was worth it to spend some more to help him get rid of this enemy. It was better than offending some old and stubborn high-level expert. Not many people would be offended anyway. However, every member of Hidden Star Peak wanted to settle this dispute for Ye Xiwen's sake.

However, he wouldn't let anybody interfere in this battle. In fact, he himself wouldn't intervene. One mustn't disturb this fight between the disciples regardless of its outcome. Moreover, he didn't need to interfere because the Second God had already obtained the victor's position.

"Bullsh\*t! I don't care what 'your' higher-ups have agreed to. Damn it all. You've dared to aim for a person of our Hidden Star Peak's, and it is only to break our backbone. You did that so our

peak isn't able to make it through this hard time!" Bai Jian Song roared. Blood spilled-out from the corner of his mouth. The people of Hidden Star Peak had never bothered to hide their shortcomings from the others.

The Senior Elder of the Clear Sky Peak didn't care about Bai Jian Song's clamoring. He took it as a funny joke. The 'Hidden Star Peak' was undoubtedly a latent power. However, Clear Sky Peak wasn't a simple power either. And, it certainly wasn't like the War Dead Star Peak... whose chief had been chased-around like a dog by Huang Wuji. Clear Sky Peak was one of the 'Top 10' Inheritances. And, the War Dead Star Peak hadn't even entered among the 'Top 100' Inheritances. There was an unimaginable difference between the two forces.

The Hidden Star Peak had maintained a low profile. So much so that many people were unaware of the Hidden Star Peak's true power.

Everyone drew-out their conclusion on the basis of the battle that had just taken place. How strong was Bai Jian Song? He had stepped into the great-sage realm at such a young age. He would have boundless prospects in the future. However, he still wasn't an opponent for a senior elder of the Clear Sky Peak; his cultivation was too short and lacking in comparison. Perhaps, this weakness wouldn't have been this obvious if he had fought against an opponent from the younger generation. However, it had gotten exposed in its entirety while facing a tyrannical expert of the older generation.

"Presumptuous!" the Clear Sky Peak's senior elder coldly scolded.

"Who are you to raise your voice against a high-level decision?"

"Dammit! You old bastard! You will pay if something happens to my Sixth Brother!" Bai Jian Song exclaimed.

Meanwhile, it seemed as if Ye Xiwen and the Second God hadn't even noticed these two terrifying experts. They just continued to fight. It should be mentioned that the Second God had become relaxed after he saw that the elder of the Clear Sky Peak had gained an upper hand. In fact, he had become even more impatient to kill Ye Xiwen. And, Ye Xiwen had started to resist the Second God's attacks even more wholeheartedly. The two of them were too busy to worry about others.

They continued to fight. The Second God launched an attack. It seemed as if the world-itself had lost its color... as if the sky would come crashing down to the ground. The vigorous power of the lance exploded, and rushed straight towards Ye Xiwen to kill him. The Second God hadn't used any unnecessary skills. He had merely used pure energy in this attack.

Ye Xiwen's long sword danced in his hand. The 'sword intention' overflowed in the surroundings. Ye Xiwen's previous attacks had certainly been repelled. However, Ye Xiwen's 'fighting intention' hadn't declined one bit. His attack rushed into the sky.

The point of the lance emitted a white beam in reply. The battle had turned exceptionally intense. Blood was unceasingly gushing out of Ye Xiwen's body. But, his wounds had instantly repaired once again. But, some wounds had gradually started to appear on the Second God's body. The wounds weren't very deep. However,

it was still bad when one considers that he was in his 'transformed' form.

Many onlookers exclaimed. Several of them were very impressed to see that Ye Xiwen could actually injure the 'real titan' body. He had only done minor damage, but it was enough to prove their speculation that Ye Xiwen would go for a major counterattack once the Second God's 'real titan' body subsided.

"Bang!" both of them ferociously collided once again. Then, they were sent flying in the sky by the collision; though, Ye Xiwen went much farther. Both of them spouted blood. Both of them had arrived in a 'neither side wins' situation once again. Their bodies were covered in all kinds of wounds, and blood continued to ooze out from these wounds. Ye Xiwen had sustained more severe injuries than the Second God.

However, Ye Xiwen's wounds got restored in a flash once again.

"This Ye Xiwen is holding his own in this battle against the 'real body' of a titan. This is unbelievable! An average person's bones would've shattered into pieces if they had received one-such blow. And, the next blow would've crushed them to death!"

"Perhaps, this situation is unfavorable for the 'Titan' guy. As you can see... Ye Xiwen has slowly started to gain the power to fight back. Perhaps, this isn't very good news for that 'Titan' guy. Ye Xiwen may make a sudden comeback as long as he doesn't kill Ye Xiwen in one blow!"

"Ye Xiwen's recovery may not continue like this for long in my opinion. However, it's also possible that the 'Titan' guy won't be able to keep his 'real titan' form for long!"

"This 'Titan' guy has always done things his own way. He's arrogant and despotic. He doesn't pay attention to anyone. There are rumors that the Clear Sky Peak has paid a considerable price because the Titan guy stood up, and took the oath that he'll forever-and-ever guard the Clear Sky Peak. That's how he has obtained the Clear Sky Peak's support!"

"Well, anyone would agree to the fact that it's extremely tough to get rid of Ye Xiwen!"

"Die!" the Second God roared. His entire body got covered with cyan-colored energy waves as he swept forward. The entire world trembled. It seemed as if an ancient Titan God had been resurrected. He went all-out in an effort to kill Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen didn't hold back either. His body was his best defense. So, he continued to fight.

This was a battle of life or death; an incredible mortal combat. Both the individuals had gone all-out. So, even a small negligence could cost them their life.

Both the individuals had put their lives on stake. Other people felt their hair stand on end. This mortal combat had left them in utter shock. Especially Ye Xiwen — since he had managed to keep-up with the 'Titan' guy till now. After all, his cultivation level was



far inferior to the Second God's.

The Second God growled. Ye Xiwen had been gradually returning to the earlier situation... where he had the upper hand. The Second God knew that Ye Xiwen hadn't become stronger. Rather, he himself had become weaker. The suddenly outburst of power that was required for kick-starting and maintaining the transformation had left him weaker than before. Therefore, his transformation had started to fade. His eyes flashed as he stimulated his blood to unleash all sorts of titan arts, and all of them were aimed at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen merely brandished his sword to tackle to the incoming attacks. No matter what kind of titan powers you throw at me — my one sword move can destroy ten thousand principles. Ye Xiwen's long sword vigorously began to gather energy, and suddenly launched an enormous attack.

Both of these individuals were walking on the same route - the so called route to the great dao, and they must arrive there easily. The easier it will be — the closer one would get to the great dao — and, the more terrifying one would become. These two had mutually chosen the easier path of attempting to kill one-another. Therefore, only one would come out victorious. This path was easier; that's all.

From the Second God slowly occupying an absolute upper-hand... to Ye Xiwen regaining his position in the battle... this battle had reached its most tragic phase. Both of these individuals had caused severe wounds on the body of the opposite party, and these wounds were difficult to heal. The blood was gushing out of those

wounds. They had thoroughly beaten each other's bodies. Their bodies were completely covered in blood as a result.

"Rumble!" they collided again, and a figure went flying upside-down. Everyone looked closely. It was the Second God. On watching carefully, one could see that the Second God's 'real titan' body had disappeared. There was no difference between him and an average person at this moment. Blood was dripping from his body. He had fallen into the disadvantageous position in this clash of absolute power.

Ye Xiwen's sword slashed several times. Each of his slashes cut through the dao principles of the world. It seemed as if the era of primal chaos had been restarted. The sword slashes rushed towards the Second God... one by one... it seemed as if they were pursuing his soul. This was Ye Xiwen's turn to counterattack.

It seemed as if the Heaven and the Earth... the Sun and the Moon... had started to revolve around Ye Xiwen's long sword. Those who wouldn't obey... would be cut apart.

Ye Xiwen pushed the Second God into the disadvantageous position. Everyone was dumbstruck by this. Many people had already guessed this move, but they were still extremely shocked to witness it happen in reality.

"Puchi!" Ye Xiwen's long sword emitted an incredible divine beam. It chopped-off Second God's left arm. This fight had entered the deciding stage of life or death very quickly.

The Second God screamed. His entire body was covered with bloodstains. Even his courage had been cut-off by Ye Xiwen. Some bitter resentment was left in his eyes, but he no longer had that same imposing aura he previous did. He still possessed the invincible strength, but no longer had the invincible heart.

Everyone had gone silent. Nobody had thought that this could be the outcome. There would've been no problems if the Second God had been merely 'killed'. However, he had been first brought to the point of being 'terrified' before getting 'killed'. He would now be scared until he had died. After all, he had even used his biggest hidden trump card. Still, he had miserably failed to beat Ye Xiwen. How could he not be terrified after that?

"I'm invincible. You're merely relying on your secret technique and nothing more. Otherwise, I would've killed you effortlessly!" the Second God said, and it seemed like he hadn't yet resigned.

"Humph. I'm relying on secret technique? You have a 'Titan' body. Isn't that unfair? You would've been nothing more than a pig in my eyes if you didn't have that 'Titan' body. You're very stupid!" Ye Xiwen coldly retorted.